



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

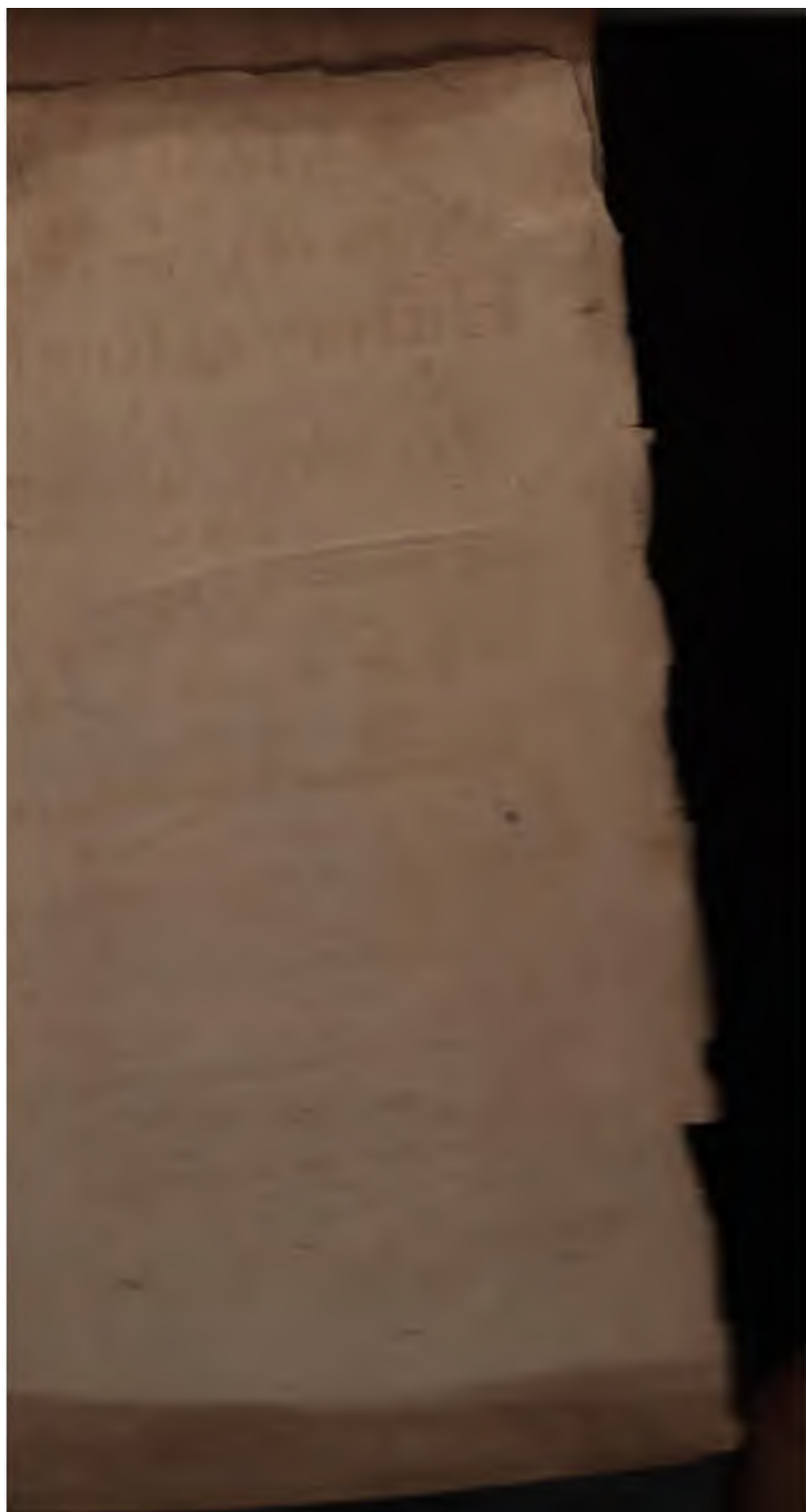
About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>





J
5
A
1



THE 650
PARLIAMENTARY
OR
CONSTITUTIONAL
History of England
BEING A
FAITHFUL ACCOUNT
Of all the
Most remarkable TRANSACTIONS
In PARLIAMENT,
From the earliest TIMES,
TO THE
Restoration of King CHARLES

COLLECTED

From the RECORDS, the JOURNALS of both HOUSES,
and PARLIAMENTARY MANUSCRIPTS, scarce SPEECHES, and TRANSACTIONS,
compared with the several Contemporary Writers, and
connected, throughout, with the History of the Times

By SEVERAL HANDS

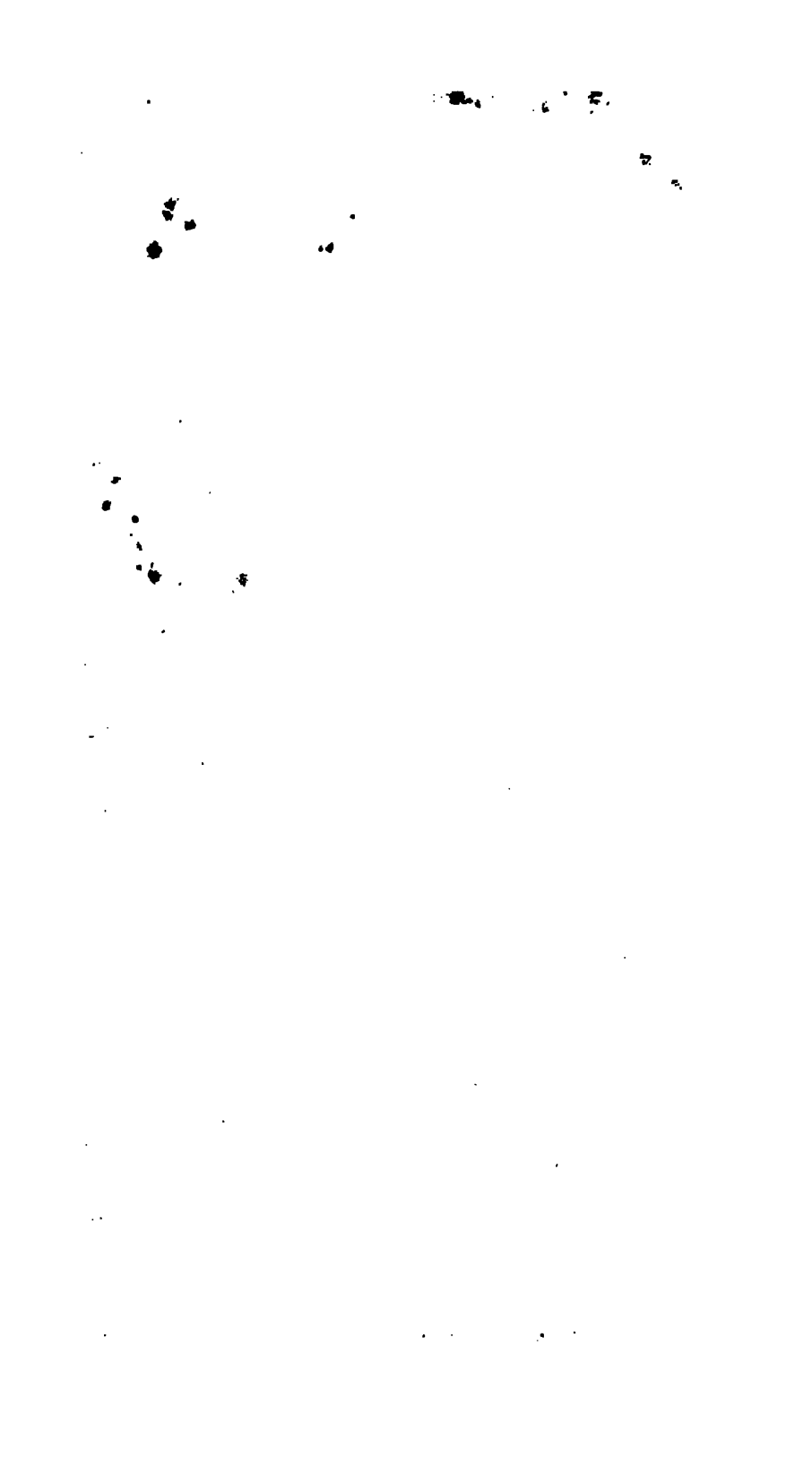
—*Juvat integros accedere Fontes.*

VOL. XV.

From July 1, 1646, to June 22, 1647.

L O N D O N,

Printed, and sold by WILLIAM SANDBY, against St.
Church, Fleet-street. MDCCLV.





T H E
Parliamentary History
O F
E N G L A N D.

THE Month of *July* 1646 begins with a most remarkable Instance of the strange Vicissitude of human Actions in the Person of Archbishop *Williams*, a Prelate who has borne a distinguished Part in this History. On the Removal of the Lord-Chancellor *Bacon* for Bribery and Corruption, he was promoted to the High Office of Lord-Keeper of the Great Seal by King *James*^a. In this Station we find him a strenuous Supporter of the Prerogative, zealously attached to the King's great Favourite *Buckingham*, and apologizing for his Majesty's relaxing the Execution of the Laws against Recusancy^b; a few Years after fallen into such Disgrace at Court, thro' the Intrigues of Archbishop *Laud*, as to be, for some Time, refused his Writ of Summons to the Parliament which met in *Febru-*
VOL. XV. A ary,

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.
July.

^a In *July* 1621, being then only Dean of *Westminster*, but in the next Month nominated to the Bishoprick of *Lincoln*.

^b In our 5th and 6th Volumes, *passim*.

2 The Parliamentary HISTORY

An. 22. Car. 1.
1646.

July.

ary, 1625. In 1637, fined 10,000 *l.* imprisoned in the *Tower* during the King's Pleasure, and suspended from all his Dignities and Offices by the High Commission Court^d: But, upon a new Turn in Politicks, translated to the Archbishoprick of *York* upon the Death of Dr. *Neile*, in *December* 1641.— Here we find him acting the Casuist in the Case of the Earl of *Strafford*, advising King *Charles* to distinguish between a private Conscience and a public Conscience^e; and when the Temporal Power of the Clergy was attack'd, exerting himself as their most remarkable Advocate; displaying great Force of Learning and Oratory in Vindication of their Claims^f: But now, *Temporibus mutatis*, taking up Arms in favour of that Parliament who had not only set aside the very Order of Episcopacy, but, the more effectually to establish their Form of Presbyterian Church-Government, were, at this Time, framing an Ordinance for selling the Lands of the Bishops, Deans and Chapters, throughout the Kingdom.

The last Particular in the Conduct of this Great Man has been much palliated, and almost even denied, by the Authors of his Life^g, though positively asserted by all the Contemporary Writers^h. But a Letter read in the House of Lords, the second of this Month, from Colonel *Mitton*, and some others that follow in the Course of this Work, put this Affair out of Dispute for the future.

Right Honourable, *Carnarvon*, June 15,

Col. Mitton's Letter relating to Archbishop Williams's declaring for the Parliament.

‘ HAVING, by the Help of God, reduce your Obedience this rocky and mountainous Country, *Carnarvonshire*, in North-situated towards *Ireland* (one small Tower in excepted, which yet is block'd up) an

^d *Russetworth*, Vol. II. p. 416, & seq.

^e In our 9th Volume, p. 270. ^f II

^g Bishop *Hacket* and Mr. *Ambrose Williams*.

^h *Whitlock's Memorials*, p. 208. *The Dove*, N^o. 147, p. 8. *The Moderate Intelligencer*, *Mercurius Rusticus*, April 27, 1646, *Russetworth*,

‘ a short Time, and with small Forces, the Barrenness of the Country being no ways able to maintain or nourish any great Army: I held it befitting that Ingenuity which the Parliament useth to cherish in all their Servants, to represent unto your Honours, amongst many others, one Person especially by whom I have been much encouraged and assisted, from Time to Time, in all Services: It is the Archbishop of York; who, besides his Parts, Learning and Experience, (which are known I suppose to most of your Honours) is of those Means, Power, Kindred and Alliance in these Parts, as I must profess that his Assistance in several Ways (being invited by me to put himself upon the Favour of the Parliament) hath been very advantageous and effectual in this Reduction of these strong Towns and mountainous Countries unto their due Obedience. I was at first put into the Hopes of gaining his Furtherance in this Work, because I received it from all Hands, that the Archbishop, ever since his coming to Wales, did employ himself rather in defending of his native Country from the Violence and Incursions of the Commanders in Chief and Soldiers under the King, (who accordingly bear him much Rancour and Malice to this Day for such Endeavours) than in actual opposing the Designs of the Parliament; with which Invitation he very easily complied, tho’ towards the eleventh Hour of the Day, yet upon the first calling, as it were, and approaching of the Parliamentary Forces, unto these remotest Parts of this Kingdom; and, being once entered into the Vineyard, I must do him that Right that he omitted no Expence, Cost, Travel, or Industry to comply with the Parliament.

An. 22. Car. I.

1646.

July.

‘ These Services of this wise and grave Personage, myself being unable to requite, I do humbly and most earnestly recommend to your Honours Respect and Consideration, who can best judge what a Man of his Parts, under such Obliga-

An. 22. Car. 1. 1646. July. 'gations from your Honours and the Parliament,
' May hereafter deserve, to shail your Honours,
' with him, very much engage

Your Honours most humble and faithful Servant,

THO. MITTON.

P. S. ' Since the writing of this Letter it hath
' pleased God, after some Trouble, but without
' Bloodshed, that the Lie and County of *Anglesey*,
' with the strong Castle therein, is reduced unto
' the King and Parliament; and in this Service
' my Lord of *York* had none of the least Part, be-
' sides that his Lordship, whilst our Forces ex-
' pected other Employment, withdrew his own
' Men from his House at *Penryn*; and, with some
' Addition of his Friends, hath laid a close Siege
' unto *Conway* Town and Castle, and doth at this
' Instant vigorously pursue it, which I though
' myself bound to represent unto your Lordship
' for the Benefit and Advantage of that worth
' Person.'

' This Letter being communicated to the Ho-
of Commons the same Day, they ordered th
Speaker to return Col. *Mitton* Thanks for his g
Services; and to let him know that they w
also take the Services of the Archbishop of
into Consideration as they should have Occa

Order of Parlia-
ment against Pa-
pists, Irishmen,
and Oxford Ca-
valiers.

About the Beginning of this Month an
of both Houses was made for all Papists a
to be put out of the Lines of Commu
(then drawn round the City and Suburb
of all Corporations. That those also
from *Oxford*, on the Rendition of the
any of the King's Garrisons, should
Lodgings by nine o'Clock; to make
their Passes and disarm them; and tha
never to bear Arms against the Parli
Order to be published by Beat of D
of Trumpet.

Mr. *Whitlocke* makes this grave and just Reflection on this Order: An. 22. Car. I.
1646.

‘ Thus we may see, that, even after almost a Conquest, yet they apprehended no Safety; such are the Issues and Miseries of a Civil War, that the Victors are full of Fears from those they have subdued. No Quiet, no Security. Oh let our Prayers be to God never to have such calamitous Times again.’ July.

July 4. This Day Mr. Alderman *Foot*, one of the Sheriffs of the City of *London*, accompanied with more of his Brethren and divers Common-Council-Men, attended the House of Lords with a Petition, in which was the Draught of another intended to be sent from the City to the King. These Petitions contain many very remarkable Expressions of Respect from this Body Corporate to his Majesty. And first that to the Lords:

To the Right Honourable the LORDS assembled in the High Court of Parliament,

The HUMBLE PETITION of the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and Commons of the City of London, in Common Council assembled,

Humbly sheweth,

‘ **T**HAT having received the Honour from his Majesty to be (by a particular Letter of the 19th of *May* last, the Copy whereof we presented to your Lordships) assured of his Royal Resolutions to comply with his Parliament for Settlement of Truth and Peace, the Petitioners do conceive themselves obliged in Duty to make some Return thereto; and especially to take this Opportunity, when the Honourable Houses are preparing to dispatch some Propositions to his Majesty; but the Petitioners could not presume to resolve upon any such Address before they had received the Pleasure of your Lordships thereupon: And therefore they humbly present unto your Lordships the Draught of that Petition, which they

An. 22. Car. 1.
1646.

July.

gations from your Honours and the Parliament,
may hereafter deserve, so shall your Honours,
with him, very much engage

Your Honours most humble and faithful Servant,

THO. MITTON.

P. S. ' Since the writing of this Letter it hath
' pleased God; after some Trouble, but without
' Bloodshed, that the Isle and County of *Anglesey*,
' with the strong Castle therein, is reduced unto
' the King and Parliament; and in this Service
' my Lord of *York* had none of the least Part,
' fides that his Lordship, whilst our Forces
' expected other Employment, withdrew his own
' Men from his House at *Penryn*; and, with some
' Addition of his Friends, hath laid a close Siege
' unto *Conway* Town and Castle, and doth at this
' Instant vigorously pursue it, which I thought
' myself bound to represent unto your Lordships
' for the Benefit and Advantage of that worthy
' Person."

This Letter being communicated to the House
of Commons the same Day, they ordered the
Speaker to return Col. *Mitton* Thanks for his good
Services; and to let him know that they would
also take the Services of the Archbishop of *York*
into Consideration as they should have Occasion

Order of Parlia-
ment against Pa-
pists, Irishmen,
and Oxford Ca-
valiers.

About the Beginning of this Month an
Order of both Houses was made for all Papists and
to be put out of the Lines of Communi-
(then drawn round the City and Suburbs
of all Corporations. That those also
from *Oxford*, on the Rendition of that
any of the King's Garrisons, should be
Lodgings by nine o'Clock; to make
their Passes and disarm them; and that
never to bear Arms against the Parlia-
ment Order to be published by Beat of Drum
of Trumpet.

4 The Parliamentary HISTORY

An. 22. Car. 1.
1646.

July.

gations from your Honours and the Parliament,
may hereafter deserve, so shall your Honours,
with him, very much engage

Your Honours most humble and faithful Servant,

THO. MITTON.

P. S. ' Since the writing of this Letter it hath
' pleased God, after some Trouble, but without
' Bloodshed, that the Isle and County of *Anglesey*,
' with the strong Castle therein, is reduced unto
' the King and Parliament; and in this Service
' my Lord of *York* had none of the least Part, be-
' sides that his Lordship, whilst our Forces ex-
' pected other Employment, withdrew his own
' Men from his House at *Penryn*; and, with some
' Addition of his Friends, hath laid a close Siege
' unto *Conway* Town and Castle, and doth at this
' Instant vigorously pursue it, which I thought
' myself bound to represent unto your Lordships
' for the Benefit and Advantage of that worthy
' Person.'

This Letter being communicated to the House
of Commons the same Day, they ordered the
Speaker to return Col. *Mitton* Thanks for his good
Services; and to let him know that they would
also take the Services of the Archbishop of
into Consideration as they should have Occasion

Order of Parlia-
ment against Pa-
pists, Irishmen,
and Oxford Ca-
valiers.

About the Beginning of this Month an
Order of both Houses was made for all Papists
to be put out of the Lines of Communi-
(then drawn round the City and Suburbs)
of all Corporations. That those also
from *Oxford*, on the Rendition of that
any of the King's Garrisons, should
Lodgings by nine o'Clock; to make
their Passies and disarm them; and that
never to bear Arms against the Parliamen-
Order to be published by Beat of Drum
of Trumpet.

Mr. *Whitlocke* makes this grave and just Reflection on this Order :

‘ Thus we may see, that, even after almost a Conquest, yet they apprehended no Safety ; such are the Issues and Miseries of a Civil War, that the Victors are full of Fears from those they have subdued. No Quiet, no Security. Oh let our Prayers be to God never to have such calamitous Times again.’

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.
July.

July 4. This Day Mr. Alderman *Foote*; one of the Sheriffs of the City of *London*, accompanied with more of his Brethren and divers Common-Council-Men, attended the House of Lords with a Petition, in which was the Draught of another intended to be sent from the City to the King. These Petitions contain many very remarkable Expressions of Respect from this Body Corporate to his Majesty. And first that to the Lords :

To the Right Honourable the LORDS assembled in the High Court of Parliament,

The HUMBLE PETITION of the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and Commons of the City of London, in Common Council assembled,

Humbly sheweth,

‘ **T**HAT having received the Honour from his Majesty to be (by a particular Letter of the 19th of *May* last, the Copy whereof we presented to your Lordships) assured of his Royal Resolutions to comply with his Parliament for Settlement of Truth and Peace, the Petitioners do conceive themselves obliged in Duty to make some Return thereto ; and especially to take this Opportunity, when the Honourable Houses are preparing to dispatch some Propositions to his Majesty ; but the Petitioners could not presume to resolve upon any such Address before they had received the Pleasure of your Lordships thereupon : And therefore they humbly present unto your Lordships the Draught of that Petition, which

The City of London desire Leave of the Lords to send a Petition to the King.

6 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 22. Car. 1. 1646. they have prepared to be delivered to his Majesty,
and humbly attend the Order of your Lordships
thereupon. *And shall duly pray, &c.*

MICHELL.

Next was read the Draught of the City's Petition to the King.

To the KING's Most Excellent Majesty,

The HUMBLE PETITION of the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and Commons of the City of London, in Common Council assembled.

A Draught thereof,

WE most humbly acknowledge the special Grace and Favour of your Majesty, in condescending so particularly to communicate unto this City your royal and pious Resolutions to comply with your Houses of Parliament, for settling of Truth and Peace in this distracted Kingdom, signified by your late gracious Letter of the 19th of May last to the Representative Body thereof; in which, as the Petitioners cannot but see the special Hand of Almighty God, so they must, and do, from the Bottom of their Hearts, bless his holy Name who at length hath opened such a Door of Hope, by inclining your Majesty's Heart to look down upon the Afflictions of your People; and from thence take Comfort to themselves that he will confirm and increase these good Resolutions in your Majesty.

As for the City, the Petitioners esteem it their Duty now again, as they have formerly done, to declare unto your Royal Majesty and the whole World, That, according to their Protestation and Covenant, they have always, and do still retain the same loyal Thoughts towards your Majesty as ever, and as becometh Subjects to do, from which they shall never recede.

And as, next unto the good Guidance of Almighty God, they do humbly commit and submit the Means and Manner of their future Peace and Happiness unto your Majesty's great and faithful

‘ faithful Council the two Houses of Parliament, An. 22. Car. I. 1646.
 ‘ so they shall continue their instant Prayers to the
 ‘ Throne of all Grace, to dispose your Majesty’s
 ‘ Royal Heart to comply with such Propositions as July.
 ‘ from them shall be presented unto your Majesty,
 ‘ for the Settlement of true Religion and Peace in
 ‘ all your Kingdoms, and the Maintenance of the
 ‘ Union between the two Nations; and then the
 ‘ Petitioners shall not doubt but your Majesty
 ‘ (which is their earnest Prayers) will, with Ho-
 ‘ nour and Joy, return unto this your antient City;
 ‘ and that your Throne shall, in your Royal Self
 ‘ and your Posterity, be established in all your
 ‘ Kingdoms, to the great Honour of your Majesty
 ‘ and the Comfort of all your good Subjects,
 ‘ amongst whom the Petitioners shall always strive
 ‘ to approve themselves inferior to none in Loyalty
 ‘ and Obedience.’

The Lords, after reading the foregoing Peti- Which the
 tions, order’d the Thanks of the House to be gi- Lords return
 ven to the Petitioners, and more particularly for Thanks for,
 first communicating to that House what they in-
 tended to send to the King.

The same Day both these Petitions were pre-
 sented to the Commons by Mr. Sheriff *Kenrick*,
 but met with a quite different Reception: For the
 Speaker, by Command of that House, told the
 Citizens, That hearing some from the City were at
 the Door with a Petition, they were willing to call
 them in, but that it was a Business which deserved
 great Consideration, and should be taken Notice
 of in convenient Time. Accordingly, a few Days
 after, the Members for the City of *London* were
 ordered to acquaint the Lord Mayor and Common
 Council, That they are, together with the whole But the Com-
 Kingdom, included in the Propositions to be now mons disapprove.
 sent to the King; and that therefore the Commons
 could not approve of the City’s sending any Peti-
 tion to his Majesty.

Mr. *Ludlow* writes:; That, in the Debate on
 this Occasion, Mr. *Henry Martin* said, ‘ That tho’
 he

An. 22. Car. 1.

1646.

July.

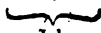
he could not but agree with what had been affirmed touching the Citizens being involved in what their Representatives did, and their not sending Commissioners as they desired; yet, as to the Substance of what they proposed, he could not so much blame them as others had done; they therein shewed themselves, in the End of the War, no less prudent than they had expressed themselves honest in the Beginning: For as when the Parliament invited them to stand by them in the War against the King, in Defence of their Religion, Lives, Liberties, and Estates, they did it heartily, and therein shewed themselves good Christians and true *Englishmen*; so now, the War being ended, and the Parliament upon making Terms with the King, and thinking fit to sue to him, now their Prisoner, for Peace, whom they had all incensed by their Resistance, the Citizens, having considerable Estates to lose, shewed themselves prudent Men, in endeavouring to procure their Pardons as well as others: And though the House will not permit them to send as they desire, they have expressed their Good-will, which, without Doubt will be well accepted.¹⁷

July 6. A Declaration of the Lord-General, and of the General Officers and Soldiers, of the Scots Army at *Newcastle*, sent to the Lords by the Commissioners of that Kingdom, was read; with the Consequences, were in these Words

June, 26,

A Declaration of
the Scots Army
at Newcastle,
setting forth their
Fidelity to the
Parliament.

THE many Calamities and heavy Pre-
the sad Afflictions lying upon these
doms this Time past, and the great Eff-
Christian Blood occasioned by the Cor-
of this unnatural War, having so deeply
us; and being earnestly desirous of
evident Testimony of our Piety to Go-
to our Sovereign, and Love to these
that the Constancy of our Affection to
our Zeal to the Reformation of Reli-

' Majesty's Person and Authority in Defence there- An. 22. Car. I.
 ' of, and our firm Resolutions to pursue the Ends 1646.
 ' expressed in our Solemn League and Covenant, 
 ' may appear to the World, we have thought it July.
 ' necessary in this Juncture of Time, (when all
 ' Means are essayed by the Enemies of Truth and
 ' Peace to disparage our Proceedings, by rendering
 ' suspected our best Actions and Endeavours, to
 ' the begetting of Misunderstanding, and weaken-
 ' ing the Union between the two Kingdoms) to
 ' declare and make known, That as we have en-
 ' tered into a Solemn League and Covenant, with
 ' our Hands lifted up unto the most High God,
 ' with real Intentions to promote the Ends thereof,
 ' so we do resolve, God willing, constantly to ad-
 ' here to the whole Heads and Articles of the same;
 ' and, for no earthly Tentation, for no Fear or
 ' Hope, to fall away and violate our sacred Oath,
 ' We do likewise profess, That nothing hath
 ' been with greater Care and Faithfulness endea-
 ' voured by us, than to preserve the happy Union
 ' and brotherly Correspondence between the King-
 ' doms, as a principal Means of Happiness to
 ' both; and shall continue in the same Care to
 ' avoid every Thing that may tend to the Infringe-
 ' ment thereof, with a special Regard and Ten-
 ' derness to the Interests of both Kingdoms: For
 ' the strengthening of which Union, and removing
 ' every Thing that might obstruct the same, as hi-
 ' therto we have had no Compliance nor kept Cor-
 ' respondence with known Enemies and Malig-
 ' nants, so will we never hereafter give Counte-
 ' nance or Encouragement to any Person disaffect-
 ' ed to the Parliaments of either Kingdom.
 ' And that the Integrity of our Intentions and
 ' the Uprightness of our Desires may be more ma-
 ' nifest, we do declare, That we abhor all public
 ' and private Ways contrary to the Covenant, and
 ' destructive to the Happiness of both Kingdoms:
 ' We disclaim all Dealing with those that are In-
 ' struments of these unhappy Troubles and Impe-
 ' diments of Peace; and with all such Persons who
 ' will

An. 22. Car. 1.

1646.

July.

‘ will not use all Means and Endeavours, and contribute their best Councils and Advice for hastening an End to our lasting Miseries, and procuring a sure and well-grounded Peace: And, in particular, we do abominate and detest that execrable Rebellion of *James Graham*, utterly abjuring all Manner of Conjunction with him and his Confederates, and with all other known Enemies or declared Traitors to either Kingdom, notwithstanding of any Insinuations to the contrary, expressed in some Letters, as it is said, by his Majesty, to the Earl of *Ormond*, in *Ireland**: For we have none but single Intentions and unfeigned Desires of Peace, renouncing all Communion with whatsoever Designs and Practices, contrived in the Dark, to the Prejudice of Religion, and the Tranquility of these Kingdoms, the only Principles by which we move.

‘ And as we came into this Kingdom at the earnest Desires of our Brethren, to assist them in the Time of their great Extremity, in pursuance of the National Covenant, not for any mercenary Ends, nor to enrich ourselves, as is falsely and calumniously charged upon us by those that wish not well to us nor our Cause; so shall we be most willing to depart and return home in Peace, with the same Chearfulness and Affection that we had when we came in: Nor shall the Matter of Money, or want of just Recompence for the Service performed, and Hardship sustained, be to us any Argument of our Stay: But, leaving the Consideration of these Things to the Wisdom and Discretion of both Parliaments, we shall so far from troubling ourselves as not to suffer any private Respect to our own to retard the Advancement of this publick Work, or prejudice the public Work of both Kingdoms.

‘ We cannot conceal, but must acknowledge how sensible we are and have always been of the many Complaints presented to the Parliament of *England* against this Army, and the Calumnies and Aspersions lying upon us.

* See this Letter in our 14th Volume p

‘ committed Insolencies, and oppressed the People
 ‘ by taking free Quarter; offering ourselves most
 ‘ willing and ready, that whosoever amongst us
 ‘ have, by their Misdemeanors, Miscarriages, or in-
 ‘ ordinate Way of walking, scandalized the Cause
 ‘ for which we have taken our Lives in our Hand,
 ‘ or endeavour to beget a Misunderstanding, or fo-
 ‘ ment Jealousies between the Kingdoms, we shall
 ‘ strive to discover all such, and labour to bring
 ‘ them to public Trial and condign Punishment;
 ‘ not doubting but as we are zealous to vindicate
 ‘ our Honour and Reputation from all Reproaches,
 ‘ so the Parliament will likewise be pleased to have
 ‘ such favourable Construction of our Proceedings
 ‘ as not willingly to harbour any Thoughts which
 ‘ may lessen their Respects to us, and which are
 ‘ not suitable to the constant Tenor of our Car-
 ‘ riage and Profession.

An. 22. Car. I.

1646.

July.

‘ And we shall likewise desire that our manifold
 ‘ Necessities, and pressing Wants to which we were
 ‘ many Times reduced, may not be forgotten; and
 ‘ that the Ways and Means appointed for our Supply
 ‘ neither answered the Expectation of the Honour-
 ‘ able Houses of Parliament, nor satisfied our Ne-
 ‘ cessities; so that for Want of Monies we could
 ‘ not always discharge our Quarters: Yet do we
 ‘ most freely declare our Willingness to allow of
 ‘ whatsoever hath been taken up by us; and for
 ‘ that Effect we desire the Accounts of the Army
 ‘ to be adjusted with the severall and respective
 ‘ Counties, that whatever can be justly charged
 ‘ upon us may be discounted off any Sums that
 ‘ shall be resting to us in Arrear. And if we knew
 ‘ any thing else that could serve to remove all
 ‘ Jealousies and Misunderstandings, and beget a
 ‘ more full Confidence of our Uprightness, we
 ‘ should, with the same Readiness, apply ourselves
 ‘ to all the Ways that might conduce thereunto.

‘ But because his Majesty’s sudden and unex-
 ‘ pected Coming into this Army doth minister new
 ‘ Occasion to us to give some Demonstration of
 ‘ our Constancy, tho’ we hope his Majesty came
 ‘ with

Aug. 22. Car. 1.

1646.

July.

' with real Intentions to satisfy the just Desires of
 ' his Parliaments, and compose all those Differen-
 ' ces; yet lest it should bring in Question the
 ' Clearness and Integrity of our Ways, whereof
 ' our Consciences do bear us Witness, and all our
 ' Actions shall be publick and real Testimonies;
 ' we do protest that his Presence with us hath not
 ' begotten any Alteration in our Minds in the least
 ' Measure to estrange us from the Ways of our
 ' Covenant, or alienate our Resolutions from go-
 ' ing on zealously, constantly, and unanimously
 ' to set forward the Ends therein expressed, endea-
 ' vouring (so far as lieth in our Power) to improve
 ' that Providence of his coming to us, to the pub-
 ' lic Good and Happiness of both Kingdoms.
 ' And as it is our earnest Desire that his Majesty
 ' would no more suffer himself to be involved in the
 ' Counsels whereof he has had so sad Experience,
 ' to the endangering of his Person, Posterity, and
 ' Kingdoms; so do we exceedingly wish that he
 ' would comply with the Counsels of his Parlia-
 ' ments, to the Satisfaction of his good People.
 ' And we shall be careful that nothing proceed from
 ' us which may give Occasion to his Majesty to
 ' entertain any secret Confidence that this Army
 ' will give Assistance for advancing other Ends than
 ' such as are agreeable to our Covenant, conducing
 ' to the Good of Religion, the Happiness of the
 ' King and his Posterity, and Safety of the Kir-
 ' doms.'

*Signed by his Excellency the Earl of Leven
 General Officers, and three Commissioners
 every Regiment of the Army.*

*The PETITION of the Earl of Leven,
 General, the General Officers, Colonels, &
 &c. of the Scots Army, presented to his
 at Newcastle.*

June 7

And their Peti-
 tion to the King.

' **W**E your Majesty's loyal Subject
 ' ful Servants, the Lord-Gener-
 ' neral Officers, the Colonels and Cap

‘ Scots Army, now in the Kingdom of England, An. 22. Car. I.
 ‘ from the deep Sense of the bleeding Condition of 1646.
 ‘ these Kingdoms, so heavy pressed with sad Afflic-
 ‘ tions thro’ the unhappy Differences between your
 ‘ Majesty and your Subjects, from the true Affec-
 ‘ tion and Zeal to the Reformation of Religion,
 ‘ and your Majesty’s Person and Authority in De-
 ‘ fence thereof; and in the Pursuance of that sacred
 ‘ Oath which we have taken, with our Hands lifted
 ‘ up to the most High God, do make our humble
 ‘ Address, and tender this earnest Petition to your
 ‘ Majesty in our Name, and in the Name of all
 ‘ the inferior Commanders and Soldiers under our
 ‘ Charge, that your Majesty, in your Wisdom and
 ‘ Goodness, may be pleased to take a speedy Course
 ‘ for settling of Religion and Church-Government
 ‘ in this Kingdom, according to the Word of God
 ‘ and Examples of the best Reformed Churches,
 ‘ and bringing the Churches of the three King-
 ‘ doms to the nearest Conjunction and Uniformity;
 ‘ and for establishing the Privileges and Liberties
 ‘ of your Kingdoms according to the Desires of
 ‘ your good People.

‘ We may not conceal our unfeigned Grief for
 ‘ that your Majesty hath not yet been pleased to
 ‘ authorize and sign the Covenant, which we are
 ‘ confident would bring Honour to God, Happi-
 ‘ ness to yourself and Posterity, and endear your
 ‘ Majesty, above Measure, to all your faithful
 ‘ and loyal Subjects: In the just Defence whereof,
 ‘ as many of them have already lost their Lives, so
 ‘ are we ready to sacrifice ours.

‘ We must also pray your Majesty to compas-
 ‘ sionate the distressed Condition of your King-
 ‘ doms, groaning under the heavy Pressures of ma-
 ‘ nifold Calamities occasioned by the Continuance
 ‘ of this unnatural War; and to comply with the
 ‘ Councils of your Parliaments; that all Differences
 ‘ being happily composed, and the Armies in both
 ‘ Kingdoms disbanded, we may return home in
 ‘ Peace, or be disposed of otherwise by your Ma-
 ‘ jesty, with the Advice of your Parliaments, which
 ‘ may

An. 22. Car. 1. ' may be most for your Majesty's Honour and
1646. ' Service, and the Prosperity of these Kingdoms.

July.

Signed by his Excellency the Earl of Leven, the General Officers, and three Commissioners from every Regiment of the Army.

To the foregoing Petition the Earl of *Lanerk*, by his Majesty's Command, returned this Answer:

His Majesty's
Answer by the
Earl of Lanerk.

I Am, in his Majesty's Name, to return this Answer to the Petition presented to him by the Lord-General, the General Officers, the Colonels, and other Officers and Soldiers of the Scots Army, That his Majesty came into the Scots Army with full Intent of settling an happy Peace in these his Kingdoms, and to satisfy the just Desires of his good Subjects, and likewise to comply with his Parliaments in all Things which shall be for the Good of Religion and the Happiness of his Subjects, which he will always prefer to all worldly Interests.

And whensoever it shall please God so to bless his Majesty's Endeavours as to settle an happy Peace in these his Dominions, his Majesty will be very solicitous to find out some Means of honourable Employment for so many gallant Men as are employed in this Army.

Newcastle, June 27, 1646.

LANERK

The Propositions
of Peace sent to
the King.

After many Months canvassing the Proposition to be sent to the King for a safe and well-grown Peace, and after many Altercations, Messages, references, Divisions in and between the two Houses, and Consultations with the Scots Commissioners about them, they were at last agreed to by all brought to a Conclusion. They were read the last Day for the last Time, and the Lords ordered they should immediately be sent to the King. He deputed the Earls of *Pembroke* and *Sunderland* to their House, joined with a proportionable Number of the Commons, to carry them. A Copy of which Propositions will fall in for they were not yet sent away of

A particular Letter to the King was also agreed to, this Day, by both Houses, That he would be pleased to give Command to the Earl of *Ormond*, for the delivering up of *Dublin*, and all other Forts and Garrisons in *Ireland*.

Ans. 22. Car. L
1646.
July.

July 7. A Letter from the *Scots* Commissioners at *Edinburgh* was read, recommending *Archibald* Marquis of *Argyle* to be one of the Commissioners for the Church of *Scotland*, at *London*, to prosecute the Treaty for Uniformity in Religion and Church-Government betwixt the two Kingdoms, in the room of Lord *Balmerino*, recall'd. Accordingly his Lordship, by Consent of both Houses, was made one of the Assembly of Divines, then sitting at *Westminster*.

The same Day a Message was brought from the House of Commons, to signify to the Lords, that, about the Beginning of *June* last, the Commons, at a Conference, delivered to their Lordships a Vote, declaring, That this Kingdom had no farther Use for the *Scots* Army; wherein they desired their Concurrence. That they now again desired it; and further to acquaint them, that the Commons of *England* were no longer able to bear that Burden, nor pay that Army.

The Lords did not go immediately on this Affair, but ordered that, the next Morning, they would not only proceed upon it, but also on the disbanding all the Armies in the Kingdom; and the Peers were to have Notice to attend. Accordingly,

July 8. This Business was taken into Consideration, but soon concluded; for the Vote being again read, and a Debate arising, the Question was put, Whether it should be laid aside till such Time as this House receive an Answer from the Commissioners which are to go to the King with the Propositions for Peace, after the Delivery of the Petitions? and resolved in the Affirmative.

This Day, also, the Commons delivered to the Lords, at a Conference, a Copy of the Instructions

16 The Parliamentary History

An. 22. Car. 1.
1646.

July.

tions which were to be given to the Commissioners, mentioned above: These were ordered to be kept private, and are not printed with the Propositions, but stand thus in the *Journals* of both Houses.

INSTRUCTIONS of both Houses of Parliament for Philip Earl of Pembroke and Montgomery, James Earl of Suffolk, Sir Walter Erle, Knt. Sir John Hippeley, Knt. Robert Goodwin, Esq; Luke Robinson, Esq; or any three of them, appointed Committees of both Houses of the Parliament of England, to join with the Commissioners of the Kingdom of Scotland, to present to the King's Majesty the Propositions for a safe and well-grounded Peace, and to receive his Majesty's Answer thereunto.

Instructions to the Commissioners appointed to attend him therewith.

‘ YOU, or any three of you, are forthwith to repair to the Town of *Newcastle upon Tyne*, or to such other Place within the Kingdom of *England* where his Majesty shall be, and there to observe the Instructions following:

‘ You, or any three of you, shall there present to the King, from the Lords and Commons assembled in the Parliament of *England*, the Propositions herewith delivered unto you for a safe and well-grounded Peace, agreed upon by the two Houses of the Parliament of *England*, and by the Commissioners of the Kingdom of *Scotland*.

‘ You, or any three of you, are to desire from the King his positive Answer and Consent to the said Propositions.

‘ You are to return with all Diligence and Speed to the Parliament at *Westminster*, as soon as you shall have received the said Answer from his Majesty. In Expectation of the said Answer you are not to make Stay at *Newcastle*, or at such other Place where you shall find the King, above the Space of ten Days next after your Arrival at *Newcastle*, or such other Place as aforesaid; but the said Time of ten Days being expired, you are forthwith, without any Delay, to return to the

‘ the Parliament of *England*, to give them an Ac- An. 22. Car. 1.
‘ count of your Proceedings.’ 1646.

July 9. A Letter was read in the House of Lords, which came from the Assembly of the Kirk of *Scotland* at *Edinburgh*; which, for its extraordinary Style, requires a Place in this History.

July.

A LETTER from the General Assembly of the Kirk of Scotland to both Houses of Parliament.

Right Honourable, Edinburgh, June 18, 1646.

‘ **T**HE Report of the great Things which the Lord hath done for your Honours has gone forth into many Lands, and it becometh us, least of any, either to smother or to extenuate the same: We desire to be enlarged in the Admiration of the Power and Mercy of God the Author, and to diminish nothing of that Praise that is due to you as Instruments.

A Letter from the General Assembly of the Kirk of Scotland to the Parliament.

‘ When the Lord set your Honours upon the Bench of Judgment, both the Kirk and Commonwealth of *England* were afflicted with intestine and bosom Evils; the Cure whereof could not but be very difficult, because they were not only many, but for the most Part universal and deeply rooted, shelter’d under the Shadow of Custom and Law, and supported with all the Wisdom and Strength of the Malignant and Prelatical Party; who rather chused to involve the Land in an unnatural and bloody War, than to fail of their ambitious and treacherous Designs against Religion, the Priviledges of Parliament, and the Laws and Liberties of the Kingdom. Neither hath that miserable Crew been wanting unto their own Ends, but, for many Years together, hath desperately pursued their Resolutions in Arms; and was likely to have prevailed, if the Lord had not put himself in the Breach, and furnished you with much Patience, Wisdom, Courage, and Constancy in the Midst of many Difficulties and Distresses; and, at last, with so

An. 22. Car. 1.
1646.
July.

‘ with real Intentions to satisfy the just Desires of
 ‘ his Parliaments, and compose all those Differen-
 ‘ ces; yet lest it should bring in Question the
 ‘ Clearness and Integrity of our Ways, whereof
 ‘ our Consciences do bear us Witness, and all our
 ‘ Actions shall be publick and real Testimonies;
 ‘ we do protest that his Presence with us hath not
 ‘ begotten any Alteration in our Minds in the least
 ‘ Measure to estrange us from the Ways of our
 ‘ Covenant, or alienate our Resolutions from go-
 ‘ ing on zealously, constantly, and unanimously
 ‘ to set forward the Ends therein expressed, endea-
 ‘ vouring (so far as lieth in our Power) to improve
 ‘ that Providence of his coming to us, to the pub-
 ‘ lic Good and Happiness of both Kingdoms.
 ‘ And as it is our earnest Desire that his Majesty
 ‘ would no more suffer himself to be involved in the
 ‘ Counsels whereof he has had so sad Experience,
 ‘ to the endangering of his Person, Posterity, and
 ‘ Kingdoms; so do we exceedingly wish that he
 ‘ would comply with the Counsels of his Parlia-
 ‘ ments, to the Satisfaction of his good People.
 ‘ And we shall be careful that nothing proceed from
 ‘ us which may give Occasion to his Majesty to
 ‘ entertain any secret Confidence that this Army
 ‘ will give Assistance for advancing other Ends than
 ‘ such as are agreeable to our Covenant, conducing
 ‘ to the Good of Religion, the Happiness of the
 ‘ King and his Posterity, and Safety of the King-
 ‘ doms.’

*Signed by his Excellency the Earl of Leven, the
 General Officers, and three Commissioners from
 every Regiment of the Army.*

*The PETITION of the Earl of Leven, Lord-
 General, the General Officers, Colonels, Captains,
 &c. of the Scots Army, presented to his Majesty
 at Newcastle.*

June 26, 1646.

And their Peti-
 tion to the King.

‘ **W**E your Majesty’s loyal Subjects and faith-
 ‘ ful Servants, the Lord-General, the Ge-
 ‘ neral Officers, the Colonels and Captains in the
 ‘ Scots

‘ *rision; that he shall speak to them in his Wrath, An. 22. Car. 1.*
 ‘ *and vex them in his sore Displeasure; and, not-*
 ‘ *withstanding of all that they can do, set his King* 1646.
 ‘ *upon his Holy Hill of Zion, and make these Na-*
 ‘ *tions happy in the sweet Fruits of Unity, in Truth*
 ‘ *and Peace.* July.

‘ The Searcher of Hearts knows we desire to hold
 ‘ fast the Band of our Covenant as sacred and in-
 ‘ violable, being persuaded that the Breach of so
 ‘ solemn a Tye could not but hasten down upon
 ‘ our Heads a Curse and Vengeance from the righ-
 ‘ teous Judge of the World, and involve these
 ‘ Kingdoms in further Calamities than they have
 ‘ yet seen. And we abhor to entertain any other
 ‘ Thoughts of you; nay, we are confident that
 ‘ your Honours will seriously endeavour the Prose-
 ‘ cution of all the Ends designed in the Covenant,
 ‘ and the bringing these Nations unto the nearest
 ‘ Conjunction, both in Judgment and Affection,
 ‘ especially in those Things that concern Religion;
 ‘ which, without all Controversy, is the readiest
 ‘ and surest Way of attaining and securing the
 ‘ Peace and Prosperity of both Kingdoms.’

Subscribed in the Name of the General Assembly,
by

ROBERT BLAIR, *Moderator.*

The Lords having given Orders for the Prosecu-
 tion of Colonel *John Lilburne* in their House, and
 that the Attorney-General and the King's Counsel
 should prepare and exhibit Articles against him;
 accordingly,

Proceedings a-
 gainst Col. Lil-
 burne before the
 House of Lords,
 for aspersing the
 Earl of Man-
 chester, &c.

July 10. The Charge was brought in and read
 as follows:

ARTICLES exhibited before the Lords in Parlia-
 ment assembled, by Sir Nathaniel Finch, Knt. one
 of his Majesty's Serjeants at Law, against Lieu-
 tenant-Colonel John Lilburne, for high Crimes
 and Misdemeanors done and committed by him.

‘ **W** Hereas the Right Hon. Edward Earl of
 ‘ *Manchester*, by the Space of divers Years
 ‘ last past, hath been and yet is one of the Peers of

An. 22. Car. 1.
1646.
July.

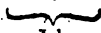
he could not but agree with what had been affirmed touching the Citizens being involved in what their Representatives did, and their not sending Commissioners as they desired; yet, as to the Substance of what they proposed, he could not so much blame them as others had done; they therein shewing themselves, in the End of the War, no less prudent than they had expressed themselves honest in the Beginning: For as when the Parliament invited them to stand by them in the War against the King, in Defence of their Religion, Lives, Liberties, and Estates, they did it heartily, and therein shewed themselves good Christians and true *Englishmen*; so now, the War being ended, and the Parliament upon making Terms with the King, and thinking fit to sue to him, now their Prisoner, for Peace, whom they had all incensed by their Resistance, the Citizens, having considerable Estates to lose, shewed themselves prudent Men, in endeavouring to procure their Pardons as well as others: And though the House will not permit them to send as they desire, they have expressed their Good-will, which, without Doubt, will be well accepted. ¹⁷

July 6. A Declaration of the Lord-General, and of the General Officers and Soldiers, of the *Scots* Army at *Newcastle*, sent to the Lords by the Commissioners of that Kingdom, was read; which, with the Consequences, were in these Words:

June, 26, 1646.

A Declaration of
the Scots Army
at Newcastle,
setting forth their
Fidelity to the
Parliament,

THE many Calamities and heavy Pressures, the sad Afflictions lying upon these Kingdoms this Time past, and the great Effusion of Christian Blood occasioned by the Continuance of this unnatural War, having so deeply wounded us; and being earnestly desirous of giving some evident Testimony of our Piety to God, Loyalty to our Sovereign, and Love to these Kingdoms, that the Constancy of our Affection to this Cause, our Zeal to the Reformation of Religion, and his Majesty's

‘ Majesty’s Person and Authority in Defence there- An. 22. Car. I.
 ‘ of, and our firm Resolutions to pursue the Ends 1646.
 ‘ expressed in our Solemn League and Covenant, 
 ‘ may appear to the World, we have thought it July.
 ‘ necessary in this Juncture of Time, (when all
 ‘ Means are essayed by the Enemies of Truth and
 ‘ Peace to disparage our Proceedings, by rendering
 ‘ suspected our best Actions and Endeavours, to
 ‘ the begetting of Misunderstanding, and weaken-
 ‘ ing the Union between the two Kingdoms) to
 ‘ declare and make known, That as we have en-
 ‘ tered into a Solemn League and Covenant, with
 ‘ our Hands lifted up unto the most High God,
 ‘ with real Intentions to promote the Ends thereof,
 ‘ so we do resolve, God willing, constantly to ad-
 ‘ here to the whole Heads and Articles of the same;
 ‘ and, for no earthly Tentation, for no Fear or
 ‘ Hope, to fall away and violate our sacred Oath,
 ‘ We do likewise profess, That nothing hath
 ‘ been with greater Care and Faithfulness endea-
 ‘ voured by us, than to preserve the happy Union
 ‘ and brotherly Correspondence between the King-
 ‘ doms, as a principal Means of Happiness to
 ‘ both; and shall continue in the same Care to
 ‘ avoid every Thing that may tend to the Infringe-
 ‘ ment thereof, with a special Regard and Ten-
 ‘ derness to the Interests of both Kingdoms: For
 ‘ the strengthening of which Union, and removing
 ‘ every Thing that might obstruct the same, as hi-
 ‘ therto we have had no Compliance nor kept Cor-
 ‘ respondence with known Enemies and Malig-
 ‘ nants, so will we never hereafter give Counte-
 ‘ nance or Encouragement to any Person disaffect-
 ‘ ed to the Parliaments of either Kingdom.
 ‘ And that the Integrity of our Intentions and
 ‘ the Uprightness of our Desires may be more ma-
 ‘ nifest, we do declare, That we abhor all public
 ‘ and private Ways contrary to the Covenant, and
 ‘ destructive to the Happiness of both Kingdoms:
 ‘ We disclaim all Dealing with those that are In-
 ‘ struments of these unhappy Troubles and Impe-
 ‘ diments of Peace; and with all such Persons who
 ‘ will

14 *The Parliamentary History*

AN. 22. Car. I. ^{1646.} may be most for your Majesty's Honour and Service, and the Prosperity of these Kingdoms.
Signed by his Excellency the Earl of Leven, the General Officers, and three Commissioners from every Regiment of the Army.

To the foregoing Petition the Earl of *Lanerk*, by his Majesty's Command, returned this Answer:

His Majesty's
 Answer by the
 Earl of Lanerk.

I Am, in his Majesty's Name, to return this Answer to the Petition presented to him by the Lord-General, the General Officers, the Colonels, and other Officers and Soldiers of the Scots Army, That his Majesty came into the Scots Army with full Intent of settling an happy Peace in these his Kingdoms, and to satisfy the just Desires of his good Subjects, and likewise to comply with his Parliaments in all Things which shall be for the Good of Religion and the Happiness of his Subjects, which he will always prefer to all worldly Interests.

And whensoever it shall please God so to bless his Majesty's Endeavours as to settle an happy Peace in these his Dominions, his Majesty will be very solicitous to find out some Means of honourable Employment for so many gallant Men as are employed in this Army.

Newcastle, June 27, 1646.

L A N E R K.

The Propositions
 of Peace sent to
 the King.

After many Months canvassing the Propositions to be sent to the King for a safe and well-grounded Peace, and after many Altercations, Messages, Conferences, Divisions in and between the two Houses, and Consultations with the Scots Commissioners about them, they were at last agreed to by all, and brought to a Conclusion. They were read this Day for the last Time, and the Lords ordered that they should immediately be sent to the King, and deputed the Earls of *Pembroke* and *Suffolk* from their House, joined with a proportionable Number of the Commons, to carry them. A Copy of which Propositions will fall in the Sequel; for they were not yet sent away of some Days.

A

A particular Letter to the King was also agreed to, this Day, by both Houses, That he would be pleased to give Command to the Earl of *Ormond*, for the delivering up of *Dublin*, and all other Forts and Garrisons in *Ireland*.

Ans. 22. Car. L.
1646.
July.

July 7. A Letter from the *Scots* Commissioners at *Edinburgh* was read, recommending *Archibald* Marquis of *Argyle* to be one of the Commissioners for the Church of *Scotland*, at *London*, to prosecute the Treaty for Uniformity in Religion and Church-Government betwixt the two Kingdoms, in the room of Lord *Balmerino*, recall'd. Accordingly his Lordship, by Consent of both Houses, was made one of the Assembly of Divines, then sitting at *Westminster*.

The same Day a Message was brought from the House of Commons, to signify to the Lords, that, about the Beginning of *June* last, the Commons, at a Conference, delivered to their Lordships a Vote, declaring, That this Kingdom had no farther Use for the *Scots* Army; wherein they desired their Concurrence. That they now again desired it; and further to acquaint them, that the Commons of *England* were no longer able to bear that Burden, nor pay that Army.

The Lords did not go immediately on this Affair, but ordered that, the next Morning, they would not only proceed upon it, but also on the disbanding all the Armies in the Kingdom; and the Peers were to have Notice to attend. Accordingly,

July 8. This Business was taken into Consideration, but soon concluded; for the Vote being again read, and a Debate arising, the Question was put, Whether it should be laid aside till such Time as this House receive an Answer from the Commissioners which are to go to the King with the Propositions for Peace, after the Delivery of the Petitions? and resolved in the Affirmative.

This Day, also, the Commons delivered to the Lords, at a Conference, a Copy of the Instructions

An. 22. Car. 1. tions which were to be given to the Commissioners, mentioned above: These were ordered to be kept private, and are not printed with the Propositions, but stand thus in the *Journals* of both Houses.

1646.

July.

INSTRUCTIONS of both Houses of Parliament for Philip Earl of Pembroke and Montgomery, James Earl of Suffolk, Sir Walter Erle, Knt. Sir John Hipplesley, Knt. Robert Goodwin, Esq; Luke Robinton, Esq; or any three of them, appointed Committees of both Houses of the Parliament of England, to join with the Commissioners of the Kingdom of Scotland, to present to the King's Majesty the Propositions for a safe and well-grounded Peace, and to receive his Majesty's Answer thereunto.

Instructions to the Commissioners appointed to attend him there-with.

‘ YOU, or any three of you, are forthwith to repair to the Town of *Newcastle upon Tyne*, or to such other Place within the Kingdom of *England* where his Majesty shall be, and there to observe the Instructions following:

‘ You, or any three of you, shall there present to the King, from the Lords and Commons assembled in the Parliament of *England*, the Propositions herewith delivered unto you for a safe and well-grounded Peace, agreed upon by the two Houses of the Parliament of *England*, and by the Commissioners of the Kingdom of *Scotland*.

‘ You, or any three of you, are to desire from the King his positive Answer and Consent to the said Propositions.

‘ You are to return with all Diligence and Speed to the Parliament at *Westminster*, as soon as you shall have received the said Answer from his Majesty. In Expectation of the said Answer you are not to make Stay at *Newcastle*, or at such other Place where you shall find the King, above the Space of ten Days next after your Arrival at *Newcastle*, or such other Place as aforesaid; but the said Time of ten Days being expired, you are forthwith, without any Delay, to return to
‘ the

Of ENGLAND. 17

‘ the Parliament of *England*, to give them an Ac- An. 22. Car. I.
‘ count of your Proceedings.’ 1646.

July 9. A Letter was read in the House of Lords, which came from the Assembly of the Kirk of *Scotland* at *Edinburgh*; which, for its extraordinary Style, requires a Place in this History.

July.

A LETTER from the General Assembly of the Kirk of Scotland to both Houses of Parliament.

Right Honourable, Edinburgh, June 18, 1646.

‘ **T**HE Report of the great Things which the Lord hath done for your Honours has gone forth into many Lands, and it becometh us, least of any, either to smother or to extenuate the same: We desire to be enlarged in the Admiration of the Power and Mercy of God the Author, and to diminish nothing of that Praise that is due to you as Instruments.

A Letter from the General Assembly of the Kirk of Scotland to the Parliament.

‘ When the Lord set your Honours upon the Bench of Judgment, both the Kirk and Commonwealth of *England* were afflicted with intestine and bosom Evils; the Cure whereof could not but be very difficult, because they were not only many, but for the most Part universal and deeply rooted, shelter’d under the Shadow of Custom and Law, and supported with all the Wisdom and Strength of the Malignant and Prelatical Party; who rather chused to involve the Land in an unnatural and bloody War, than to fail of their ambitious and treacherous Designs against Religion, the Priviledges of Parliament, and the Laws and Liberties of the Kingdom. Neither hath that miserable Crew been wanting unto their own Ends, but, for many Years together, hath desperately pursued their Resolutions in Arms; and was likely to have prevailed, if the Lord had not put himself in the Breach, and furnished you with much Patience, Wisdom, Courage, and Constancy in the Midst of many Difficulties and Distresses; and, at last, with so

VOL. XV

B

‘ glo-

An. 22. Car. 1.

1646.

July.

‘ glorious and triumphing a Success, that the Enemy hath fallen every where before you, and there is none left to appear against you.

‘ These Things, as they be Matter of our Refreshment and of your Glory, so do they lay a strong Obligation upon your Honours to walk humbly with your God, and to improve the Power he has put into your Hands, for the Advancement of the Kingdom of his Son, and bringing forth the head Stone of his House.

‘ The slow Progress of the Work of God has always been the Matter of our Sorrow; which is now encreased by the Multiplication of the Spirits of Error and Delusion, that drown many Souls in Perdition; and so strengthen themselves that they shall afterwards be laboured against with more Pains than Success, if a speedy and effectual Remedy be not provided: And, therefore, as the Servants of the living God, who not only send up our Supplications daily for you, but have hazarded ourselves in your Defence, we do earnestly beseech your Honours, in the Bowels of Jesus Christ, to give unto him the Glory that is due unto his Name, by a timeous establishing all his Ordinances in the full Integrity and Power thereof, according to the League and Covenant. As long as the Assembly of Divines was in Debate, and an Enemy in the Field, we conceive that these might be probable Grounds of Delay; which being now removed out of the Way, we do promise ourselves, through your Wisdom, Faithfulness, and Zeal, the perfecting of that which was the main Ground of our Engagement, and a chief Matter of Consolation unto us in all our sad and heavy Sufferings from the Hand of a most cruel Enemy.

‘ We know that there is a Generation of Men who retard the Work of Uniformity, and foment Jealousies betwixt the Nations, studying, if it were possible, to break our Bonds asunder: But we trust that he that sitteth in the Heavens will laugh, and that the Lord will have them in Derision;

Of ENGLAND. 19

‘ *rison; that he shall speak to them in his Wrath, and vex them in his sore Displeasure; and, notwithstanding of all that they can do, set his King upon his Holy Hill of Zion, and make these Nations happy in the sweet Fruits of Unity, in Truth and Peace.*’

An. 22. Car. 1.
1646.
July.

‘ The Searcher of Hearts knows we desire to hold fast the Band of our Covenant as sacred and inviolable, being persuaded that the Breach of so solemn a Tye could not but hasten down upon our Heads a Curse and Vengeance from the righteous Judge of the World, and involve these Kingdoms in further Calamities than they have yet seen. And we abhor to entertain any other Thoughts of you; nay, we are confident that your Honours will seriously endeavour the Prosecution of all the Ends designed in the Covenant, and the bringing these Nations unto the nearest Conjunction, both in Judgment and Affection, especially in those Things that concern Religion; which, without all Controversy, is the readiest and surest Way of attaining and securing the Peace and Prosperity of both Kingdoms.’

Subscribed in the Name of the General Assembly,
by

ROBERT BLAIR, *Moderator.*

The Lords having given Orders for the Prosecution of Colonel *John Lilburne* in their House, and that the Attorney-General and the King’s Counsel should prepare and exhibit Articles against him; accordingly,

Proceedings against Col. Lilburne before the House of Lords, for aspersing the Earl of Manchester, &c.

July 10. The Charge was brought in and read as follows:

ARTICLES *exhibited before the Lords in Parliament assembled, by Sir Nathaniel Finch, Knt. one of his Majesty’s Serjeants at Law, against Lieutenant-Colonel John Lilburne, for high Crimes and Misdemeanors done and committed by him.*

‘ **W** Hereas the Right Hon. *Edward Earl of Manchester*, by the Space of divers Years last past, hath been and yet is one of the Peers of

An. 22. Car. 1.

1646.

July.

‘ this Realm ; and whereas the said Earl was, by
 ‘ Ordinance of Parliament, appointed General of
 ‘ divers Forces raised by the Parliament, the said
 ‘ *John Lilburne*, intending to scandalize and dis-
 ‘ honour the said Earl, and to raise Discord between
 ‘ him and other Subjects of this Realm, hath, in a
 ‘ certain Book hereunto annexed, and by him con-
 ‘ trived, and caused to be printed and published,
 ‘ intituled *The just Man’s Justification ; or a Letter*
 ‘ *by way of Plea in bar*, falsely and scandalously af-
 ‘ firmed and published certain Passages concerning
 ‘ the said Earl of *Manchester*, and his Demeanors in
 ‘ his said Office and Employment ; viz.

I. ‘ Touching the Complaint by the said *Lil-*
 ‘ *burne* alledged to be made by him and others to
 ‘ the said Earl, as follows, at Page 2. *I complained to*
 ‘ *the Earl of Manchester against Colonel King, be-*
 ‘ *ing both his General and mine, and at the same*
 ‘ *Time of divers Gentlemen of the Committee of*
 ‘ *Lincoln, as Mr. Archer, &c. and having Arti-*
 ‘ *cles of a very high Nature against him, pushed my*
 ‘ *Lord to a Trial of him at a Council of War ; and*
 ‘ *at the very same Time the Mayor, Aldermen, and*
 ‘ *Town Clerk of Boston came to Lincoln to my Lord,*
 ‘ *with Articles of a superlative Nature against the*
 ‘ *said Colonel King their Governor, but could not get*
 ‘ *my Lord to do them Justice at a Council of War,*
 ‘ *contrary to all our Expectations, as of Right we*
 ‘ *ought to have had ; which at present saved his*
 ‘ *Head upon his Shoulders.* And, in Page the 8th
 ‘ and 9th of that Book, did affirm these Words, viz.
 ‘ *We could not at all prevail, the Reason of which*
 ‘ *we are not able to render, unless it were that King’s*
 ‘ *two Chaplains, Lee and Garter, prevailed with*
 ‘ *the Earl’s two Chaplains, Ash and Good, to*
 ‘ *cast a Clergy Mist over their Lord’s Eyes, that he*
 ‘ *should not be able to see any Deformity in Colonel*
 ‘ *King.*

II. ‘ The said *John Lilburne*, within three
 ‘ Months last past, in a certain Book by him con-
 ‘ trived, and caused to be printed and published,
 ‘ hereunto annexed, intituled *The Freeman’s Free-*
 ‘ *dom*

dom vindicated; or, *A true Relation of the Cause* An. 22. Car. I.
 and Manner of Lieutenant-Colonel John Lilburne's 1646.
 present Imprisonment in Newgate, being thereunto
 arbitrarily and illegally committed by the House of
 Peers, June 11, 1646, for his delivering in at
 their open Bar, under his Hand and Seal, his Pro-
 testation against their encroaching upon the com-
 mon Liberties of all the Commons of England; by
 endeavouring to try him, a Commoner of England,
 in a criminal Cause, contrary to the express Tenor
 and Form of the 29th Chapter of the Great Charter
 of England; and for making his legal and just
 Appeal to his competent, proper, and legal Tryers
 and Judges, the Commons of England, in Parlia-
 ment assembled, did falsly and scandalously, in the
 8th Page of that Book, publish and affirm, con-
 cerning the said Earl of Manchester, these false
 and scandalous Words, *I clearly perceive the Hand*
of Joab to be in this, namely, my old Back-friend
the Earl of Manchester, the Fountain, as I con-
ceive, of all my present Troubles; who would have
hanged me for taking a Castle from the Cavaliers
in Yorkshire, and is so closely glued in Interest
to that Party, that he protected from Justice Co-
lonel King, one of his own Officers, for his good
Service in treacherously delivering or betraying
Crowland to the Cavaliers; and never called, nor
that I could bear desired to call, to account his Of-
ficer or Officers that basely, cowardly, and treache-
rously betrayed and delivered Lincoln up to the E-
nemy, without striking one Stroke, or staying till
so much as a Troop of Horse or a Trumpeter came
to demand it. His Lordship's Head, it seems, had
stood too long upon his Shoulders, that makes him lie
cannot be quiet till Lieutenant-General Cromwell's
Charge against him, fully proved in the House of
Commons, be revived, which is of as high a Na-
ture, I believe, as ever any Charge given in there;
the Epitome of which I have by me, and his Lord-
ship may live to see it shortly in Print by my Means.
 And the said John Lilburne, in the Book and
 Page last mentioned, in Scandal and Dishonour

July.

AN. 22. CAR. I.
1646.

July.

of Henry Earl of Stamford, a Peer of this Kingdom, and a late Commander of Forces of the Parliament, maketh this scandalous Expression, viz. *And for my Lord of Stamford, at present I desire him but to remember one Article made at the Delivery of Exeter, which it may be, in Time, will cool his furious Endeavours to enslave the free People of England.*

III. Whereas the said John Lilburne, upon the 11th Day of June last past, by virtue of the Order of the Peers assembled in this present Parliament, was brought to their Bar, to answer concerning the said Book in the said first Article mentioned; the said John Lilburne, intending, falsely and maliciously, to scandalize and dishonour the Peers assembled in Parliament, and their just Rights and Authorities, did then and there, in Contempt of the said House of Peers, at the open Bar, the Peers then sitting, openly deliver a certain Paper hereunto annexed, under his Hand and Seal, intitled *The Protestation, Plea, and Defence of Lieutenant-Colonel John Lilburne, given to the Lords at their Bar, the 11th of June, 1646, with his Appeal to his competent, proper, and legal Tryers and Judges, the Commons of England in Parliament assembled*, which Paper is hereunto annexed, and since caused the same to be printed and published; in which Paper amongst many other Scandals therein contained he published and affirmed, concerning the Lords in Parliament, these Words following, viz. *That before, my Lords, you being, as you are called, Peers, meerly made by Prerogative, and never intrusted or impowered by the Commons of England, &c.*

And in another Place thereof, concerning the Lords and their Proceedings in Parliament, he protest and publish these Words following, *That here, at your open Bar, protest against the present Proceedings with me, in this criminal Cause, as unjust, and against the Form of the Great Charter, which we have sworn inviolably to observe, and*

‘ Commons of England to do the same; and there-
 ‘ fore, my Lords, I do hereby declare, and am resol-
 ‘ ved, as in Duty bound to God, myself, Country,
 ‘ and Posterity, to maintain my legal Liberties to the
 ‘ last Drop of my Blood, against all Opposers what-
 ‘ soever; having so often in the Field adventured
 ‘ my Life therefore; and do from you, and your
 ‘ Bar, as Incroachers and usurping Judges, appeal
 ‘ to the Bar and Tribunal of my competent, proper,
 ‘ and legal Tryers and Judges, the Commons of En-
 ‘ gland assembled in Parliament.

An. 22. Car. 1.
 1646.
 July.

‘ And, in Pursuance of his said malicious and il-
 ‘ legal Practice, did afterwards contrive and pub-
 ‘ lish a scandalous and libellous Letter, hereunto
 ‘ likewise annexed, directed to Mr. *Wollaston*,
 ‘ Keeper of *Newgate*, or his Deputy; wherein, a-
 ‘ mong other Things, he hath caused to be inserted
 ‘ and published these Words concerning the Peers
 ‘ in Parliament, viz. *Their Lordships sitting by vir-*
 ‘ *tue of their Prerogative Patents, and not by Elec-*
 ‘ *tion or Consent of the People, have, as Magna*
 ‘ *Charta, and other good Laws of the Land tell me,*
 ‘ *nothing to do to try me, or any Commoner whatso-*
 ‘ *ever, in any criminal Cause, either for Life, Limb,*
 ‘ *Liberty, or Estate: But, contrary hereunto, as*
 ‘ *Encroachers and Usurpers upon my Freedom and*
 ‘ *Liberty, they have lately and illegally endeavour-*
 ‘ *ed to try me, a Commoner, at their Bar; for*
 ‘ *which I, under my Hand and Seal, protested to*
 ‘ *their Faces against them, as violent and illegal En-*
 ‘ *croachers upon the Rights and Liberties of me and*
 ‘ *all the Commons of England, a Copy of which I*
 ‘ *herewith in Print send you: And at their Bar I*
 ‘ *openly appealed to my competent, proper, and legal*
 ‘ *Tryers and Judges, the Commons of England as-*
 ‘ *sembled in Parliament; for which their Lordships*
 ‘ *did illegally, arbitrarily, and tyrannically, commit*
 ‘ *me to Prison into your Custody; which Protestation*
 ‘ *and Papers, and Matters therein contained,*
 ‘ *do falsely, scandalously, and maliciously charge*
 ‘ *the Peers in Parliament with Tyranny, Usurpa-*
 ‘ *tion*

24 *The Parliamentary HISTORY*

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.

July.

tion, Perjury, Injustice, and Breach of the great Trust in them reposed; and are an high Breach of the Privilege of Parliament, and are high Offences against the Laws and Statutes of this Kingdom, and do tend to the great Scandal of the Peers, and the Authority with which they are invested, and stir up Difference between the said Peers and others of the Subjects of this Realm.

NATHANIEL FINCH.

A printed Paper was also brought into the House, intituled

The Sum of the CHARGE given in by Lieutenant-General Cromwell against the Earl of Manchester^a.

THAT the Earl of *Manchester* hath been always indisposed and backwards to Engagements, and against the Ending of the War by the Sword, and for such a Peace to which a Victory would be a Disadvantage; and hath declared this by Principles express to that Purpose, and a continued Series of Carriage and Actions answerable; and since the Taking of *York* (as if the Parliament had then Advantage enough) he hath declined whatever tended to further Advantage upon the Enemy; neglected and studiously shied off all Opportunities to that Purpose, and he thought the King too low and the Parliament too high; especially at *Dennington-Castle*, where he had drawn the Army into, and detained in such a Posture as to give the Enemy free advantages, and this before his Conjunction with the other Armies, by his own absolute gainst or without his Council of War, many Commands from the Committee of Kingdoms, and with Contempt and violation of those Commands; and, since the C

^a The Earl of *Manchester's* Vindication of him Charge, as presented to the House of Lords by him in November, 1644, is printed in *Rushworth*, Vol

Scots Army, now in the Kingdom of England, from the deep Sense of the bleeding Condition of these Kingdoms, so heavy pressed with sad Afflictions thro' the unhappy Differences between your Majesty and your Subjects, from the true Affection and Zeal to the Reformation of Religion, and your Majesty's Person and Authority in Defence thereof; and in the Pursuance of that sacred Oath which we have taken, with our Hands lifted up to the most High God, do make our humble Address, and tender this earnest Petition to your Majesty in our Name, and in the Name of all the inferior Commanders and Soldiers under our Charge, that your Majesty, in your Wisdom and Goodness, may be pleased to take a speedy Course for settling of Religion and Church-Government in this Kingdom, according to the Word of God and Examples of the best Reformed Churches, and bringing the Churches of the three Kingdoms to the nearest Conjunction and Uniformity; and for establishing the Privileges and Liberties of your Kingdoms according to the Desires of your good People.

An. 22. Car. I.
 1646.
 July.

We may not conceal our unfeigned Grief for that your Majesty hath not yet been pleased to authorize and sign the Covenant, which we are confident would bring Honour to God, Happiness to yourself and Posterity, and endear your Majesty, above Measure, to all your faithful and loyal Subjects: In the just Defence whereof, as many of them have already lost their Lives, so are we ready to sacrifice ours.

We must also pray your Majesty to compassionate the distressed Condition of your Kingdoms, groaning under the heavy Pressures of manifold Calamities occasioned by the Continuance of this unnatural War; and to comply with the Councils of your Parliaments; that all Differences being happily composed, and the Armies in both Kingdoms disbanded, we may return home in Peace, or be disposed of otherwise by your Majesty, with the Advice of your Parliaments, which

26 *The Parliamentary HISTORY*

AN. 22. CAR. I. Execution of this Order to prevent any Affronts
1646. being offered him.
July.

2. ' That Col. *Lilburne* be brought to the House the next Morning in safe Custody by the Sheriffs.

3. ' That the Gentleman-Usher do search in *Westminster* for all printed Copies of the Papers read this Day, intituled *The Sum of the Charge given in by Lieutenant-Colonel Cromwell against the Earl of Manchester*, and bring them and the Letters before this House presently.

We have been the more particular in the foregoing Extracts, and shall be so in the ensuing Trial of this resolute Man, because there is so little Notice taken of this remarkable Affair in *Rusworth*, that the Name of *Lilburne* is not so much as mentioned in his sixth Volume; and these Proceedings against him are almost wholly passed over by the other Contemporaries. Besides, its being purely a Parliamentary Business, wherein the Honour of the supream Court of Judicature in the Kingdom was principally attack'd and affronted, the Subject cannot be omitted in these Inquiries. The Caution of the Lords to the Sheriffs, to take Care that the Hangman should not be molested in doing his Office, was very necessary; for this political Enthusiast; young as he was, had gain'd a high Esteem with the Populace, who were enraged at what they call'd his hard Usage; and many Papers, and some Pamphlets, were printed and dispersed about the City to incite an Insurrection in his Favour. One of these is in our Collection, intituled, *A Remonstrance of many thousand Citizens, and other freeborn People of England, to their own House of Commons, occasioned through the illegal and barbarous Imprisonment that famous and worthy Sufferer for his Civil Freedom, Lieutenant-Colonel John Lilburne: in their just Demands, in behalf of themselves the whole Kingdom, concerning their public Peace, and Freedom, is express'd; calling the Commissioners in Parliament to an Account. (Since the Beginning of their Session to the*

have discharged their Duties to the Universality of the People, their Sovereign Lord, from whom their Power and Strength is derived, and by whom, ad bene placitum, it is continued.

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.
July.

In the Frontispiece is a Print of our Hero, looking through the Bars of a Prison: Over his Head is inscribed, *The Liberty of the Freeborn Englishman, conferred upon him by the House of Lords, June 11, 1646, with his Coat of Arms annexed: And underneath, these Lines;*

*Gaze not upon this Shadow that is vain,
But rather raise thy Thoughts a higher Strain:
To God, I mean, who set this young Man free^k,
And, in like Straits can eke deliver thee.
Yea, though the Lords have him in Bonds again,
The Lord of Lords will his just Cause maintain.*

July 11. Col. Lilburne was brought again to the Bar of the House of Lords to hear his Charge read, and make Answer to it. The whole Proceeding on which we give from their *Journals*, as follows:

Being commanded by the House to kneel as a Delinquent, he refused so to do, saying, *He would not.* Then the Lords commanding his Charge to be read to him, he said, *He would not hear, he having appealed to the House of Commons from their House, to which he would stand as long as he had Life:* And, upon reading of the Charge, he stopped his Ears with his Fingers, and would not hear it read; whereupon it was moved by Mr. Serjeant Finch, one of the King's Counsel, That this being as great an Affront as could be offered to so great a Court as this is, he might be made to hear his Charge read; and the Court upon this commanded him to withdraw.

Then, after Debate, it was ordered he should be called in and admonished; and told that, by stopping his Ears and ill Language and Deportment, he hath deprived himself of what Favour he might have had in this House; wherefore the Lords com-

manded

^k Col. Lilburne was first imprisoned by a Sentence of the Court of Star-Chamber, in the Year 1637, being then only 19 Years of Age; but was discharged by Parliament in 1640.

1645.
 1545.
 1545.

manded him to hear his Charge read without stopping his Ears: He answered, *He had appealed from this House (their Lordships not being his competent Judges) to the House of Commons, which he will stand to as long as he hath any Blood in his Body.*

Upon this the House commanded the Charge to be read to him; but he said he would not hear it read, and still stopped his Ears whilst it was read. When it was read, the Speaker asked him what he said to his Charge? He answered, *He heard nothing of it; he had nothing to do with it; but would stand to his Protestation; and having appealed from their Lordships, and protested against them as unrighteous Judges, to those Judges who are to judge both him and their Lordships, the House of Commons assembled in Parliament, he did render up his Body to their Lordships Fury.*

Hereupon he was again commanded to withdraw; and the Lords, upon Consideration of the whole Matter of the Charge, taking his Refusal to answer *pro Confesso*; and also considering the high Contempt of the Honour and Dignity of the House, shewed by his Words and Speeches this Day at their Bar, which were contained in his Charge, did adjudge,

The Sentence pronounced against him.

1. *That Lieutenant-Colonel John Lilburne, for his high Contempt to the Honour of this House, be fined 4000 l. to the King.*

2. *That he shall be imprisoned in the Tower of London during the Space of Seven Years.*

3. *That he shall be incapable to bear any Office, or Place Military or Civil, in Church or Commonwealth, during his Life.*

It was also ordered, 'That the Pamphlet, intitled, *The just Man's Justification; or, a Letter by way of Plea in Bar*; and the Pamphlet, intitled *The Freeman's Freedom vindicated*, mentioned in the Charge against Lieutenant-Colonel John Lilburne, shall be burnt by the Hands of the common Hangman, in the Presence of the Sheriffs or their Officers, on Monday Morning next at ten of the Clock, at the Old Exchange in London, and at the New Palace Yard in Westminster.'

Next

Next was read, and enter'd in the *Lords Journals*, a Copy of the Propositions for Peace, which were now ordered to be sent away to the King with all convenient Speed, and to be printed and published.

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.
July.

*The PROPOSITIONS of the LORDS and COMMONS assembled in Parliament, for a safe and well-grounded Peace.*¹

May it please your Majesty,

WE the Lords and Commons, assembled in the Parliament of *England*, in the Name, and on the Behalf of the Kingdoms of *England* and *Ireland*, and the Commissioners of the Parliament of *Scotland*, in the Name, and on the Behalf of the Kingdom of *Scotland*, do humbly present unto your Majesty the humble Desires and Propositions for a safe and well-grounded Peace, agreed upon by the Parliaments of both Kingdoms respectively, unto which we do pray your Majesty's Assent; and that they, and all such Bills as shall be tendered to your Majesty in pursuance of them, or any of them, may be established and enacted for Statutes and Acts of Parliament, by your Majesty's Royal Assent in the Parliaments of both Kingdoms respectively.

The Propositions of Peace from the Parliament, presented to the King at Newcastle.

Whereas both Houses of the Parliament of *England* have been necessitated to undertake a War in their just and lawful Defence; and afterwards both Kingdoms of *England* and *Scotland*, joined in *solemn League and Covenant*, were engaged to prosecute the same:

I. That by Act of Parliament in each Kingdom respectively, all *Oaths*, *Declarations*, and *Proclamations* heretofore had, or hereafter to be had, against both or either of the Houses of Parliament of *England*, the Parliament of the Kingdom of *Scotland*, and the late Convention of Estates in *Scotland*, or Committees flowing from

the

¹ From the Original Edition, printed for John Wright, at the King's Head in the Old Bailey, July 17, 1646.

An. 22. Car. I.

1646.

July.

‘ the Parliament or Convention in *Scotland*, or their
 ‘ Ordinances and Proceedings ; or against any for
 ‘ adhering unto them ; or for doing or executing
 ‘ any Office, Place, or Charge, by any Authority
 ‘ derived from them ; and all Judgments, Indict-
 ‘ ments, Outlawries, Attainders, and Inquisitions,
 ‘ in any the said Causes ; and all Grants thereupon
 ‘ made or had, or to be made or had, be declared
 ‘ null, suppressed and forbidden : And that this
 ‘ be publickly intimated in all Parish Churches
 ‘ within his Majesty’s Dominions, and all other
 ‘ Places needful.

II. ‘ That his Majesty, according to the laud-
 ‘ able Example of his Royal Father, of happy Me-
 ‘ mory, may be pleased to swear and sign the late
 ‘ *solemn League and Covenant* ; and that an Act of
 ‘ Parliament be passed in both Kingdoms respec-
 ‘ tively, for enjoining the taking thereof by all the
 ‘ Subjects of the three Kingdoms ; and the *Ordi-*
 ‘ *nances* concerning the Manner of taking the same
 ‘ in both Kingdoms, be confirmed by Acts of Par-
 ‘ liament respectively, with such Penalties, as, by
 ‘ mutual Advice of both Kingdoms, shall be agreed
 ‘ upon.

III. ‘ That a Bill be passed for the utter abo-
 ‘ lishing and taking away of all Archbishops, Bi-
 ‘ shops, their Chancellors and Commissaries, Deans
 ‘ and Sub-Deans, Deans and Chapters, Arch-
 ‘ Deacons, Canons, and Prebendaries ; and all
 ‘ Chanters, Chancellors, Treasurers, Sub-Trea-
 ‘ surers, Succentors, and Sacristis ; and all Vicars
 ‘ Choral and Choristers, old Vicars and new
 ‘ Vicars, of any Cathedral or Collegiate Church,
 ‘ and all other their Under Officers, out of the
 ‘ Church of *England*, and Dominion of *Wales* ;
 ‘ and out of the Church of *Ireland*, with such Al-
 ‘ terations concerning the Estates of Prelates, as
 ‘ shall agree with the Articles of the late *Treaty*
 ‘ of the Date at *Edinburgh*, November 29, 1643
 ‘ and joint *Declaration* of both Kingdoms.

IV. ' That the *Ordinances* concerning the calling and sitting of the Assembly of Divines, be confirmed by Act of Parliament.

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.

July.

V. ' That Reformation of Religion, according to the *Covenant*, be settled by Act of Parliament, in such Manner as both Houses have agreed, or shall agree upon, after Consultation had with the Assembly of Divines.

VI. ' For as much as both Kingdoms are mutually obliged by the same *Covenant*, to endeavour the nearest Conjunction and Uniformity in Matters of Religion, That such Unity and Uniformity in Religion according to the *Covenant*, as, after Consultation had with the Divines of both Kingdoms now assembled, is or shall be jointly agreed upon by both Houses of Parliament of *England*, and by the Church and Kingdom of *Scotland*, be confirmed by Acts of Parliament of both Kingdoms respectively.

VII. ' That for the more effectual disabling Jesuits, Priests, Papists, and Popish Recusants from disturbing the State, and eluding the Laws; and for the better discovering, and speedy Conviction of Recusants, an Oath be established by Act of Parliament, to be administered to them; wherein they shall abjure and renounce the Pope's Supremacy, the Doctrine of Transubstantiation, Purgatory, Worshipping the Consecrated Host, Crucifixes and Images, and all other Popish Superstitions and Errors; and refusing the said Oath, being tendered in such Manner as shall be appointed by the said Act, to be a sufficient Conviction of Recusancy.

VIII. ' That an Act of Parliament be passed for Education of the Children of Papists by Protestants, in the Protestant Religion.

IX. ' That an Act be passed for the true Levy of the Penalties against them; which Penalties to be levied and disposed in such Manner as both Houses shall agree on; wherein to be provided that his Majesty shall have no Loss.

X.

32 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 22. Car. I.

1646.

July.

X. ‘ That an Act be passed in Parliament,
‘ whereby the Practices of Papists against the State
‘ may be prevented, and the Laws against them
‘ duly executed, and a stricter Course taken to pre-
‘ vent the saying or hearing of Mass in the Court,
‘ or any other Part of this Kingdom.

XI. ‘ The like for the Kingdom of *Scotland*,
‘ concerning the four last preceding *Propositions*,
‘ in such Manner as the Estates of the Parliament
‘ there shall think fit.

XII. ‘ That the King do give his Royal Assent
‘ to an Act for the due Observation of the Lord’s
‘ Day.

‘ To the Bill for the Suppression of Innovations
‘ in Churches and Chappels, in and about the
‘ Worship of God, &c.

‘ For the better Advancement of the Preaching
‘ of God’s Holy Word in all Parts of this King-
‘ dom.

‘ To the Bill against the enjoying of Pluralities
‘ of Benefices by Spiritual Persons, and Non-Resi-
‘ dency.

‘ To an Act to be framed and agreed upon by
‘ both Houses of Parliament for the reforming and
‘ regulating of both Universities, of the Colleges
‘ of *Westminster*, *Winchester*, and *Eaton*. And

‘ To such Act or Acts for raising of Monies,
‘ for the Payment and satisfying of the Public Debts
‘ and Damages of the Kingdom and other publick
‘ Uses, as shall hereafter be agreed on by both
‘ Houses of Parliament ; and that if the King do
‘ not give his Assent thereunto, then it being done
‘ by both Houses of Parliament, the same shall be
‘ as valid, to all Intents and Purposes, as if the
‘ Royal Assent had been given thereunto.

‘ The like for the Kingdom of *Scotland*.

‘ And that his Majesty give Assurance of his
‘ Consenting, in the Parliament of *Scotland*, to an
‘ Act, acknowledging and ratifying the Acts of the
‘ Convention of Estates of *Scotland*, called by the
‘ Counsel and Conservers of the Peace, and the
‘ Com-

‘ Commissioners for the Common Burthens, and assembled the twenty-second Day of *June*, 1643, and several Times continued since, and of the Parliament of that Kingdom since convened.

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.
July.

XIII. ‘ That the Lords and Commons in the Parliament of *England* assembled, shall, during the Space of twenty Years, from the first of *July*, 1646, arm, train, and discipline, or cause to be armed, trained, and disciplined, all the Forces of the Kingdoms of *England* and *Ireland*, and Dominion of *Wales*, the Isles of *Guernsey* and *Jersey*, and the Town of *Berwick* upon *Tweed*, already raised, both for Sea and Land Service; and shall, from Time to Time, during the said Space of twenty Years, raise, levy, arm, train, and discipline, or cause to be raised, levied, armed, trained, and disciplined, any other Forces, for Land and Sea Service, in the Kingdoms, Dominions, and Places aforesaid, as in their Judgments they shall, from Time to Time, during the said Space of twenty Years, think fit and appoint; and that neither the King, his Heirs or Successors, nor any other but such as shall act by the Authority or Approbation of the said Lords and Commons, shall, during the said Space of twenty Years, exercise any of the Powers aforesaid.

‘ And the like for the Kingdom of *Scotland*, if the Estates of the Parliament there shall think fit.

‘ That Monies be raised and levied for the Maintenance and Use of the said Forces for Land Service, and of the Navy and Forces for Sea Service, in such Sort, and by such Ways and Means, as the said Lords and Commons shall, from Time to Time, during the said Space of twenty Years, think fit and appoint, and not otherwise: That all the said Forces, both for Land and Sea Service, so raised or levied, or to be raised or levied, and also the Admiralty and Navy, shall, from Time to Time, during the said Space of twenty Years, be employed, managed, ordered, and disposed by the said Lords and Commons in such Sort, and by such Ways

An. 22. Car. 1.

1646.

July.

and Means, as they shall think fit and appoint,
and not otherwise: And the said Lords and Com-
mons, during the said Space of twenty Years,
shall have Power,

1. ' To suppress all Forces raised, or to be raised,
' without Authority and Consent of the said Lords
' and Commons, to the Disturbance of the public
' Peace of the Kingdoms of *England* and *Ireland*,
' and Dominion of *Wales*, the Isles of *Guernsey*
' and *Jersey*, and the Town of *Berwick upon*
' *Tweed*, or any of them.

2. ' To suppress any foreign Forces who shall
' invade, or endeavour to invade, the Kingdoms
' of *England* and *Ireland*, Dominion of *Wales*, the
' Isles of *Guernsey* and *Jersey*, and the Town of
' *Berwick upon Tweed*, or any of them.

3. ' To conjoin such Forces of the Kingdom
' of *England* with the Forces of the Kingdom of
' *Scotland*, as the said Lords and Commons shall,
' from Time to Time, during the said Space of
' twenty Years, judge fit and necessary: To re-
' sist all foreign Invasions, and to suppress any
' Forces raised, or to be raised, against, or within,
' either of the said Kingdoms, to the Disturbance
' of the public Peace of the said Kingdoms, or a-
' ny of them, by any Authority under the Great
' Seal, or other Warrant whatsoever, without
' Consent of the said Lords and Commons of the
' Parliament of *England*, and the Parliament, or
' the Estates of the Parliament, of *Scotland* respec-
' tively: And that no Forces of either Kingdom
' shall go into, or continue in, the other King-
' dom, without the Advice and Desire of the said
' Lords and Commons of the Parliament of *Eng-
' land*, and the Parliament of the Kingdom of
' *Scotland*, or such as shall be by them appointed
' for that Purpose: And that, after the Expiration
' of the said twenty Years, neither the King, his
' Heirs or Successors, or any Person or Persons,
' by Colour or Pretence of any Commission, Power,
' Deputation, or Authority to be derived from the
' King, his Heirs or Successors, or any of them,
' shall

‘ shall raise, arm, train, discipline, employ, order, An. 22. Car. I.
 ‘ manage, disband, or dispose any of the Forces, 1646.
 ‘ by Sea or Land, of the Kingdoms of *England*
 ‘ and *Ireland*, the Dominion of *Wales*, the Isles
 ‘ of *Guernsey* and *Jersey*, and the Town of *Ber-*
 ‘ *wick* upon *Tweed*; nor exercise any of the said
 ‘ Powers or Authorities, in the precedent Arti-
 ‘ cles, mentioned and expressed to be, during the
 ‘ said Space of twenty Years, in the said Lords
 ‘ and Commons; nor do any Act or Thing con-
 ‘ cerning the Execution of the said Powers or
 ‘ Authorities, or any of them, without the Con-
 ‘ sent of the said Lords and Commons first had
 ‘ and obtained: That after the Expiration of the
 ‘ said twenty Years, in all Cases wherein the Lords
 ‘ and Commons shall declare the Safety of the
 ‘ Kingdom to be concerned, and shall thereupon
 ‘ pass any Bill or Bills for the raising, arming,
 ‘ training, disciplining, employing, managing, or-
 ‘ dering, or disposing of the Forces by Sea or Land,
 ‘ of the Kingdoms of *England* and *Ireland*, the
 ‘ Dominion of *Wales*, Isles of *Guernsey* and *Jersey*,
 ‘ and the Town of *Berwick* upon *Tweed*, or of any
 ‘ Part of the said Forces; or concerning the Admi-
 ‘ ralty and Navy; or concerning the levying of
 ‘ Monies for the Raising, Maintenance, or Use
 ‘ of the said Forces for Land Service; or of the
 ‘ Navy, and Forces for Sea Service, or of any Part
 ‘ of them; and if that the Royal Assent to such
 ‘ Bill or Bills shall not be given in the House of
 ‘ Peers, within such Time after the passing thereof
 ‘ by both Houses of Parliament, as the said Houses
 ‘ shall judge fit and convenient, that then such
 ‘ Bill or Bills, so passed by the said Lords and
 ‘ Commons as aforesaid, and to which the Royal
 ‘ Assent shall not be given as is herein before ex-
 ‘ pressed, shall, nevertheless, after Declaration of
 ‘ the said Lords and Commons made in that Be-
 ‘ half, have the Force and Strength of an Act or
 ‘ Acts of Parliament; and shall be as valid, to all
 ‘ Intents and Purposes, as if the Royal Assent had
 ‘ been given thereunto.

July.

An. 22. Car. 1.

1646.

July.

‘ Provided, that nothing herein before contained
 ‘ shall extend to the taking away of the ordinary
 ‘ legal Power of Sheriffs; Justices of Peace, Mayors,
 ‘ Bailiffs, Coroners, Constables, Headboroughs
 ‘ or other Officers of Justice, not being Military
 ‘ Officers, concerning the Administration of Justice;
 ‘ so as neither the said Sheriffs, Justices of the Peace,
 ‘ Mayors, Bailiffs, Coroners, Constables, Headbo-
 ‘ roughs, and other Officers, nor any of them, do
 ‘ levy, conduct, employ, or command any Forces
 ‘ whatsoever, by Colour or Pretence of any Com-
 ‘ mission of Array, or extraordinary Command from
 ‘ his Majesty, his Heirs or Successors, without the
 ‘ Consent of the said Lords and Commons.

‘ And if any Persons shall be gathered and as-
 ‘ sembled together in warlike Manner, or other-
 ‘ wise, to the Number of thirty Persons, and shall
 ‘ not forthwith disband themselves, being required
 ‘ thereto by the said Lords and Commons, or
 ‘ Command from them, or any by them especially
 ‘ authorized for that Purpose, then such Person
 ‘ and Persons not so disbanding themselves, shall
 ‘ be guilty and incur the Pains of High Treason,
 ‘ being first declared guilty of such Offence by the
 ‘ said Lords and Commons; any Commission un-
 ‘ der the Great Seal, or other Warrant, to the con-
 ‘ trary notwithstanding.

‘ And he or they that shall offend herein, to be
 ‘ incapable of any Pardon from his Majesty, his
 ‘ Heirs or Successors; and their Estates shall be
 ‘ disposed as the said Lords and Commons shall
 ‘ think fit, and not otherwise.

‘ Provided, that the City of *London* shall have
 ‘ and enjoy all their Rights, Liberties and Franchi-
 ‘ ses, Customs and Usages, in the raising and em-
 ‘ ploying the Forces of that City for the Defence
 ‘ thereof, in as full and ample Manner, to all In-
 ‘ tents and Purposes, as they have, or might have,
 ‘ used or enjoyed the same at any Time before the
 ‘ making the said Act or Proposition; to the end
 ‘ that City may be fully assured it is not the In-
 ‘ tention of the Parliament to take from them any
 ‘ Pri-

‘ Privileges or Immunities in raising or disposing of their Forces, which they have, or might have, used or enjoyed heretofore. An. 22. Car. 1.
1646.

‘ The like for the Kingdom of *Scotland*, if the Estates of the Parliament there shall think fit.

July.

XIV. ‘ That, by Act of Parliament, all Peers made since the Day that *Edward Lord Littleton*, then Lord-Keeper of the Great Seal, deserted the Parliament, and that the said Great Seal was surreptitiously conveyed away from the Parliament, (being the twenty-first Day of *May*, 1642,) and who shall hereafter be made, shall not sit or vote in the Parliament of *England*, without Consent of both Houses of Parliament: And that all Honour and Title conferred on any, without Consent of both Houses of Parliament, since the twentieth of *May*, 1642, (being the Day that both Houses declared, That the King, seduced by evil Counsel, intended to raise War against the Parliament) be declared null and void.

‘ The like for the Kingdom of *Scotland*; those being excepted whose Patents were passed the Great Seal before the 4th of *June*, 1644.

XV. ‘ That an Act be passed in the Parliaments of both Kingdoms respectively, for Confirmation of the *Treaties* passed betwixt the two Kingdoms, viz. the *Large Treaty*, the late *Treaty* for the coming of the *Scots* Army into *England*, and the settling of the Garrison of *Berwick*, of the 29th of *November*, 1643, and the *Treaty* concerning *Ireland*, of the 6th of *August*, 1642, for the bringing of ten thousand *Scots* into the Province of *Ulster*, in *Ireland*, with all other Ordinances and Proceedings passed betwixt the two Kingdoms, and whereunto they are obliged by the aforesaid *Treaties*.

‘ That *Algernon* Earl of *Northumberland*, *John* Earl of *Rutland*, *Philip* Earl of *Pembroke* and *Montgomery*, *Robert* Earl of *Essex*, *Theophilus* Earl of *Lincoln*, *James* Earl of *Suffolk*, *Robert* Earl of *Warwick*, *Edward* Earl of *Manchester*, *Henry* Earl of *Stamford*, *Francis* Lord *Dacres*,

An. 22. Car 1.

1646.

July.

Philip Lord Wharton, Francis Lord Willoughby,
 Dudley Lord North, John Lord Hunsdon, Wil-
 liam Lord Grey, Edward Lord Howard of E-
 scrick, Thomas Lord Bruce, Ferdinando Lord
 Fairfax, Mr. Nathaniel Fiennes, Sir William Ar-
 myne, Sir Philip Stapylton, Sir Henry Vane, sen.
 Mr. William Pierepoint, Sir Edward Ayscough,
 Sir William Strickland, Sir Arthur Hesilrig, Sir
 John Fenwick, Sir William Brereton, Sir Thomas
 Widdrington, Mr. John Toll, Mr. Gilbert Mil-
 lington, Sir William Constable, Sir John Wray,
 Sir Henry Vane, jun. Mr. Henry Darley, Oliver
 St. John, Esq; his Majesty's Solicitor-General,
 Mr. Denzill Holles, Mr. Alexander Rigby, Mr.
 Cornelius Holland, Mr. Samuel Vassall, Mr. Pe-
 regrine Pelham, John Glyne, Esq; Recorder of
 London, Mr. Henry Marten, Mr. Alderman
 Hoyle, Mr. John Blakiston, Mr. Serjeant Wilde,
 Mr. Richard Barwis, Sir Anthony Irby, Mr.
 Asburst, Mr. Bellingham, and Mr. Tolson, Mem-
 bers of both Houses of the Parliament of England,
 shall be the Commissioners for the Kingdom of
 England, for Conservation of the Peace between
 the two Kingdoms, to act according to the Pow-
 ers in that Behalf express'd in the Articles of
 Large Treaty, and not otherwise.

That his Majesty give his Assent to what
 the two Kingdoms shall agree upon in Prose-
 cution of the Articles of the Large Treaty, which are
 yet finished.

XVI. That an Act be passed in the Par-
 liaments of both Kingdoms respectively, for
 publishing the Joint Declaration of both King-
 doms, bearing Date the 30th Day of Januar-
 y in England, and 1644, in Scotland,
 Qualifications ensuing.

First QUALIFICATION.

That the Persons who shall expect
 to be on the following,
 Maurice, Count Pal
 R Derby,

' Bristol, William Earl of Newcastle, Francis Lord
 ' Cottington, George Lord Digby, Matthew Wren
 ' Bishop of Ely, Sir Robert Heath, Knt. Dr. An. 22. Car. I.
1646.
 ' Bramhall Bishop of Derry, Sir William Widdrington, Colonel George Goring, Henry Jermyn,
 ' Esq; Sir Ralph Hopton, Sir John Byron, Sir Francis Doddington, Sir John Strangersways, Mr. Endymion Porter, Sir George Radcliffe, Sir Marmaduke Langdale, Henry Vaughan, Esq; (now called
 ' Sir Henry Vaughan) Sir Francis Windebanke,
 ' Sir Richard Greenville, Mr. Edward Hyde, (now called Sir Edward Hyde) Sir John Marley, Sir
 ' Nicholas Cole, Sir Thomas Riddell, jun. Sir John Colepeper, Mr. Richard Lloyd, (now called Sir
 ' Richard Lloyd) Mr. David Jenkins, Sir George Strode, George Carteret, Esq; (now called Sir
 ' George Carteret) Sir Charles Dallison, Knt. Richard Lane, Esq; (now called Sir Richard Lane)
 ' Sir Edward Nicholas, John Ashburnham, Esq;
 ' Sir Edward Herbert, Knt. his Majesty's Attorney-General; Earl of Traquair, Lord Harris,
 ' Lord Rae, George Gordon, sometime Marquis of Huntley, James Graham, sometime Earl of
 ' Montrose, Robert Maxwell, late Earl of Nithef-
 ' dale, Robert Dalzell, sometime Earl of Carnwath,
 ' James Gordon, sometime Viscount Aboyne, Lodowick Lindsey, sometime Earl of Crawford, James
 ' Ogilvey, sometime Earl of Airley, James Ogilvey, sometime Lord Ogilvey, Patrick Ruthen,
 ' sometime Earl of Forth, James King, sometime Lord Itham, Alester Macdonald, Irwin Younger
 ' of Drum, Gordon Younger of Gight, Lesley of Auchentoul, Colonel John Cochran, Graham of
 ' Gorthie, Mr. John Maxwell, sometime pretended Bishop of Ross. And all such others as, being
 ' proceessed by the Estates for Treason, shall be condemned before the Act of Oblivion be
 ' passed.

Second QUALIFICATION.

' All Papists and Popish Recusants who have
 ' been, now are, or shall be, actually in Arms,
 ' or voluntarily assisting against the Parliaments, or
 ' E-

40 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 22. Car. 1.

1646.

July.

‘ Estates of either Kingdom; and, by Name, the
 ‘ Marquis of *Winton*, the Earl of *Worcester*, *Edward* Lord *Herbert* of *Ragland*, Son to the Earl
 ‘ of *Worcester*, Lord *Brudenell*, *Caryll Molineux*,
 ‘ Esq; Lord *Arundell* of *Wardour*, Sir *Francis*
 ‘ *Howard*, Sir *John Wintour*, Sir *Charles Smith*,
 ‘ Sir *John Preston*, Sir *Bazil Brooke*, *James* Lord
 ‘ *Audley* Earl of *Castlehaven* in the Kingdom of
 ‘ *Ireland*, *William Sheldon* of *Beely*, Esq; and Sir
 ‘ *Henry Beddingfield*.

Third QUALIFICATION.

‘ All Persons who have had any Hand in the
 ‘ plotting, designing, or assisting the Rebellion of
 ‘ *Ireland*, except such Persons who, having only
 ‘ assisted the said Rebellion, have rendered them-
 ‘ selves, or come in to the Parliament of *England*.

Fourth QUALIFICATION.

‘ That *Humfrey Bennet*, Esq; Sir *Edward Ford*,
 ‘ Sir *John Penruddock*, Sir *George Vaughan*, Sir
 ‘ *John Weld*, Sir *Robert Lee*, Sir *John Pate*, *John*
 ‘ *Ackland*, *Edmond Windham*, Esq; Sir *John Fitz-*
 ‘ *Herbert*, Sir *Edward Lawrence*, Sir *Ralph Dut-*
 ‘ *ton*, *Henry Lingen*, Esq; Sir *William Russel* of
 ‘ *Worcestershire*, *Thomas Lee* of *Adlington*, Esq;
 ‘ Sir *John Girlington*, Sir *Paul Neile*, Sir *William*
 ‘ *Thorold*, Sir *Edward Hussey*, Sir *Thomas Lid-*
 ‘ *dell*, sen. Sir *Philip Musgrave*, Sir *John Digby*
 ‘ of *Nottinghamshire*, Sir *Henry Fletcher*, Sir
 ‘ *Richard Mynshull*, *Lawrence Halstead*, Esq; *John*
 ‘ *Denbam*, Esq; Sir *Edmond Fortescue*, *Peter St.*
 ‘ *Hill*, Esq; Sir *Thomas Tildesley*, Sir *Henry Grif-*
 ‘ *fith*, *Michael Warton*, Esq; Sir *Henry Spiller*, Mr.
 ‘ *George Benyon*, (now called Sir *George Benyon*)
 ‘ Sir *Edward Waldegrave*, Sir *Edward Bishop*, Sir
 ‘ *Robert Owseley*, Sir *John Maney*, Lord *Cholmon-*
 ‘ *dely*, Sir *Thomas Aston*, Sir *Lewis Dives*, Sir *Pe-*
 ‘ *ter Osbourne*, *Samuel Thornton*, Esq; Sir *John*
 ‘ *Lucas*, *John Blaney*, Esq; Sir *Thomas Cbedle*.
 ‘ Sir *Nicholas Kemys*, *Hugh Lloyd*, Esq; Sir *Ni-*
 ‘ *cholas Crisp*, and Sir *Peter Rycaut*,

‘ Ar

‘ And all such of the *Scots* Nation as have con- An. 22. Car. I.
 ‘ curred in the *Votes* at *Oxford*, against the King- 1646.
 ‘ dom of *Scotland* and their Proceedings; or have }
 ‘ sworn or subscribed the *Declaration* against the July.
 ‘ Convention and *Covenant*; and all such as have
 ‘ assisted the Rebellion in the *North*, or the Inva-
 ‘ sion in the *South* of the said Kingdom of *Scotland*,
 ‘ or the late Invasion made there by the *Irish* and
 ‘ their Adherents, be removed from his Majesty’s
 ‘ Councils, and be restrained from coming within
 ‘ the Verge of the Court; and that they may not,
 ‘ without the Advice and Consent of both Houses
 ‘ of the Parliament of *England*, or the Estates in
 ‘ the Parliament of *Scotland* respectively, bear any
 ‘ Office, or have any Employment concerning the
 ‘ State or Common-Wealth: And in case any of
 ‘ them shall offend therein, to be guilty of High
 ‘ Treason, and incapable of any Pardon from his
 ‘ Majesty, and their Estates to be disposed of as
 ‘ both Houses of the Parliament of *England*, or the
 ‘ Estates of the Parliament in *Scotland* respectively,
 ‘ shall think fit: And that one full third Part, upon
 ‘ full Value, of the Estates of the Persons aforesaid,
 ‘ made incapable of Employment as aforesaid, be
 ‘ employed for the Payment of the public Debts
 ‘ and Damages, according to the *Declaration*.

First Branch. ‘ That the late Members, or any
 ‘ who pretended themselves late Members, of
 ‘ either House of Parliament, who have not only
 ‘ deserted the Parliament, but have also sat in the
 ‘ unlawful Assembly at *Oxford*, called or pretended
 ‘ by some to be a Parliament, and voted both
 ‘ Kingdoms Traitors, and have not voluntarily
 ‘ rendered themselves before the last of *October*,
 ‘ 1644, be removed from his Majesty’s Councils,
 ‘ and be restrained from coming within the Verge
 ‘ of the Court; and that they may not, without
 ‘ Advice and Consent of both Kingdoms, bear any
 ‘ Office, or have any Employment concerning
 ‘ the State or Common-Wealth: And in case any
 ‘ of them shall offend therein, to be guilty of High
 ‘ Trea-

42 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.

July.

Treason, and incapable of any Pardon by his Majesty; and their Estates to be disposed as both Houses of Parliament in *England*, or the Estates of the Parliament of *Scotland* respectively, shall think fit.

Second Branch. 'That the late Members, or any who pretended themselves Members, of either House of Parliament, who have sat in the unlawful Assembly at *Oxford*, called or pretended by some to be a Parliament, and have not voluntarily rendered themselves before the last of *October*, 1644, be removed from his Majesty's Councils, and restrained from coming within the Verge of the Court; and that they may not, without the Advice and Consent of both Houses of Parliament, bear any Office, or have any Employment concerning the State or Common-Wealth; and in case any of them shall offend therein, to be guilty of High Treason, and incapable of any Pardon from his Majesty, and their Estates to be disposed as both Houses of the Parliament of *England* shall think fit.

Third Branch. 'That the late Members, or any who pretended themselves Members, of either House of Parliament, who have deserted the Parliament, and adhered to the Enemies thereof, and have not rendered themselves before the last of *October*, 1644, be removed from his Majesty's Councils, and be restrained from coming within the Verge of the Court; and that they may not, without the Advice and Consent of both Houses of Parliament, bear any Office, or have any Employment concerning the State or Common-Wealth: And in case any of them shall offend therein, to be guilty of High Treason, and incapable of any Pardon from his Majesty, and their Estates to be disposed as both Houses of Parliament in *England* shall think fit.

Fifth Qualification.

'That all Judges and Officers towards the Law, Common or Civil, who have deserted the Parliament,

ment, and adher'd to the Enemies thereof, be incapable of any Place of Judicature or Office towards the Law, Common or Civil; and that all Serjeants, Counsellors, and Attornies, Doctors, Advocates, and Proctors of the Law, Common or Civil, who have deserted the Parliament, and adhered to the Enemies thereof, be incapable of any Practice in the Law, Common or Civil, either in public or private; and shall not be capable of any Preferment or Employment in the Common-Wealth, without the Advice and Consent of both Houses of Parliament: And that no Bishop or Clergyman, no Master or Fellow of any College or Hall, in either of the Universities, or elsewhere, or any Master of School or Hospital, or any Ecclesiastical Person, who hath deserted the Parliament, and adhered to the Enemies thereof, shall hold or enjoy, or be capable of any Preferment or Employment in Church or Common-Wealth; but all their said several Preferments, Places, and Promotions, shall be utterly void, as if they were naturally dead; nor shall they otherwise use their Function of the Ministry, without Advice and Consent of both Houses of Parliament; provided, that no Lapse shall incur by such Vacancy untill six Months past, after Notice thereof.

An. 22. Car. I.

1646.

July.

Sixth QUALIFICATION.

That all Persons who have been actually in Arms against the Parliament, or have counselled, or voluntarily assisted the Enemies thereof, are disabled to be Sheriffs, Justices of the Peace, Mayors, or other Head Officers of any City or Corporation, Commissioners of *Oyer and Terminer*, or to sit or serve as Members, or Assistants in either of the Houses of Parliament, or to have any Military Employment in this Kingdom, without the Consent of both Houses of Parliament.

Seventh QUALIFICATION.

The Persons of all others to be free of all personal Censure, notwithstanding any Act or Thing

44 *The Parliamentary History*

AN. 22. CAR. I. ' Thing done in or concerning this War, they ta-
1646. ' king the Covenant.

July.

Eighth QUALIFICATION.

' The Estates of those Persons excepted in the
' first three precedent Qualifications; and the
' Estates of *Edward Lord Littleton*, and of *Wil-*
' *liam Laud*, late Archbishop of *Canterbury*, to pay
' public Debts and Damages.

Ninth QUALIFICATION.

First Branch. ' That two full Parts in three,
' to be divided, of all the Estates of the Members
' of either House of Parliament who have not only
' deserted the Parliament, but have also voted both
' Kingdoms Traitors, and have not rendered
' themselves before the first of *December*, 1645,
' shall be taken and employed for the Payment of
' the public Debts and Damages of the Kingdom.

' *Second Branch.* ' That two full Parts in three,
' to be divided, of the Estates of such late Mem-
' bers of either House of Parliament, as sat in the
' unlawful Assembly at *Oxford*, and shall not have
' rendered themselves before the first of *December*,
' 1645, shall be taken and employed for the Pay-
' ment of the public Debts and Damages of the
' Kingdom.

Third Branch. ' That one full Moiety of the
' Estates of such Persons, late Members of either
' of the Houses of Parliament, who have deserted
' the Parliament, and adhered to the Enemies
' thereof, and shall not have rendered themselves
' before the first of *December*, 1645, shall be ta-
' ken and employed for the Payment of the public
' Debts and Damages of the Kingdom.

Tenth QUALIFICATION.

' That a full third Part of the Value of the E-
' states of all Judges and Officers towards the Law,
' Common or Civil; and of all Serjeants, Coun-
' sellors, and Attornies, Doctors, Advocates, and
' Proctors of the Law, Common or Civil; and of
' all

all Bishops, Clergymen, Masters and Fellows of any College or Hall in either of the Universities, or elsewhere; and of all Masters of Schools or Hospitals, and of Ecclesiastical Persons who have deserted the Parliament, and adhered to the Enemies thereof, and have not rendered themselves before the first of *December*, 1645, shall be taken and employed for the Payment of the public Debts and Damages of the Kingdom.

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.
July.

That a full sixth Part of the full Value of the Estates of the Persons excepted in the sixth Qualification, concerning such as have been actually in Arms against the Parliament, or have counselled or voluntarily assisted the Enemies thereof, and are disabled according to the said Qualification, be taken and employ'd for the Payment of the public Debts and Damages of the Kingdom.

Eleventh QUALIFICATION.

That the Persons and Estates of all common Soldiers, and others of the Kingdom of *England*, who, in Lands or Goods, be not worth 200 *l.* Sterling; and the Persons and Estates of all common Soldiers and others of the Kingdom of *Scotland*, who, in Lands or Goods, be not worth 100 *l.* Sterling, be at Liberty and discharged.

First Branch. This Proposition to stand as to the *English*; and as to the *Scots* likewise, if the Parliament of *Scotland*, or their Commissioners, shall so think fit.

Second Branch. That the first of *May* last is now the Day limited for the Persons to come in, that are comprised within the former Qualification.

That an Act be passed, whereby the Debts of the Kingdom, and the Persons of Delinquents, and the Value of their Estates may be known; and which Act shall appoint in what Manner the Confiscation and Proportions before-mentioned may be levied, and applied to the Discharge of the said Engagements.

The

An. 22. Car. 1.

1646.

July.

‘ The like for the Kingdom of *Scotland*, if the
 ‘ Estates of Parliament, or such as shall have Power
 ‘ from them, shall think fit.

XVII. ‘ That an Act of Parliament be passed,
 ‘ to declare and make void the Cessation of *Ire-*
 ‘ land, and all Treaties and Conclusions of Peace,
 ‘ or any Articles thereupon, with the Rebels, with-
 ‘ out Consent of both Houses of Parliament; and
 ‘ to settle the Prosecution of the War of *Ireland* in
 ‘ both Houses of the Parliament of *England* to be
 ‘ managed by them; and the King to assist, and to
 ‘ do no Act to discountenance or molest them
 ‘ therein.

‘ That Reformation of Religion, according to
 ‘ the *Covenant*, be settled in the Kingdom of *Ire-*
 ‘ land by Act of Parliament, in such Manner as
 ‘ both Houses of the Parliament of *England* have
 ‘ agreed, or shall agree upon, after Consultation
 ‘ had with the Assembly of Divines here.

‘ That the Deputy or Chief Governor, or other
 ‘ Governors of *Ireland*, and the Presidents of the
 ‘ several Provinces of that Kingdom, be nominated
 ‘ by both Houses of the Parliament of *England*, or,
 ‘ in the Intervals of Parliament, by such Commit-
 ‘ tees of both Houses of Parliament, as both Houses
 ‘ of the Parliament of *England* shall nominate and
 ‘ appoint for that Purpose: And that the Chancel-
 ‘ lor, or Lord-Keeper, Lord-Treasurer, Commis-
 ‘ sioners of the Great Seal or Treasury, Lord-
 ‘ Warden of the Cinque Ports, Chancellor of the
 ‘ Exchequer and Duchy, Secretaries of State, Master
 ‘ of the Rolls, Judges of both Benches, and Barons
 ‘ of the Exchequer of the Kingdoms of *England*
 ‘ and *Ireland*, and the Vice-Treasurer and Trea-
 ‘ surers at Wars of the Kingdom of *Ireland*, be
 ‘ nominated by both Houses of the Parliament of
 ‘ *England*, to continue *Quamdiu se bene gesserint*;
 ‘ and, in the Intervals of Parliament, by the afore-
 ‘ mentioned Committees, to be approved or dis-
 ‘ allowed by both Houses at their next sitting.

‘ The like for the Kingdom of *Scotland*, con-
 ‘ cerning the Nomination of the Lords of the
 ‘ Pri-

‘ Privy-Council, Lords of Session and Exchequer, An. 22. Car. I.
 ‘ Officers of State, and Justice-General, in such 1646.
 ‘ Manner as the Estates of the Parliament there
 ‘ shall think fit. }
 July.

XVIII. ‘ That the *Militia* of the City of *London*, and Liberties thereof, may be in the Ordering and Government of the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and Commons in Common Council assembled, or such as they shall, from Time to Time, appoint, (whereof the Lord Mayor and Sheriffs, for the Time being, to be three) to be employed and directed, from Time to Time, in such Manner as shall be agreed on, and appointed by both Houses of Parliament.

‘ That no Citizen of the City of *London*, nor any of the Forces of the said City, shall be drawn forth or compelled to go out of the said City, or Liberties thereof, for Military Service, without their own free Consent.

‘ That an Act be passed for the granting and confirming of the Charters, Customs, Liberties, and Franchises of the City of *London*, notwithstanding any Nonuser, Misuser, or Abuser.

‘ That the *Tower* of *London* may be in the Government of the City of *London*; and the Chief Officer and Governor thereof, from Time to Time, be nominated and removeable by the Common Council: And, for the Prevention of Inconveniences which may happen by the long Intermision of Common Councils, it is desired that there may be an Act, That all Bye-Laws and Ordinances already made, or hereafter to be made, by the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and Commons, in Common Council assembled, touching the calling, continuing, directing, and regulating the same Common Councils, shall be as effectual in Law, to all Intents and Purposes, as if the same were particularly enacted by the Authority of Parliament: And that the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and Commons, in Common Council may add to, or repeal the said Ordinances from Time to Time, as they shall see Cause.

‘ That

An. 22. Car. I.

1646.

July.

‘ That such other Propositions as shall be made
 ‘ for the City, for their further Safety, Welfare,
 ‘ and Government, and shall be approved of by
 ‘ both Houses of Parliament, may be granted and
 ‘ confirmed by Act of Parliament.

XIX. ‘ That all Grants, Commissions, Presenta-
 ‘ tions, Writs, Process, Proceedings, and other
 ‘ Things passed under the Great Seal of *England*,
 ‘ in the Custody of the Lords and others, Com-
 ‘ missioners appointed by both Houses of Parlia-
 ‘ ment for the Custody thereof, be, and, by an Act
 ‘ with the Royal Assent, shall be, declared and en-
 ‘ acted to be of like full Force and Effect, to all
 ‘ Intents and Purposes, as the same or like Grants,
 ‘ Commissions, Presentations, Writs, Process, Pro-
 ‘ ceedings, and other Things under any Great
 ‘ Seal of *England*, in any Time heretofore were,
 ‘ or have been; and that, for the Time to come,
 ‘ the said Great Seal, now remaining in Custody
 ‘ of the said Commissioners, continue, and be used
 ‘ for the Great Seal of *England*; and that all
 ‘ Grants, Commissions, Presentations, Writs, Pro-
 ‘ cess, Proceedings, and other Things whatsoever,
 ‘ passed under, or by Authority of any other Great
 ‘ Seal, since the 22d Day of *May*, 1642, or here-
 ‘ after to be passed, be invalid and of no Effect, to
 ‘ all Intents and Purposes; except such Writs,
 ‘ Process, and Commissions, as being passed under
 ‘ any other Great Seal than the said Great Seal
 ‘ in the Custody of the Commissioners aforesaid,
 ‘ on or after the said 22d Day of *May*, and before
 ‘ the 28th Day of *November*, 1643, were after-
 ‘ ward proceeded upon, returned into, or put in
 ‘ use in any of the King’s Courts at *Westminster*:
 ‘ And except the Grant to Mr. Justice *Bacon*, to
 ‘ be one of the Justices of the *King’s Bench*: And
 ‘ except all Acts and Proceedings by virtue of any
 ‘ such Commissions of Goal Delivery, Assize, and
 ‘ *Nisi prius*, or *Oyer and Terminer*, passed under
 ‘ any other Great Seal than the Seal aforesaid, in
 ‘ Custody of the said Commissioners before the first
 ‘ of *October*, 1642.

‘ And

‘ And that all Grants of Offices, Lands, Tene-
 ‘ ments, or Hereditaments, made or passed under
 ‘ the Great Seal of *Ireland* unto any Person or
 ‘ Persons, Bodies Politick or Corporate, since the
 ‘ Cessation made in *Ireland*, the 15th Day of *Septem-*
 ‘ *ber*, 1643, shall be null and void; and that
 ‘ all Honours and Titles conferred upon any Per-
 ‘ son or Persons in the said Kingdom of *Ireland*,
 ‘ since the said Cessation, shall be null and void.

An. 22. Car. I.
 1646.
 July.

Whilst the Commissioners were on their Journey, the Houses received the King's Answer to their Letter desiring an Order from his Majesty to the Marquis of *Ormond*, for surrendering up the Castle of *Dublin*, and all other Garrisons in *Ireland*, to their Use.

CHARLES R. Newcastle, July 11, 1646.

HIS Majesty having considered the Letter of the 6th Instant, sent to him from the Lords and Commons in Parliament assembled, thinks fit to return this Answer, That as none can be more deeply affected than his Majesty with the past and present Calamities of his Kingdom of *Ireland*, nor is so nearly concerned in the Preservation of his Majesty's Protestant Subjects, so he will be most ready to apply all future Remedies for their Deliverance: And as to the Particulars of delivering, forthwith, of the City and Castle of *Dublin*, the Town of *Drogheda*, and all other Garrisons in that Kingdom, which are held by his Majesty's Authority, into the Hands of such as the Parliament shall appoint; his Majesty being most willing that all those Places may be so disposed as they may be best secured from the Rebels, and serve most for the Safety of his good Subjects, doth again earnestly press that the Propositions, so long expected for the Peace of that and his other Kingdoms, may be hastened to him; expecting that they will contain the readiest Means, not only of preserving those Places which are already in his Power, but likewise of reducing the rest of that Kingdom, possessed by the Rebels, to his Obedience. And as his Majesty knows

The King's Answer to the Parliament's Desire of surrendering up all his Garrisons in *Ireland*.

50 *The Parliamentary HISTORY*

An. 22. Car. I. *not a more speedy and effectual Way for attaining those Ends, than by removing all Differences betwixt his Majesty and the two Houses of Parliament; so nothing will be more earnestly endeavoured by his Majesty, than that a solid and lasting Peace be forthwith established.*

1646.
July.

We now meet with a short Adjournment of the two Houses for a few Days; neither is there any Thing in the *Journals* worth mentioning for some Time longer, except an Audience granted by both Houses to *Monf. Bellicure*, a new *French* Ambassador; who was also granted a Pass to go to the King at *Newcastle*, and to the States of *Scotland* at *Edinburgh*.

The Commons also sent up another Message about the Vote for declaring this Kingdom had no further Use for the *Scots* Army; which they held to be a Matter, they said, of so much Concernment to this Kingdom, as nothing could be greater, therefore they desired the Lords to give Expedition to it. But we find no Notice taken of this Message for some Time longer.

On the Surrender of *Oxford* the Broad Seal, and several other Seals for different Courts and Offices, fell into the Parliament's Hands. And this Day, *July 23*, the Lords ordered that the Broad Seal should be defaced and broken; as also the Seal for the Court of Wards, the Exchequer Seal, and the Seal of the King's Bench, with those of the Admiralty and Prerogative Court; but the Privy Seal, Signet Seal, and other smaller Seals, were ordered to be lock'd up.

The *French* Ambassador, in a Speech he made at his Audience, had signified to the Parliament, That his Master, the *French* King, had offered to be a Mediator of Peace between the King of *England* and his Parliament. And this Day the following Answer being drawn up, was read, agreed to, and ordered to be sent to the Ambassador.

My

My Lord,

July 22, 1646. An. 22. Car. I.
1646.

WE do thankfully acknowledge the Expressions we have received from the French King, of his Majesty's good Affections to this Kingdom; and shall heartily endeavour, on our Parts, the Continuance of it: But as to his Majesty's Desires of mediating a Peace, and interposing betwixt our King and us, and to what was said by your Excellency on that Particular, and of your being sent to invite us to take or propound some Conditions that might effect the same, we do declare that we ourselves have been careful to improve all Occasions to compose these unhappy Troubles, yet we have not, neither can we admit of any Mediation or Interposing betwixt the King and us, by any foreign Prince or State. And we desire that his Majesty, the French King, will rest satisfied with this our Resolution and Answer.

The Parliament
refuse the French
King's Offer of
Mediation.

We shall conclude the Affairs of this Month with the Copy of a Letter from *Newcastle*, notifying to the Parliament the safe Arrival of their Commissioners at that Place.

To the Right Hon. the Earl of MANCHESTER,
Speaker of the House of Peers pro Tempore.

My Lord, Newcastle, July 23, 1646.

OUR Desires are that these may inform you that, between Nine and Ten of the Clock this *Thursday* Morning, we came to *Newcastle*; and were, about an Hour and an half after our Arrival, visited by the General the Earl of *Leven*, the Lord Chancellor of *Scotland*, and many other Scots Lords and Gentlemen; and, after some private Conference between us and the Chancellor, it was agreed that he should inform his Majesty of our being here; and humbly desire him, from us, to appoint a Time when he would be pleased to receive the Propositions, which was done accordingly. And about Six of the Clock

Account of their
Commissioners
Arrival at New-
castle.

An. 22. Car. 1. 1646. *August.* this Evening, the Marquis of *Argyle* brought us Word that his Majesty would, To-morrow after Dinner, receive them.
‘ My Lord, we shall omit no Opportunity to give a speedy Dispatch, and remain

Your Lordship's humble Servants,

PEMBROKE and
MONTGOMERY.
SUFFOLK.

August 4. Another Letter, which came from the same Quarter, was this Day read in the House of Lords, viz.

To the Right Hon. the SPEAKER of the House of PEERS pro-Tempore.

My Lord, Newcastle, July 28, 1646.

And presenting to the King their Propositions for Peace. **W**E did, upon our coming hither, acquaint you with the Time which the King appointed to receive the Propositions, being *Friday* last, after Dinner; at which Time we humbly presented them to his Majesty; and, according to our Instructions, desired his positive Answer and Consent thereto. He said, He thought we could not then expect an Answer, but he would consider of it. Not hearing from him since, we did again wait on his Majesty this Afternoon, to put him in Mind; who told us, That he knew our limited Time, against which he would prepare us an Answer.

‘ However we shall endeavour strictly to observe our Instructions, and give you Advertisement as there shall be Occasion; but this is all we shall trouble you with at present, humbly taking our Leaves, and rest

Your Lordship's humble Servants,

PEMBROKE and
MONTGOMERY.
SUFFOLK.

Aug.

Aug. 6. The foregoing was followed by another An. 22. Car. I.
Letter from the same Hands, the Contents of which
were as follows : 1646.

August.

*For the Right Hon. the Earl of MANCHESTER,
Speaker of the House of Peers pro Tempore.*

My Lord, Newcastle, Aug. 2, 1646.

WE are sorry we cannot acquaint you with
so good Success of our Employment as
we have faithfully endeavoured, in pursuance of
our Instructions. This Morning we took our
Leave of the King; and though our Importuni-
ties have been frequent and urgent, we cannot
obtain his Majesty's Consent, or Answer, any
ways satisfactory.

His Majesty hath given us a Paper, (other than
which we could not procure, notwithstanding
our much Earnestness) containing Offers to come
to London, which we thought not fit to send, be-
cause we know not whether the House will take
Notice of it, being no direct Answer to the Pro-
positions.

We are hastening away, with all Speed, to give
you an Account of our whole Proceedings.

Thus much we thought fit to represent, and
to take Leave, being

Your Lordship's humble Servants,

PEMBROKE and
MONTGOMERY.
SUFFOLK.

Mention has been made of the Parliament's be-
ing in Possession of the Great Seal, and several
other private and public Seals belonging to the
King, and the Orders made for the breaking of
them: Accordingly,

Aug. 11, The same was performed in a very
solemn Manner, before the two Houses, the Com-

54 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 22. Car. 1.
1646.

August.

The King's
Great Seal, &c.
broken and de-
faced, in full
Parliament.

mons being come up to the House of Lords for that Purpose; where the Great Seal, and the others beforementioned, were broken and defaced, and the Silver of them ordered to be divided between the Speakers of both Houses; but the Signet Seal and the Privy Seal, with those for foreign Letters, were ordered to be put into the Custody of the Commissioners of the Broad Seal belonging to the Parliament.

Aug. 12. The Commissioners of both Houses being now returned from *Newcastle*, Sir *Walter Erle* made the following Report of their Proceedings to the Commons, *viz.*

The Report of
their Commis-
sioners Proceed-
ings with the
King.

‘ That the Time of their Arrival at *Newcastle* being *Thursday* the twenty-third of the last Month, about Nine of the Clock in the Forenoon, immediately upon their coming thither (because they would lose no Time) they desired the Lord-Chancellor of *Scotland* and the Marquis of *Argyle*, who were joint Commissioners with them, to move the King, that he would be pleased to appoint a Time when they might attend him with the Propositions which they had brought from the Parliament: And they going to the King brought them back Word, that his Pleasure was, they should attend him the next Day, at Two in the Afternoon; which accordingly they did.

‘ On *Friday* the Earl of *Pembroke*, after a short Declaration of what they had in Command, desired the Propositions might be read; which the King assenting unto, was accordingly done: That a little while after they were begun to be read, he demanded of them, Whether they had any Power to treat or debate upon them, or that he might ask them any Questions for the explaining of them: That they answered that they had no such Power: That the King then said, *Your Business is but to bring them; and a good honest Trumpeter might have done as much, but for the Honour of it.* The Propositions being read through and delivered unto him, they again, as at the first, humbly demanded
his

his positive Answer and Consent unto them; the Commissioners for *Scotland* seconding the same, on the Behalf of that Kingdom. The King answer'd, He was sure they could not expect a present Answer from him in a Business of that Consequence.

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.
August.

' This being done upon the *Friday*, (and they having heard nothing from him *Saturday* or *Sunday*) the *Monday* following they made their Address unto him the same Way as before; and being appointed to attend him on *Tuesday*, came unto him accordingly, and put him in mind of their former Desires of a positive Answer and Consent to the Propositions; alledging they had but little Time to stay there. The King told them, He knew their Time limited; and against that Time would prepare his Answer: But no Answer being given the next Day or the Day following, *Thursday* in the Afternoon they desired those two Lords to move the King again for their Dispatch: Which on *Friday* Morning they did; and told them the King would have put it off till *Saturday* Night, but they had prevailed with him to grant *Saturday* Morning; yet if they thought fit (for the more surety) to go, they would go with them that Evening: Which being resolved, they went unto him, and humbly craved his Answer and Consent, as before: Then the King told them, He would give them his Answer the next Morning, betwixt Ten and Eleven of the Clock.

Accordingly, on *Saturday* Morning, they attended; and humbly craved his positive Answer and Consent to the Propositions, as they had formerly done; the Earl of *Pembroke* humbly beseeching him to consider with himself the dangerous Consequence that would follow to himself, his Kingdoms and Posterity, if he should not now do it. Then the King told them, He had drawn up his Answer in Writing; which, after he had caused it to be read, he offered to deliver unto them: But they, conceiving it not to be satisfactory, after some private Consultation amongst them-

An. 22, Car. 1.
1645.

August.

themselves, came unto him, and desired to be excused; pressing him to a positive Answer and Consent, and telling him, they must take the Boldness to continue so doing till the last Period of their Time; and therefore prayed him to give them Admittance again before their Departure. He asked, When? They answered, That Afternoon, if he pleased. He said that could not be, for he had other Business to do: So the next Morning was appointed, and they accordingly came unto him on the Lord's Day, before Prayers, and pressed him, as they had done before, with Importunity; but he told them he could not give them any other Answer than what he had set down in Writing, and tendered unto them before: Which he caused again to be read, urging them with much Importunity to receive it. They thereupon craving Leave to withdraw, and considering with themselves that they had used all the Means they could for the obtaining a positive Answer and Consent; and that no other Answer could be gotten, but that which he had now the second Time offered to them in Writing, they returned back and spake these Words, *viz. They receive this Paper, now offered by your Majesty, with this humble Protestation, That it is without their Approbation or Consent, as to the taking of it for an Answer; and that it shall be no Engagement to them, the Commissioners, in any Kind whatsoever.*

After this the Commons ordered the Thanks of their House to be given to the Lords Commissioners and to the Commissioners for Scotland, as well as to those of their own Body that attended the King with the Propositions. The Earl of Pembroke made the same Report to the Lords, which is entered in their *Journals*.

Next follows the King's Answer to the Propositions, as put into Writing by his Majesty, and delivered to the Commissioners.

CHARLES

CHARLES R.

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.

August.

THE Propositions tendered to his Majesty by the Commissioners from the Lords and Commons assembled in the Parliament of England at Westminster, and the Commissioners of the Parliament of Scotland, (to which the Houses of Parliament have taken twice so many Months for Deliberation as they have assigned Days for his Majesty's Answer) do import so great Alterations in Government, both in the Church and Kingdom, as it is very difficult to return a particular and positive Answer, before a full Debate, wherein these Propositions and the necessary Explanations, true Sense and Reasons thereof, be rightly weigh'd and understood; and that his Majesty, upon a full View of the whole Propositions, may know what is left, as well as what is taken away and changed: In all which his Majesty finds, upon Discourse with the said Commissioners, that they are so bound up from any Capacity either to give Reasons for the Demands they bring, or to give Ear to such Desires as his Majesty is to propound, as it is impossible for him to give such a present Judgment of, and Answer to, these Propositions, whereby he can answer to God, that a safe and well-grounded Peace will ensue; which is evident to all the World can never be, unless the just Power of the Crown, as well as the Freedom and Property of the Subject, with the just Liberty and Privileges of Parliament, be likewise settled.

To this End his Majesty desires and proposeth to come to London, or any of his Houses thereabouts, upon the Public Faith and Security of the two Houses of his Parliament, and the Scots Commissioners, that he shall be there with Freedom, Honour, and Safety; where, by his personal Presence, he may not only raise a mutual Confidence betwixt him and his People, but also have those Doubts cleared, and those Difficulties explained unto him, which he now conceives to be destructive to his just Regal Power, if he should give a full Consent to these Propositions as they now stand: As likewise that he might make known to them such his reasonable Demands, as he is most assured will be
very

58 The Parliamentary HISTORY

AN. 22. CAR. 1.
1646.

August.

very much conducive to that happy Peace which all good Men desire and pray for; by settling of Religion, the just Privileges of Parliament, with the Freedom and Property of the Subject.

And his Majesty assures them, that as he can never condescend unto what is absolutely destructive to that just Power which, by the Laws of God and the Land, he is born unto; so he will chearfully grant and give his Assent unto all such Bills at the Desire of his two Houses, or reasonable Demands for Scotland, which shall be really for the Good and Peace of his People, not having a Regard to his own Particular, much less of any Body's else, in respect to the Happiness of these Kingdoms: Wherefore his Majesty conjures them, as Christians, as Subjects, and as Men who desire to leave a good Name behind them, that they will so receive and make use of this Answer, that all Issues of Blood may be stopped, and these unhappy Distractions peaceably settled.

At Newcastle the first Day of August, 1646.

P. S. Upon Assurance of a happy Agreement, his Majesty will immediately send for the Prince, his Son, absolutely answering for his perfect Obedience, to return to this Kingdom.

To the Speaker of the House of Peers, to be communicated.

This Answer, the *Journal* observes, was read by the Reporter, but not admitted to be read by the Clerk.

The same Day the Speaker of the House of Lords presented a Letter which he had received from the Scots Commissioners, which was read, and a Paper inclosed therein.

For the Right Hon. the SPEAKER of the House of PEERS pro Tempore.

A Letter presented to the Lords, by the Scots Commissioners on that Occasion.

My Lord,

THE Commissioners of the Kingdom of Scotland, who did attend his Majesty with the Propositions of Peace, being now returned,

“ according to our Instructions we have sent up this An. 22. Car. I.
 “ inclosed, which we desire your Lordship to com- 1646.
 “ municate to the Honourable Houses when their
 “ Commissioners sent to his Majesty shall make
 “ Report of their Proceedings, and we remain
 August.

*Worcester-House,
 Aug. 10, 1646.*

Your Lordship's humble Servants,

LOUDON, ARGYLE,
 LAUDERDALE, W. HOUSTON,
 H. KENNEDY, R. BARCLAY.

“ THE same Principles of brotherly Affection, A Remonstrance
 “ which did induce both Kingdoms to a Con- in Vindication of
 “ junction of their Councils and Forces in this their Nation, and
 “ Cause, move us at this Time to apply ourselves offering to with-
 “ to the most real and effectual Ways which tend draw their Ar-
 “ to a speedy Conclusion and amicable Parting, and my;
 “ to the preventing of Misunderstandings between
 “ the Kingdoms in any of these Things, which,
 “ peradventure, our common Enemies look upon
 “ with much Joy, as Occasions of Differences;
 “ for this End we have not taken Notice of the
 “ many base Calumnies and execrable Aspersions
 “ cast upon the Kingdom of *Scotland* in printed
 “ Pamphlets, and otherwise; expecting, from the
 “ Justice and Wisdom of the Honourable Houses,
 “ that they will of themselves take such Course for
 “ the Vindication of our Nation and Army, as the
 “ Estates of *Scotland* have shewed themselves ready
 “ to do for them in the like Case.

“ Upon the Invitation of both Houses, the King-
 “ dom of *Scotland* did chearfully undertake, and
 “ hath faithfully managed, their Assistance to this
 “ Kingdom, in pursuance of the Ends express'd in
 “ the Covenant. And the Forces of the common
 “ Enemy being, by the Blessing of God upon the
 “ joint Endeavours of both Kingdoms, now broken
 “ and subdued, a Foundation being also laid and
 “ some good Progress made in the Reformation of
 “ Religion, which we trust the Honourable Houses
 “ will

AN. 22. Car. 1.

1646.

August.

‘ will, according to the Covenant, sincerely, really,
 ‘ and constantly prosecute untill it be perfected;
 ‘ that we may manifest, to the Consciences of our
 ‘ Brethren and to all the World, how far it is, and
 ‘ ever was, from the Thoughts or Intentions of
 ‘ the Kingdom of *Scotland* to make use of their
 ‘ Army in this Kingdom to any other Ends besides
 ‘ those expressed in the Covenant; and how much
 ‘ they desire the preserving and perpetuating of
 ‘ Peace and Amity between the Kingdoms, and the
 ‘ easing of the Burthens and Pressures of this Nation;
 ‘ we do declare in their Name, That they are wil-
 ‘ ling, forthwith, to surrender the Garrisons possess’d
 ‘ by them in this Kingdom, which they did keep
 ‘ for no other End but the Safety and Security of
 ‘ their Forces; and, without Delay, to recall their
 ‘ Army, reasonable Satisfaction being given for
 ‘ their Pains, Hazards, Charges, and Sufferings;
 ‘ whereof a competent Proportion to be presently
 ‘ paid to the Army before their Disbanding, and
 ‘ Security to be given for the Remainder at such
 ‘ Times hereafter as shall be mutually agreed on.

‘ If any Forces shall be kept on foot in either
 ‘ Kingdom, we desire that they may be put under
 ‘ the Command of such Persons as are known to
 ‘ be zealous for Reformation and Uniformity in
 ‘ Religion, and most tender of the Peace of the
 ‘ Kingdoms, and against whom neither of the
 ‘ Kingdoms may have any just Cause of Jealousy.

‘ And whereas the Kingdom of *Scotland* hath
 ‘ been invaded, and is still infested by Forces from
 ‘ *Ireland*, it is expected that the Honourable
 ‘ Houses, according to the Large Treaty, will give
 ‘ such Assistance and Supply to the Kingdom of
 ‘ *Scotland*, as may speedily reduce those Rebels to
 ‘ Obedience.

‘ And, to the end there may in all Things be
 ‘ a good Understanding between the Kingdoms,
 ‘ we further propose, That whereas Propositions
 ‘ for a safe and well-grounded Peace have been
 ‘ lately sent to the King in the Name of both
 ‘ King-

‘ Kingdoms ; and, for obtaining his Majesty’s
 ‘ Consent thereunto, the utmost Endeavours of the
 ‘ Kingdom of *Scotland* have not been wanting, as
 ‘ may appear by the many Addresses, Petitions,
 ‘ and Solicitations to that End from the Army, the
 ‘ Lords of his Majesty’s Privy Council, the Com-
 ‘ mittee of Estates, and the General Assembly of
 ‘ the Church ; the Success whereof hath not an-
 ‘ swered our Wishes and Hopes, his Majesty, to
 ‘ our unspeakable Grief, not yet having agreed to
 ‘ the Propositions ; we desire that the Honourable
 ‘ Houses may be pleased to take such Course as,
 ‘ by joint Advice of both Kingdoms engaged in the
 ‘ same Cause, labouring under the same Dangers,
 ‘ and aiming at the same Ends, we may consult
 ‘ and resolve what is next to be done for the Peace
 ‘ and Safety of these Kingdoms, both in relation
 ‘ to his Majesty, and each Kingdom to the other ;
 ‘ being confident that the Result of our joint Con-
 ‘ sultations will be such as shall provide for the
 ‘ present and future Security of the Kingdoms,
 ‘ and strengthen their Union between themselves.’

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.

August.

*By Command of the Commissioners for the Parlia-
 ment of Scotland.*

JOHN CHIESLEY.

After reading the foregoing Letter the Lords re-
 turned Thanks to the Earls of *Pembroke* and
Suffolk for their Pains and Care in this Service ;
 and it was ordered that the King’s Letter, and
 this Letter from the *Scots* Commissioners, be com-
 municated to the House of Commons at a Con-
 ference, and that a Committee be appointed to
 consider what is proper to be offered upon the Oc-
 casion to induce their Concurrence ; which being
 done accordingly, the Lord *Wharton* read the fol-
 lowing Report :

‘ The Lords being inform’d, by the Commis-
 sioners, of the fair and cordial Carriage of our
 Brethren of *Scotland*, during the Time of their
 being at *Newcastle*, and their earnest Endeavours
 for promoting the Propositions ; and having recei-
 ved

Resolutions of
the Lords there-
upon.

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.

August.

Who thereupon
vote 100,000 l.
to the Scots Ar-
my, on Account,

1. 'That the Sum of 100,000 l. be forthwith provided for the Scots Army, and paid unto them, upon the Marching of their Armies and Forces out of this Kingdom.

2. 'That the Members of this House that are of the Committee of both Kingdoms, or any four of them, do communicate this Vote to the Scots Commissioners, and receive their Answer thereunto: And that they do acquaint them, That, upon the adjusting of the Accounts of their Armies and Forces, whatsoever shall appear to be due to them shall be paid them, according to the Treaty.'

Aug. 18. The Commons authorized such of their Members that were of the Committee of both Kingdoms, to confer with the Scots Commissioners, and to know, what Sum would satisfy them for all Demands from the Kingdom of England, expressed in the before-mentioned Paper; what Sum they expected to be paid, in present, before their disbanding, and what for the future, and at what Times. And the next Day Mr. Crew reported, by Word of Mouth, That, in Discourse, the Scots Commissioners said, 'That they expected 600,000 l. of which 300,000 l. to be paid presently, and the remaining 300,000 l. at such Times as shall be agreed upon; but that considering the Necessities of this Kingdom, and the State of Ireland, they are content to take 200,000 l. presently, and 300,000 l. within a Year.'

But the latter de-
mand 500,000 l.

The Pensions
formerly allowed
to Members, dis-
continued.

Aug. 20. The Commons resolved, That the several Allowances of 4 l. per Week, granted to their own Members^k, and all Pensions appointed to those of either House, be from henceforth discharged. This Vote is thus commented upon by a Journalist of the Times^l: 'These Pensions were allowed to many Members whose Lands were wholly

^k The Names of these Members may be found in our 13th Volume, p. 494.

^l The *Deer*, No 148, p. 12.

wholly sequestered by the King, and some others; but the King's Forces being, by God's Mercy, now broken, and the Kingdom under the Command of the Parliament, the House voted, That they should be taken off; that Allowance being intended but for the Supply of their Necessity, while they were deprived of their own Estates. Such is the Care of that House, as clearly appeareth, to ease the Kingdom of Payments, and to ratify the Debts due to those that want: Let the People express their true Thankfulness by their loving Submission and Obedience to their Orders and Commands, for it is not the least Evil to the Kingdom's Prejudice, that Men murmur against and are jealous of their Preservers, which is the Work and Design of the Enemy to foment.'— But to return to the Affair of the *Scots* Army.

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.
August.

Aug. 21. The Commons, having taken Mr. Crew's Report; before-mentioned, into Consideration, resolved,

1. 'That 200,000*l.* be provided for the *Scots* Army; whereof the first 100,000*l.* to be paid unto them, upon the marching of their Armies and Forces out of this Kingdom, at such Time and Place as hereafter shall be expressed.

2. 'That the Time shall be the 18th Day of September next.

3. 'That it be referred to such Members as are of the Committee of both Kingdoms, to confer with the Commissioners of *Scotland* concerning the Place for the Payment of the first 100,000*l.*

4. 'That the second 100,000*l.* shall be paid at two equal Payments; the first 50,000*l.* at the End of three Months, and the second 50,000*l.* at the End of nine Months; both accounting from the 18th of September next.' And

The Committee of the *North*, with the Committee for the Army, were ordered to prepare a general Estimate of the Accounts of the *Scots* Army; to consider of the Estimate sent in by the *Scots* Commissioners; and what shall be thought fit to be

An. 22. Car. I. brought in, by way of Estimate, to balance that, or
1646. defalk from it, or furcharge upon it. Accordingly,

August.

Estimates of the
Debts due to
them, as stated
by the English
and Scots respec-
tively.

Aug. 27. Mr. Stockdale reported a General Estimate of the Accounts of the *Scots* Army since their Coming into *England*, as sent in by their Commissioners; and another Estimate thereof, as stated by a Committee of the House of Commons, with several Objections to that delivered in by the *Scots*. All these are entered in the *Journals*; but no Notice is therein taken of the *Scots* Objections to the *English* Estimate, nor of their Replies to the Objections of the *English*. These, however, we have supplied from a Pamphlet of the Times^m; and have digested the several Objections, both *English* and *Scots*, by way of Answer and Reply, as the best Means of laying before the Public a just View of this Dispute between the two Nations.

The Scots General Estimate of the ACCOUNTS of their Army, since their Coming into England.

The Kingdom of England Debtor.

<p>FOR the Charge of levying, arming, and bringing the Forces together, furnished, being 18,000 Foot, 2000 Horse, 1000 Dragooners effective, and upwards, and for fitting the Train of Artillery in readiness to march into <i>England</i>, according to the fourth Article of the Treaty, whereof an Account was given to the Commissioners of <i>England</i>, amounts to</p>	}	<p>l. s. d.</p> <p>87415 6 8</p>
---	---	--

English Objection. By the fourth Article of the Treaty this is to be done at the same Rates as if the Kingdom of *Scotland* were to raise the Army for their own Affairs: And therefore, untill a particular Account be delivered in to the Parliament of *England*, by which it may appear what Rates are usual in the Kingdom of *Scotland* in such Cases, and that the above Sum doth not

Carried over 87415 6 8
Brought

Brought over

l.	s.	d.
874	15	6 8

exceed those Rates, the same cannot be charged upon the Kingdom of *England*.

Scots Reply. The above Charge is at the same Rate as if the Kingdom of *Scotland* had raised the Army for their own Affairs. The Charges were delivered to the *English* Commissioners, who did acquaint the House of Commons with it. It cannot be expected that the Kingdom of *Scotland* should entertain an Army for *England* at lower Rates than if it had been raised for their own Affairs. Moreover, it being in the Winter Season when the Army was levied, it was the more chargeable; so that every Soldier had, over and above the public Allowance, 10 s. a Man, which is not at all charged in the above Account.

For 31,000 l. monthly allowed to the Army and Garrison of *Berwick*, towards the Charge thereof for 32 Months, from the 18th of *January* 1643, to the 18th of *September* 1646 next ensuing, there is due, according to the fifth Article of the Treaty for Assistance, and the first Article of the Treaty for settling a Garrison in *Berwick*,

992000 0 0

By the said fifth Article it is provided, That the Kingdom of *England* shall make due Recompence to the Kingdom of *Scotland*, by way of brotherly Assistance, for what they shall have just Cause to demand when the Peace of the two Kingdoms is settled, over and above the 31,000 l. monthly; whereupon is demanded, as Surplusage of the monthly Charge of the Army, over and above the 31,000 l. abovesaid, for the first twelve Months, at the Rate of 25,000 l. per Month

300000 0 0

Carried over

13794	15	6 8
-------	----	-----

E 2

Brought

	<i>l.</i>	<i>s.</i>	<i>d.</i>
<i>Brought over</i>	1379415	6	8
For Surplusage of the Charge of the Army, from <i>January</i> 1644, to the 18th of <i>September</i> next ensuing, being 20 Months, according to the Muster Rolls —	330000	0	0

English Objection. As to the two last mentioned Articles, it is provided by the fifth Article of the Treaty, That if the *Scots* shall have just Cause to demand further Satisfaction for their Pains, Hazards, and Charges, (the 31,000 *l. per Menssem* being not a full monthly Pay for that Army) that then they shall have due Recompence for the same from the Parliament of *England*, to whom the Justice of the Demand is to be made appear; and then their Pains, Hazards, and Charges are to be recompensed in a general Way, from the Good-will and Kindness of their Brethren of *England*: But the Surplusage of the said monthly Pay is not to be charged upon the Kingdom of *England* as a Debt to that Army, or to our Brethren of *Scotland*.

Scots Reply. The Kingdom of *Scotland* did accept of 31,000 *l.* to be paid by the Month, and would demand no more for the present, in regard of the great Burdens of the Kingdom of *England*, and superseded the rest till the Peace of the two Kingdoms was settled; it being provided by a general Clause in the fifth Article of the Treaty, That the Kingdom of *England* shall make due Recompence to the Kingdom of *Scotland*, by way of brotherly Assistance for what they shall have just Cause to demand. And the Justice of their Demand will appear very reasonable, when compared to the meanest Rates of any Army in *England*, or the *Scots* Army in *Ireland*; according to which the Committee of both Houses did

Carried over 1709415 6 8
Brought

l. s. d.
Brought over 1709415 6 8

offer to pay this Army, in their Paper delivered to the Convention of the Estates of Scotland, August 19, 1643.

For the levying of the Earl of Callender's Army, being near the Half of the Strength of the first Army. ————	40000	0	0
--	-------	---	---

For their monthly Maintenance for six Months, at the Rate of 20,000 l. per Month, ————	120000	0	0
--	--------	---	---

English Objection. As to the two last Articles; although these Forces were invited, by Order of Parliament, to come in for their Assistance, yet no Treaty nor Establishment being concluded on for settling a particular Pay for them, and their Numbers not increasing the Earl of Leven's Army above the Number of 21,000 Men, contracted for by the Treaty, therefore this Sum ought not to be charged upon the Kingdom of England.

Scots Reply. The Earl of Callender's Army was invited into this Kingdom by both Houses, who therefore cannot in Justice refuse to pay them. And whereas it is alledged, that the Number of the Earl of Callender's Army did not increase the Earl of Leven's above the Number of 21,000 Men; it was often desired that a Muster of them might be taken by the Honourable Houses, when both Armies were in England; which not being done, they cannot but admit the Musters taken by such as are intrusted by the Kingdom of Scotland for that Purpose, and that in the strictest Way there used. Besides, the Forces of the Earl of Callender were not called in as Recruits, but as a distinct Army, composed of their own Regiments, a General and

Carried over 1869415 6 8
Brought

	l.	s.	d.
Brought over	1869415	6	8

other Officers, with a Train of Artillery, to block up *Newcastle*, whilst the Army commanded by the Earl of *Leven* was lying before *York*.

For Interest of Monies not paid at their due Time, according to the fifth Article of the Treaty, — — —	}	60000	o	o
--	---	-------	---	---

English Objection. There can be no such Demand made, because the Money advanced and paid by the Parliament of *England*, and the Free-quarter and Billet, with other Monies taken by the *Scots* Army, from Time to Time, hath supplied their Pay in due Season according to the Treaty.

Scots Reply. The Money paid by the Parliament, and the Free-quarters taken by the *Scots* being reckoned, the Committee residing with them are able to make it appear that a greater Sum is due for Interest than hath been demanded.

The Estimate of the great Losses of the Kingdom of <i>Scotland</i> , sustained through our Engagements for this Kingdom, and the Invasion of the <i>Irish</i> , which they are bound to prevent or suppress, which, we are confident, is more than any other of the Articles, is left to the Consideration of the Honourable Houses — — —	}	1929415	6	8
---	---	---------	---	---

The Kingdom of England Creditor.

Received by the Armies, in Monies and Provisions, from <i>Goldsmiths-Hall</i> , <i>Turners-Hall</i> , from the Commissioners of Parliament, the Mayor of <i>York</i> , out of the Profits of Coal, Custom, and Excise in the <i>North</i> , by way of Assessment; as also by quartering in <i>Northumberland</i> , Bishoprick of <i>Durham</i> , <i>Yorkshire</i> , and <i>Nottingham</i> , whereof the Accounts have already been made, — — —	}	464063	o	o
--	---	--------	---	---

Brought

Of ENGLAND.

71

	l.	s.	d.
<i>Brought over</i>	464063	0	0
Refts due for Quarterings of the Army, whereof the Accounts are not yet made, as may be conjectured by Proportion with the monthly Quarterings, whereof the Ac- counts have already been made,	219937	0	0
	684000	0	0

*The English State of the ACCOUNT with the Scots Army, by way
of Estimate.*

The Kingdom of England is Debtor.

F OR the Entertainments of the Scots Ar- my, and the Garrison of <i>Berwick</i> , from the 18th of <i>January</i> 1643, to the 18th of <i>September</i> 1646, being 32 Months, after the Rate of 31,000 <i>l. per Menssem</i> , in case they did come in and continue in <i>England</i> the Numbers of 18,000 Foot, 2000 Horse, and 1000 Dragoons, effective, according to the Treaty of Assistance and the Treaty for <i>Ber-</i> <i>wick</i> , the Sum of — — —	}	992000 0 0
---	---	------------

The Kingdom of England is Creditor.

For Monies paid towards the Entertain- ment of the Scots Army, by the Committee at <i>Goldsmiths-Hall</i> , from the 6th of <i>Octo-</i> <i>ber</i> 1643, to the 1st of <i>November</i> 1645,	}	220629 0 0
--	---	------------

Scots Objection. In this Account are com-
prised several Provisions sent unto them,
which were never delivered; some Part ta-
ken by the Enemy at Sea; some Part spoil-
ed and made useles; besides, no Freight
or Damage in Carriage is here allowed to
the Soldier.

For Money and Lead delivered to them, by the Commissioners of both Kingdoms, at <i>York</i> , after the Rendition of that Place,	}	9000 0 0
--	---	----------

<i>Carried over</i>		<div style="border-top: 1px solid black; display: inline-block;">229629 0 0</div> <i>Brought</i>
---------------------	--	---

	<i>l.</i>	<i>s.</i>	<i>d.</i>
<i>Brought over</i>	229629	0	0
For Provisions and Monies assailed upon the County of <i>York</i> , by Order of the Commissioners of both Kingdoms, and the Committee of that County, within the Space of four Months during the Siege of <i>York</i> , and afterwards untill they marched away to the Siege of <i>Newcastle</i> , after the Rate of 22,000 <i>l.</i> per <i>Mensem</i> ,	88000	0	0
<p><i>Scots Objection.</i> They never received near that Sum, it being evident by daily Experience, that Money so collected doth never answer the Proportion of the Assessments.</p>			
For Cloth delivered to them by the Inhabitants in and about <i>Leeds</i> , presently after the Siege of <i>York</i> , by Order of the Commissioners of both Kingdoms,	10000	0	0
<p><i>Scots Objection.</i> This, by Mistake, is twice charged, it being Part of the Money formerly reckon'd as received from the Committee at <i>Goldsmiths-Hall</i>.</p>			
For Monies, Cloaths, Arms, and Provisions furnished to them during the Siege of <i>Newark</i> , by the Committee of Lords and Commons residing with the Army, the Committee at <i>Nottingham</i> , and the Committees of <i>Goldsmith-Hall</i> and <i>Turners-Hall</i> ,	99054	12	11
<p><i>Scots Objection.</i> With the Monies here mentioned they discharged their Quarters, therefore not to be charged in this Account; by which there will be deducted 50,000 <i>l.</i></p>			
For Monies paid them by the Lord Mayor of <i>York</i> , in <i>June</i> , <i>July</i> , and <i>October</i> , 1645,	1700	0	0
<i>Carried over</i>	428383	12	11
<i>Brought</i>			

	l.	s.	d.
<i>Brought over</i>	428383	12	11
For Monies arising by the Profits of Coals in <i>Newcastle</i> and <i>Sunderland</i> , receiv'd by the <i>Scots</i> Army within the Space of one Year after the taking of that Town, which was in <i>October</i> , 1644,	53000	0	0

For Monies paid to them out of the Excise, besides 629 <i>l.</i> included in the 1700 <i>l.</i> paid by the Lord Mayor of <i>York</i> , as <i>per</i> Certificate from the Excise,	16385	12	4
--	-------	----	---

For Monies arising out of the Profits of Coals at <i>Newcastle</i> , and other Northern Parts, from <i>October</i> 1645, to the 18th of <i>September</i> 1646, which is all paid, and to be paid, to the <i>Scots</i> Army; and, by Estimate made upon former Receipts, are proportioned to be	50000	0	0
--	-------	---	---

Scots Objection. The Monies in the three last Articles amounting to 119,385 *l.* 12 *s.* 4 *d.* did in truth arise only to 80,000 *l.* because the Coals in the first Year did arise to 10 *s.* *per* Chaldron, at which Rate they are still estimated to the *Scots*, when the Years following they had but 5 *s.* *per* Chaldron: So that here is to be a Deduction of near 40,000 *l.*

For Monies received by them, by way of Composition, for Coals and other Goods belonging to Delinquents and other Persons, within and about the Town of <i>Newcastle</i> , since they entered and placed their Garrison there, by Estimate	20000	0	0
---	-------	---	---

Scots Objection. There was no Composition taken, but only what the Officers received to save the Houses of the Inhabitants from Plunder; which cannot be accounted as Part of the Pay of the Army, since the Town was taken by Storm.

<i>Carried over</i>	567769	5	3
		<i>Brought</i>	

l.	s.	d.
Brought over 567769	5	3

For Free-quarter and Billet taken by them in the Kingdom of *England*, from the 18th of *January* 1643, to the 18th of *September* 1646, admitting it no more than half their Pay, which is the least Proportion usual in Armies ; and then in case they were, and always continued, the Numbers contracted for by the Treaty, and the same Proportion of Pay arising to them, as by the Treaty is appointed, their Free-quarter and Billet, besides the four Months above charged within the Sum of 80,000 *l.* whilst they lay at the Siege of *York*, will, by Estimate, amount unto

452000	0	0
--------	---	---

Scots Objection. The total Sum for 28 Months will not amount to more than 432,000 *l.* Besides, it is to be considered, that only the Half of the Soldiers Pay is to be allowed for Quarters, and but a third Part of the Officers, which makes a great Deduction. Moreover it is known, that the first seven or eight Months after the Entry of the *Scots* Army into this Kingdom, they received very little Provision, the Country being in the Enemy's Power, so that half of their Provision did come monthly from *Scotland*, notwithstanding the Provision received from *London*.

For several great Sums of Money, assessed and levied upon particular Persons, for the Fifth and Twentieth Part, and otherwise, and also assessed upon Townships, Constableries, and Parishes, within the Kingdom of *England*, and levied by them, by their own Power, without Consent of Parliament, besides the Free-quarter and Billet before-mentioned ; which though some Persons do estimate it at much more, yet here are valued no higher than

403000	0	0
--------	---	---

Carried over 1422769	5	3
	<i>Brought</i>	

	l.	s.	d.
Brought over	1422769	5	3

Scots Objection. These Assessments were only made in the Winter-time, and then the Quarters were deducted out of them, and but a small Proportion will be found above the Quarters and Billetings of the Army: So that this and the precedent Article cannot consist together.

For several great Proportions of Arms, Ammunition, and Provisions of War, delivered to the Scots Army, and estimated at	}	40000	0	0
---	---	-------	---	---

Scots Objection. Arms and Ammunition are not to be allowed as Part of the Army's Pay. The Kingdom of *England*, by the fourth Article of the Treaty, is obliged to repay the Kingdom of *Scotland* the Train of Artillery, and other Necessaries ready to march, which is all they are to find. Again, it is impossible that the Arms and Ammunition delivered should come near that Sum: So that these Exceptions being considered, the *Scots* have only as yet received the Sum of 700,000 *l*.

Sum Total of the Particulars aforesaid	1462769	5	3
--	---------	---	---

Besides what the *Scots* Army hath taken from the People of *England*; by Plunder of Merchandize, Household Stuff, Horses, Sheep, and other Cattle and Goods; which, in Value doth amount unto, if not exceed, any two of the Sums above-mentioned.

Scots Answer. For Plunder; it is most certain that many of the *English*, pretending themselves to be *Scots*, have been active in plundering in the Country; greater Care hath been taken for suppressing Disorders in the *Scots* Army in *England* than hath been in the Army in *Scotland*: Some have been put to Death for pillaging to the Value but of two Shillings.

After

AN. 22. CAR. I.
1646.

August.

A third Sum of
100,000*l.* voted
for the Scots Ar-
my.

After reading the Estimates, both *English* and *Scots*, and the Objections to the latter, the Question was proposed, That such Members as are of the Committee of both Kingdoms shall have Power to offer unto the Commissioners of *Scotland*, 100,000*l.* more than the 200,000*l.* already voted; to be paid unto them at the End of twelve Months, to be accounted from the End of the nine Months whereon the last 50,000*l.* Part of the said 200,000*l.* is ordered to be paid; and for a Discharge of all Demands from this Kingdom, expressed in their Paper of the 18th of *August*, if they shall be content therewith; or, otherwise, to offer them to come to an Account upon the first 200,000*l.* But a Motion being made for granting two hundred thousand Pounds additional instead of one, this pass'd in the Negative, by a Majority of 108 against 101; and the Proposal for only 100,000*l.* more was agreed to. Then this Vote was ordered to be communicated to the *Scots* Commissioners, and their Answer demanded.—However, this Motion for 200,000*l.* more was afterwards resumed, as will appear in the Sequel.

The Lords had nothing before them, for several Days, but private Causes, and Ordinances for taking off Sequestrations from the Estates of many unhappy Sufferers in the late Wars, by large Compositions for them; the Multiplicity of which, being all particularly recited, swell their *Journals* to a very great Bulk, and are too extensive for our present Design. We therefore conclude this Month with an Ordinance pass'd, at this Time, for the Ordination of Ministers according to the Presbyterian Plan, design'd by both Nations to be the Establishment of this Island.

An ORDINANCE concerning the Manner of Ordination of Ministers in Classical Presbyteries, together with Rules for their Examination.

An Ordinance
for the Ordina-
tion of Ministers.

‘ **W** Hereas the Word *Presbyter*, that is to say, *Elder*, and the Word *Bishop*, do, in the Holy Scripture, intend and signify one and the same

same Function; although the Title of *Bishop* hath been, by corrupt Custom, appropriated to one, and that unto him ascribed, and by him assumed, as in other Things, so in Matter of Ordination that was not meet; which Ordination notwithstanding being perform'd by him, a Presbyter, join'd with other Presbyters, we hold for Substance to be valid, and not to be disclaimed by any that have received it; and that the Presbyters so ordained, being lawfully thereunto appointed and authorized, may ordain other Presbyters :

An. 22. Car. I.

1646.

August.

And whereas also it is manifest by the Word of God, that no Man ought to take upon himself the Office of a Minister, untill he be lawfully call'd and ordain'd thereunto; and that the Work of Ordination, that is to say, an outward solemn setting apart of Persons for the Office of the Ministry in the Church, by the preaching Presbyters, is an Ordinance of Christ, and to be perform'd with all due Care, Wisdom, Gravity, and Solemnity: It is ordained by the Lords and Commons assembled in Parliament, after Advice had with the Assembly of Divines convened at *Westminster*, that the respective Classical Presbyters within their respective Bounds, may examine, approve, and ordain Presbyters, according to the Directory for Ordination and Rules of Examination hereafter expressed :

First, ' He that is to be ordained must address himself to the Presbytery, and bring with him a Testimonial of his taking the *Covenant* of the three Kingdoms, and of his Diligence and Proficiency in his Studies; what Degrees he hath taken in the University, and what hath been the Time of his Abode there; and, withall, of his Age, which is to be twenty-four at the least; but especially of his Life and Conversation.

Secondly, ' The Presbytery shall proceed to enquire touching the Grace of God in him, and whether he be of such Holiness of Life as is requisite in a Minister of the Gospel; and to examine him touching his Learning and Sufficien-

cy

78 *The Parliamentary HISTORY*

An. 22. Car. I.

1646.

August.

cy, and touching the Evidence of his Calling to
the holy Ministry; and in particular his fair and
direct Calling to that Place to which he is de-
sign'd.

The Rules for EXAMINATION are these:

1. ' That the Party examined be dealt with in
a brotherly Way, with Mildness of Spirit, and
with special Respect to the Gravity, Modesty,
and Quality of every one.

2. ' He shall be examined touching his Skill in
the original Tongues, and that Trial to be made
by reading the *Hebrew* and *Greek Testament*,
and rendering some Portions of them into *Latin*;
and Inquiry also shall be made after his Know-
ledge and Skill in Logic, Philosophy, and other
Learning.

3. ' It shall be required what Authors in Divi-
nity he hath read and is best acquainted with,
and whether he hath read and observed the Ec-
clesiastical History; and what his Skill is in
the Chronology of Holy Scripture.

4. ' Trial shall be made of his Knowledge in
the chief Grounds of Religion, and of his Abi-
lity to defend the orthodox Doctrine contained
in them against all unsound and erroneous Opi-
nions, especially those of the present Age; also
his Skill in the Meaning of such Places of Scrip-
ture as shall be proposed to him; also of his
Judgment in Cases of Conscience.

5. ' If he hath not before preached in public
with Approbation of such as are of Ability to
judge, he shall, at a competent Time assigned
him, and before the Presbytery, preach a Ser-
mon upon such a Place of Scripture as shall be
given him.

6. ' He shall, in a competent Time also, frame
a Discourse in *Latin* upon such a common Place
or Controversy in Divinity as shall be assigned
him, and exhibit to the Presbytery such Theses
as express the Sum thereof, and maintain a Dis-
pute upon them; also he shall preach before the
People

‘ People ; the Presbytery, or some of the Ministers An. 22. Car. I.
1646.
‘ of the Word appointed by them, being present.

7. ‘ The Proportion of his Gifts, in relation
‘ to the Place to which he is called, shall be con-
‘ sidered.

August.

8. ‘ Besides the Trial of his Gifts in Preach-
‘ ing, he shall undergo an Examination in the
‘ Premises two several Days or more, if the Pres-
‘ bytery shall judge it necessary.

Thirdly, ‘ After which he, being approved, is to
‘ be sent to the Church or Place where he is to
‘ serve, if it may be done with Safety and Conve-
‘ niency, there to preach three several Days, and to
‘ converse with the People ; that they may have
‘ Trial of his Gifts for their Edification, and may
‘ have Time and Leisure to inquire into, and the
‘ better to know his Life and Conversation.

Fourthly, ‘ In the last of these three Days ap-
‘ pointed for the making known of his Gifts in
‘ preaching, there shall be sent from the Presbytery
‘ to the Congregation a public Instrument in Wri-
‘ ting, which shall publicly be read amongst the
‘ People, and after affix’d to the Church-Door, to
‘ signify on such a Day any Member of the said
‘ Congregation, or any other Person whatsoever,
‘ may put in, with all Christian Discretion and
‘ Meekness, what Exceptions they have against
‘ him, before the Presbytery shall proceed to Or-
‘ dination.

Fifthly, ‘ Upon the Day appointed for Ordina-
‘ tion, which is to be perform’d in that Church
‘ where he that is to be ordained is to serve, if it
‘ may be done with Safety and Conveniency, a so-
‘ lemn Fast shall be kept by the Congregation, that
‘ they may the more earnestly join in Prayer to
‘ God for a Blessing upon the Person and Labour
‘ of this his Servant, solemnly to be set apart to
‘ the Office of the Ministry for their Good ; the
‘ Presbytery shall come to the Place, or some Mi-
‘ nisters of the Word, five at least, shall be sent
‘ from the Presbytery, whereof one shall preach
‘ to

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.

August.

‘ to the People concerning the Office and Duty
‘ of the Ministers of Christ, and how the People
‘ ought to esteem him for his Work’s Sake.

Sixthly, ‘ After the Sermon is ended, the Mini-
‘ ster that hath preached shall, in the Face of the
‘ Congregation, demand of him who is now to be
‘ ordained concerning his Faith in Christ Jesus,
‘ and his Persuasion of the Reform’d Religion ac-
‘ cording to the Scriptures, his sincere Ends and
‘ Intentions in desiring to enter in this Calling, his
‘ Resolution to use constant Diligence in Prayer,
‘ Reading, Meditation, Preaching, Ministering the
‘ Sacrament, and doing all Ministerial Duties to-
‘ wards his Charge, with his whole Desire, as in
‘ the Presence of God, so as may most further
‘ their Edification and Salvation; his Zeal and
‘ Faithfulness in maintaining the Truth of the
‘ Gospel and Purity of the Church against Error
‘ and Schism; his Care that himself and Family
‘ may be unblameable and Examples to the Flock,
‘ and that his full Purpose is to continue in his
‘ Duty against all Trouble and Persecution.

Seventhly, ‘ In all which having declared him-
‘ self, professed his Willingness, and promised his
‘ Endeavour, by the Help of God, the Ministers
‘ sent from the Presbytery shall solemnly set him
‘ apart to the Office and Work of the Ministry,
‘ laying their Hands upon him, with a short
‘ Prayer or Blessing to this Effect :

*Thankfully acknowledging the great Mercy of
God in sending Jesus Christ for the Redemption
of his People, and for his Ascension to the Right
Hand of God the Father, and in the pouring out of
his Spirit, and giving Gifts to Men, Apostles, Evan-
gelists, Prophets, Pastors, and Teachers, for the
gathering and building up of his Church, and for
fitting and inclining this Man to this great Work;
and to beseech him to fill him with his Holy Spirit,
who, in his Name, we set apart to this holy Service,
to fulfil the Work of the Ministry in all Things,
that he may both save himself and the People com-
mitted to his Charge.*

‘ *Eighthly*,

Eighthly, ' This, or the like, Form of Prayer or Blessing being ended, let the Minister who preached briefly exhort him to consider of the Greatness of his Office and Work ; the Danger of Negligence both to himself and his People ; the Blessing which will accompany his Faithfulness in this Life and that to come : Withall let him exhort the People, and charge them in the Name of God, willingly to receive and acknowledge him as the Minister of Christ, and to maintain, encourage, and assist him in all the Parts of his Office ; and so, by Prayer, commending both him and his Flock to the Grace of God, after the singing of a Psalm, let the Assembly be dismissed with a Blessing.

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.
August.

Ninthly, ' Let such as are appointed for the Service of the Army, Navy, College, or other Charge, be ordained as aforesaid in such Church as the Classial Presbytery, to which they shall address themselves, shall think fit ; and such Alteration made, by the Ministers that ordain them, from the Exhortation last before prescribed, as the Circumstances of Place and Person shall require.

Tenthly, ' Let every one who is appointed for any Place or Congregation, not being at that Time within the Bounds of any Classial Presbytery, be ordained by that Classis of Presbyters which he shall address himself unto, or by five, or any greater Number, of the Ministers of the Word to be sent from that Presbytery ; which Ordination is to be perform'd according to the Rules and Directions before prescribed, as far as with Safety and Conveniency may be.

' And be it further ordained by the Lords and Commons, That every Person formerly ordained as a Presbyter, according to the Form of Ordination which hath been held in the Church of England, and is to be removed to another Charge, do bring to the Presbytery where he is to be placed, if there be any, and, if not, then to some other Presbytery, a Testimonial of his Ordination, and

82 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 22. Car. 1.

1646.

August.

‘ of his Abilities and Conversation, whereupon his
 ‘ Fitness for that Place to which he is to be remo-
 ‘ ved shall be tried by his preaching there ; and,
 ‘ if it shall be judged necessary, by a further Exa-
 ‘ mination ; and so, without any new Ordination,
 ‘ he shall be admitted, if he be approved as fit for
 ‘ that Place : And if any Person ordained a Mini-
 ‘ ster in *Scotland*, or in any other Reform’d Church,
 ‘ be design’d to a Congregation in *England*, he is
 ‘ to bring from that Church to the Presbytery
 ‘ where he is to be placed, if there be any, and if
 ‘ not, then to some other Presbytery, a sufficient
 ‘ Testimonial of his Ordination, of his Life and
 ‘ Conversation while he lived with them, and of
 ‘ the Causes of his Removal ; and to undergo
 ‘ such Trial of his Fitness and Sufficiency, and
 ‘ to have the same Course held with him in other
 ‘ Particulars as is set down, in the foregoing Rule
 ‘ and Provision, touching the Examination and
 ‘ Admission of Persons formerly ordained in *Eng-
 ‘ land*.

‘ And it is farther ordained, That Records be
 ‘ carefully kept by the Register to be nominated
 ‘ by the Presbytery, of the Names of the Persons
 ‘ ordained, with their Testimonials of the Time
 ‘ and Place of Ordination, and of the Ministers
 ‘ who did ordain them, and of the Charge to
 ‘ which they are appointed ; and that no Money or
 ‘ Gift of what Kind soever shall be received from
 ‘ the Person to be ordained, or from any on his
 ‘ Behalf, for Ordination, or ought else belong-
 ‘ ing to it, by the Presbytery, or any appertaining
 ‘ to any of them, upon what Pretence soever, ex-
 ‘ cept to the Register for the Entry, Instruments,
 ‘ and Testimonials of his Ordination, which shall
 ‘ not exceed the Sum of ten Shillings for each
 ‘ Person ordained.

‘ And it is further ordained, That all Persons
 ‘ who shall be ordained Presbyters according to this
 ‘ Directory, shall be for ever reputed as authorized
 ‘ Ministers of the Church of *England*, and as
 ‘ capable of any ministerial Employment in the
 ‘ Church,

‘ Church, with the Rights and Profits belonging
 ‘ thereunto, as any other Presbyters whatsoever al-
 ‘ ready ordained, or hereafter to be ordained; and
 ‘ all Presbyters who are hereby authorized to
 ‘ ordain, and shall, according to this present Direc-
 ‘ tory, ordain any one or more Presbyters, are here-
 ‘ by declared to perform an acceptable Service to
 ‘ this Church and Kingdom, and shall have the
 ‘ Protection of both Houses of Parliament for their
 ‘ Indemnity; and what Presbytery soever, being in
 ‘ due Manner desired, shall, without just Cause,
 ‘ refuse or defer to ordain any Presbyter, who, by
 ‘ the Rules and Directions of this Ordinance, ought
 ‘ to be ordain’d, or shall neglect to observe the So-
 ‘ lemnity of Ordination in that decent, grave, and
 ‘ godly Manner as is meet, it is hereby declared
 ‘ they are guilty of a very great Offence, and deserve
 ‘ severe Punishment. Provided, That this Ordi-
 ‘ nance shall stand in full Force for three Years,
 ‘ and no longer.’

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.

August.

The last Propositions for Peace sent to the King having met with no better Fate than those which had been formerly offered to him, his Majesty’s Answer to them we find was, after the first Reading, not the least taken Notice of by either House of Parliament. During the Commissioners Stay at *Newcastle*, the Earl of *Loudon*, Lord-Chancellor of *Scotland*, address’d himself to the King in the following Speech ^a:

May it please your Majesty,

‘ YOUR Majesty was pleased, on *Monday* last, The Earl of
 to call the Lords of your Privy-Council of *Loudon’s* Speech
Scotland and the Committee, to acquaint them with to the King, in-
 the Propositions; and told them, That before the treating his As-
 Delivery of your Answer you would make the same sent to the Pro-
 known to them. The Time assigned for the Stay positions for
 of the Commissioners is so short, and the Conse- Peace.

F 2

quence

^a From the *Edinburgh* Edition, printed by *Evan Tyler*, the King’s Printer.

84 *The Parliamentary History*

Ann. 22. Car. I.

1646.

August.

quence of your Majesty's Answer is of so great Importance, either for the Preservation or Ruin of your Crown and Kingdoms, as we could not be answerable to God, nor to that Trust reposed in us, unless we represent to your Majesty how necessary it is (as the Condition of Affairs now stand, and in so great an Extremity) that your Majesty should assent to the Propositions, and that the Danger and Loss of your Refusal will be remediless, and bring on sudden Ruin and Destruction.

'I shall begin first with the last, which is the Danger, and shall next speak a Word of the Remedy. The Differences between your Majesty and your Parliament (which no Man knows better than your Majesty's self) are grown to such a Height, that, after so many bloody Battles, there is no Cure but a present Peace; otherwise nothing can be expected but certain Destruction. The Parliament is possessed of your Navy, and of all the Forts, Garrisons, and Strong-holds of the Kingdom: They have the Excise, Assessments, and Sequestrations at their Disposal, and have Authority to raise all the Men and Money in the Kingdom; and, after many Victories and great Successes, they have a strong Army on Foot, and are now in such a Posture for Strength and Power, as they are in a Capacity to do what they will both in Church and State: And some are so afraid, others so unwilling, to submit themselves to your Majesty's Government, as they desire not you, nor any of your Race, longer to reign over them: Yet the People are so wearied of the Wars, and great Burdens they groan under; are so desirous of Peace, and loath to have Monarchical Government (under which they have lived so long in Peace and Plenty) changed, that such as are wearied of your Majesty's Government, dare not attempt to cast it totally off till once they send Propositions of Peace to your Majesty, lest the People (without whose Concurrence they are not able to carry on their Design) should fall from them. And therefore all the

the People being desirous, that, after so great Wars and Troubles, they may have a perfect Security from Oppression and arbitrary Power, the Houses of Parliament have resolved upon the Propositions which are tendered to your Majesty, as that without which the Kingdom and your People cannot be in Safety; and most Part of the People think, That there cannot be a firm Peace upon any other Terms.

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.

August.

‘ Your Majesty’s Friends, and the Commissioners from *Scotland*, after all the Wrestling they could, were forced to consent to the sending of those Propositions, or to be hated as the Hinderers of Peace, and to send no Propositions at all. And now, Sir, if your Majesty, which God forbid, shall refuse to assent to the Propositions, you will lose all your Friends, lose the City and all the Country, and all *England* will join against you as one Man; and (when all Hope of Reconciliation is past) it is to be feared they will process and depose you, and set up another Government; they will charge us to deliver your Majesty to them, and to render the Northern Garrisons, and to remove our Army out of *England*; and upon your Majesty’s refusing the Propositions, both Kingdoms will be constrained, for their mutual Safety, to agree and settle Religion and Peace without you; which, to our unspeakable Grief, will ruin your Majesty and your Posterity. And if your Majesty reject our faithful Advice, (who desire nothing on Earth more than the Establishment of your Majesty’s Throne) and lose *England* by your Wilfulness; your Majesty will not be permitted to come and ruin *Scotland*.

‘ Sir, We have laid our Hand upon our Hearts; we have ask’d Counsel and Direction from God, and have had our most serious Thoughts about the Remedy; but can find no other (as Affairs stand for the present) to save your Crown and Kingdoms, than your Majesty’s Assenting to the Propositions. We dare not say but they are higher in some Things (if it were in our Power and Option to remedy it) than

An. 22. Car. 1.

1646.

August.

we do approve of: But when we see no other Means for curing the Distempers of the Kingdoms, and closing the Breaches between your Majesty and your Parliaments, our most humble and faithful Advice is, That your Majesty would be graciously pleased to assent to them, as the only best Way to procure a speedy and happy Peace; because your Majesty shall thereby have many great Advantages; you will be received again in your Parliament, with the Applause and Acclamations of your People; by your Royal Presence your Friends will be strengthened; your Enemies (who fear nothing so much as the granting of the Propositions) will be weakened; your Majesty will have a fit Opportunity to offer such Propositions as you shall, in your Wisdom, judge fit for the Crown and Kingdom; all Armies will be disbanded; and your People finding the sweet Fruits of your peaceable Government, your Majesty will gain their Hearts and Affections, which will be your Strength and Glory, and will recover all that your Majesty hath lost in this Time of Tempest and Trouble. And if it please God so to incline your Royal Heart to this Advice of your humble and faithful Servants, who, next to the Honour of God, esteem nothing more precious than the Safety of your Person and Crown, our Actions shall quickly make it appear to all the World, That we esteem no Hazard too great for your Majesty's Safety, and that we are willing to sacrifice our Lives and Fortunes for establishing of your Throne. And now, Sir, we prostrate ourselves at your Majesty's Feet, and, in the lowest Posture of Humility, do beg, That your Majesty may, in the End, grant the Suit of your most humble Servants and faithful Subjects, who have no private Aims, but only the Glory of God, and Safety of your Majesty's Person, Posterity, and Crown before our Eyes. And the Granting of our Desires will revive our fainting Spirits, refresh our sad Hearts, which are overwhelmed and like to break with Sorrow, and will turn the Prayers and Tears of

of the many Thousands of your People in Praises to God, and make them embrace your Majesty with Acclamations of Joy.' An. 22. Car. I. 1646.

September.

Mr. *Whitlocke* observes on this Occasion^a, That the King did not absolutely refuse to pass the Propositions, but said to the *Scots* Commissioners, who pressed him to it, ' That he hoped the Parliament would give him a Hearing; which, for better Accommodation, he desired might be near *London*; and doubted not, after a full Hearing, he should not only give but receive Satisfaction.' But his Majesty's Resolution not to give up Episcopacy in Church-Government, which he had sworn at his Coronation to support, was so fix'd and determin'd, that neither adverse Fortune nor Argument could prevail upon him to yield in this Particular; although the famous *Scots* Divine, Mr. *Alexander Henderson*, came to *Newcastle*, in order to persuade the King to comply with the Commissioners Proposals for establishing of Presbytery. All the Papers *pro* and *con* in this Controversy, collected together, are extant at this Day^b; and, as Mr. *Rushworth* remarks^c, ' fully shew his Majesty's great Abilities at a Time when he could not have the Assistance of any of his Chaplains.' Mr. *Ludlow* writes^d, ' That another Reason for the King's refusing his Consent to the Propositions, besides his Adherence to Episcopacy, was, That he had private Encouragement from some of the *Scots* and *English*, to expect more easy Terms, or to be received without any at all.'

The King's
Reasons for his
Refusal.

September 1. The *Scots* Commissioners having presented their Answer to the *English* Estimate and Exceptions, which we have already given, as also to the Commons Offer of 300,000 *l.* and the same being twice read, a Motion was made for taking the

^a *Memorials*, p. 227.

^b In *Roysson's* Edition of the *King's Works*, and several other Collections.

^c *Collections*, Vol. VI. p. 321.

^d *Memoirs*, Vol. I. p. 183.

An. 22. Car. 1. the same into present Consideration, which was agreed to by a Majority of 129 against 106: And then the Question which had been rejected a few Days before, for adding a fourth 100,000 *l.* was carried by 140, against 101; but the Commons resolved to adhere to their former Votes, as to the Time and Manner of the Payment of the 300,000 *l.* already voted; and that the Time for the Payment of this last 100,000 *l.* now voted, should be at the End of twelve Months, to be accounted from the Time assigned for the Payment of the last 100,000 *l.* of the 300,000 *l.* formerly voted. And this Resolution, as the former had been, was ordered to be communicated to the *Scots Commissioners*, and their immediate Answer required; which being the next Day reported by Sir *Henry Vane, jun.* the Commons again resolved to adhere to their former Votes, as to the Time and Manner of the Payment of the 400,000 *l.* to the Kingdom of *Scotland*; that such Members of their House as were of the Committee of both Kingdoms, or any four of them, do, that Afternoon, communicate the said Resolution to the *Scots Commissioners*, and offer to them Reasons why the House doth adhere to their former Votes; to confer with them about the Place for receiving of their Money; and to declare unto them, that it is expected that, upon the Payment of the first 100,000 *l.* as aforesaid, their Armies and Forces do march out of this Kingdom. But,

On the 4th of this Month, the *Scots Commissioners*, not satisfied with these Resolutions of the Commons, presented the following Papers to the House of Lords, addressed to their Speaker, which we give from their *Journals*:

Right Honourable,

UPON the 11th of *August* we delivered in a Paper to both Houses, declaring the Willingness of the Kingdom of *Scotland* to recall their Army out of this Kingdom, and surrender the

An. 22. Car. 1.
1646.
September.

A fourth Sum of 100,000 *l.* voted for the Scots Army, but at distant Times of Payment.

Their Commissioners offer Reasons to the Lords for the present Payment of 200,000 *l.*

‘ Garrisons possessed by them, reasonable Satisfac- An. 22. Car. I.
 ‘ tion being given for their Pains, Hazard, and 1646.
 ‘ Charges, and we now desire your Lordship to
 ‘ communicate the Papers here inclosed to the }
 ‘ House of Peers, and we remain September.

Worcester-House, Your Lordship's Servants,
Sept. 1, 1646.

LOUDON, C. ERSKINE,
 ARGYLE, H. KENNEDY,
 LAUDERDALE, R. BARCLAY.
 W. HOUSTON,

A Paper of the *Scots* Commissioners, touching
 their Army and their Pay, was read.

Sept. 2, 1646.

‘ **W**Hereas we delivered in to the Honourable
 ‘ Houses a Paper of the 11th of *August*,
 ‘ containing several Particulars of high Concern-
 ‘ ment and great Importance to the Peace and
 ‘ Safety of these Kingdoms ; and we have received
 ‘ the Vote of the House of Commons concerning
 ‘ that Part thereof for Satisfaction to the Army :
 ‘ That the Resolution of the Honourable Houses
 ‘ upon the rest of the Papers, upon which so much
 ‘ depends, may not be retarded by any Differences
 ‘ concerning Satisfaction to be given to our Army;
 ‘ and to evidence our Sense of the Burthens of this
 ‘ Kingdom, we are willing to accept, as the low-
 ‘ est Sum that can possibly give any Satisfaction,
 ‘ or whereunto we can condescend, the Sum of
 ‘ 400,000*l.* of which 200,000*l.* at least, to be paid
 ‘ and delivered to the Treasurers of the Army at
 ‘ *Newcastle*, before their marching away; and the
 ‘ other 200,000*l.* to be secured in such Manner,
 ‘ and paid at such Times and Places, as shall be
 ‘ agreed upon ; which we hope the Houses will
 ‘ think most just and reasonable, considering that
 ‘ the Kingdom of *England*, which, at the first
 ‘ Time of our Engagement in this War for their
 ‘ Assistance, was in the greatest Distress, is now,
 ‘ by the Blessing of God, by the Endeavours and
 ‘ Forces

AN. 22. CAR. 1.
1646.

September.

Forces of both Kingdoms, relieved and eased;
 whereas the Kingdom of *Scotland*, at that Time
 in Peace and Prosperity, hath been, by this War,
 involved in greater Calamities and Sufferings
 than either we or our Fathers have formerly felt;
 and whoever will make a due Comparison, can-
 not but know how much *England* is made better,
 and *Scotland* worse, by their Engagement in this
 War; considering also that our Army in this
 Kingdom have served near three Years, be-
 sides those in *Scotland* who served near two
 Years in that Kingdom; that they have, for the
 Space of five Months, had no Pay; and when
 they were paid, it was not according to the Pay
 of other Armies, our Foot, for divers Months
 together, not having received above a Penny
 Halfpenny *per Diem*; which they were the more
 willing to bear, in hopes of due Satisfaction and
 Recompence in the Conclusion. And now if
 they should be so far frustrated of their Expecta-
 tions, as to be dismissed in a far worse Condition
 than when they came into this Kingdom, (for
 they came extraordinarily well provided both for
 Arms and Money, to the great Charge and Ex-
 pence of our Nation) and withall to find their
 own native Country in a much worse Condition
 than they left it, they would certainly see them-
 selves ill recompensed; and therefore, after the
 Army itself hath served so faithfully, and their
 Country hath suffered so extremely for their En-
 gagement with this Kingdom, we cannot expect
 but, to send home an unsatisfied and discontented
 Army into a ruined and impoverished Country,
 will be far from the Thoughts of the Honourable
 Houses. But if, after we have so freely, plainly,
 and clearly acquainted the Honourable Houses
 with the least Sum that can possibly give Satisfac-
 tion, our Offer shall not be accepted, we desire
 that the Houses would be pleased to appoint a
 Committee to concur with the Committee of the
 Parliament of *Scotland*, for the present adjusting of
 our Accounts; whereunto we have ever been most
 willing

‘ willing since the coming of our Army into this Kingdom, to the end that just Satisfaction may be made: Accordingly we do, with all Earnestness, desire and expect that the Honourable Houses will so accelerate their Resolutions concerning the Satisfaction of our Army, that they may, without further Delay, proceed to the Consideration of the Remainder of our Paper of the 11th of *August*; that, by joint Advice, a final End may be put to these unnatural Wars, all Occasions of Discord may be wisely prevented for the future, and constant Unity and Amity preserved between the Kingdoms.’

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.

September.

By Command of the Commissioners for the Parliament of Scotland.

JOHN CHIESLEY.

A second Paper of the *Scots* Commissioners was read.

‘ WE have received the Votes of the Honourable House of Commons, of the first of *September*, wherewith we rest satisfied, as to the Sum, with the greater Contentment that our Agreement in this is unto us a Ground of Confidence there shall be in all other Things a happy Accord between the Kingdoms; only, again, we are necessitated to present unto this Honourable House, that a less Sum than 200,000 *l.* for the present, cannot give Satisfaction to the Army; and, besides the Reasons formerly mentioned, we do earnestly intreat the Houses to consider that we are limited by positive Instructions not to accept of a smaller Sum. And further, the Committee of Estates of the Kingdom of *Scotland*, upon Sight of our Paper of the 18th of *August*, (wherein we had intimated to the Houses that that Sum might possibly give Satisfaction to the Army) have repeated their former Instructions, with express Directions that we shall upon no Terms accept of a less Sum than 200,000 *l.* for the present;

92 *The Parliamentary HISTORY*

An. 22. Car. 1.
1645.

September.

sent ; but use all our Endeavour for more, in regard of the urgent and pressing Necessities of the Army. This being the real and true State of the Business, the Interest of the second hundred thousand Pounds is but a small Loss, and the Honourable Houses can afford many Ways of Security to raise it, which is no ways in our Power to do : Whereas, on the other Part, the Prejudice by Delay and Expence of Time in representing this to the Committee of Estates and General Officers with the Army, and to the Committee of Estates in *Scotland*, must needs be great ; and we, being limited by positive Instructions and renewed Directions, have no Hope to obtain it : Wherefore it is our earnest Request to the Honourable Houses, that they would be pleased to agree to the advancing of 200,000 *l.* before the Removal of our Army; that the Means may be effectual for the End, and the common Desires of both may not, upon so small a Difference, run the Hazard of being frustrated and disappointed.

Concerning the Times of Payment, and Security to be given for the Remainder, we desire to have a Conference with such as the Honourable Houses shall appoint, wherein we shall use our best Endeavours to give Satisfaction.

By Command of the Commissioners for the Parliament of Scotland.

JOHN CHIESLEY.

A third Paper from the *Scots* Commissioners was read.

Sept. 4, 1646.

WE do return this Answer to the Votes of the Honourable House of Commons of the second of this Instant, That our earnest Desire to entertain a good Understanding between the Kingdoms, and to accelerate the settling of all Affairs between them, moved us to go upon the total Sum, though in Equity and Justice

‘ a far greater Sum might have been expected ; An. 22. Car. I.
 ‘ and the same Affection and Zeal did induce us 1646.
 ‘ freely to exprefs what was the leaft Proportion
 ‘ of that Sum that might, for the present, give Sa- September.
 ‘ tisfaction to the Army before the Removal of it
 ‘ out of this Kingdom ; which, upon serious Con-
 ‘ sideration of the Reasons formerly given, will
 ‘ clearly appear to be juft and neceffary ; for, up-
 ‘ on moft accurate Inquiry, 200,000 l. was found
 ‘ to be the leaft Sum that could poffibly give Sa-
 ‘ tisfaction for the present ; whereupon Instruc-
 ‘ tions were given us, with pofitive and exprefs
 ‘ Limitations, upon no Terms to accept of lefs,
 ‘ but to ufe our beft Endeavours for a greater ;
 ‘ and, observing the Truft committed to us, we
 ‘ cannot recede from what we have, with very
 ‘ great Freedom and Plainnefs, already declared :
 ‘ Wherefore, fith it is impoffible with a fmaller
 ‘ Sum to give Satisfaction to the Army, which is
 ‘ extreme neceffitous for the present, and upon their
 ‘ difbanding may be difperfed into feveral Nations,
 ‘ whereby they cannot attend for further Satisfac-
 ‘ tion : And fince there are fo many Ways and
 ‘ Means in the Power of the Houfes for to raife
 ‘ the fame, whereof fome were represented in Con-
 ‘ ference, we cannot but expect that the Honour-
 ‘ able Houfes, in Juftice to fatisfy an Army that
 ‘ has done and fuffered fo much for them, out of
 ‘ their earneft Defire to relieve the *North* of this
 ‘ Kingdom of their heavy Preflures, and that our
 ‘ common Defire of removing that Army out of
 ‘ this Kingdom may not be fruflrated, will effec-
 ‘ tually apply themfelves to the readieft Means
 ‘ which may advance the Sum defired.

‘ Concerning the Place of receiving of the Mo-
 ‘ nies ; we defire it may be confidered that, when
 ‘ Inftuctions were given us about that Particular,
 ‘ the Committee of Eftates of the Kingdom of
 ‘ *Scotland* did not call it in Queftion but that the
 ‘ fame Way would be obferved as was in the Year
 ‘ 1641 : But if our Defire to have the Monies de-
 ‘ livered at *Newcaftle* give any Ground of Jea-
 ‘ lousy

An. 22. Car. I.

1646.

September.

' lously or Suspicion, we are confident, the Sum
 ' being agreed upon, and Assurance being given for
 ' the Delivery thereof, the Committee of Estates
 ' would agree to some convenient Place between
 ' *Newcastle* and *Scotland* where it may be received;
 ' and, before the Receipt of it, to deliver up *New-*
 ' *castle* to such as the Parliament shall appoint :
 ' And if there be any Doubt concerning the Sur-
 ' render of the other Garrisons and Removal of
 ' the Army out of this Kingdom, although such
 ' has been their Integrity as they have given no
 ' Occasion for such Suspicion ; and although there
 ' be many more Grounds of Confidence, from the
 ' Covenant and Treaty, than was the last Time an
 ' Army from *Scotland* was in this Kingdom ; yet
 ' that all Scruple may be removed and Jealousy
 ' cured, there is nothing used in the like Cases a-
 ' mong other Nations which shall not be willing-
 ' ly granted ; and though when the Sum presently
 ' desired is paid, there will still remain in the
 ' Hands of the Kingdom of *England* great Sums
 ' of Money due to the Kingdom of *Scotland*,
 ' which of itself might be a sufficient Security ;
 ' yet, as we have before expressed, the Sum being
 ' agreed upon, and Assurance given for Delivery
 ' thereof, and Security for Payment of the Re-
 ' mainder, we make no Doubt but whatsoever As-
 ' surance can in reason be demanded, will freely
 ' be granted by the Committee of Estates with the
 ' Army and by the General Officers, as to their
 ' Removal out of this Kingdom and Surrender of
 ' all the Garrisons, *Berwick* and *Carrisje* being dis-
 ' posed of according to the Treaty between the
 ' Kingdoms ; all which may be so done, as needs
 ' not to be any Hinderance to the present providing
 ' of the Sum desired, nor to any other Proceedings,
 ' since all the Particulars concerning mutual As-
 ' surance may easily be transacted while the Mo-
 ' ney is providing.

By Command of the Commissioners for the Par-
liament of Scotland. JOHN CHIESLEY.

The

The Lords ordered all the foregoing Papers to be communicated to the House of Commons, which was done accordingly: And the next Day, *September 5*, the same being read there, a Motion was made for adhering to their former Votes, as to the Time and Manner of the Payment of the 400,000 *l.* to the Kingdom of *Scotland*; but it passed in the Negative, by 112 against 102. Immediately after which a Committee was appointed to go to, and to have Power to treat with, the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and Common-Council of the City of *London*, or any other Persons, for borrowing 200,000 *l.* as soon as might be, for the Service of the State; to consider of all Ways and Means for raising of the said Sum, and to offer Securities for the same.

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.
September.

Which being communicated to the Commons, they resolve to borrow that Sum of the City of *London*.

It was also ordered that such Members as are of the Committee of both Kingdoms, do confer with the *Scots* Commissioners, and receive Satisfaction from them concerning the Delivery up of the Garrisons, and the Marching of their Armies and Forces out of this Kingdom; and to desire them, if they want any Powers, that they would speedily procure the same from the Kingdom of *Scotland*; to the end the Delivery up of the Garrisons, and the Marching away of their Armies and Forces, may be ascertained between the two Kingdoms; and likewise to declare, whether they have Instructions to make any other Demands, before the Marching away of their Forces; and, if they have, what those other Demands are.

Sept. 10. Mr. *Holles* reported from the Common-Council of *London*, their Answer to the Proposal for borrowing 200,000 *l.* of that City.

Commune Concilium tent. in Camera Guildhall, Civitatis London, nono Die Septembris 1646.

‘ THIS Court having received a Proposition from the Honourable House of Commons, by a Committee thereof, for the Advance of 200,000 *l.* do humbly return this Answer:

A Proposal from the Citizens thereupon,

‘ That

An. 22. Car. 1.
1646.

September.

‘ That the best Way, in their Opinion, to procure the Advance of the same is, That every Person who hath advanced any Money, Plate, or Horfes, with their Furniture and Arms, upon the Public Faith, may, for every Sum of Money he shall further lend upon this new Proposition, be secured a like Sum more out of the Receipts of the Grand Excise in Course, and the Sale of Bishops Lands, which shall first happen, together with Interest after the Rate of 8*l.* per Cent. per Ann. to be paid every six Months out of the Receipts of the Excise, till Principal and Interest be fully discharged.

‘ As for Example: If there be owing to any Person 100*l.* Principal, which, with Interest due thereupon for three Years past, will make 124*l.* he, advancing 124*l.* more, may be secured for the whole 248*l.* as aforesaid, and so proportionably for a greater or less Sum, and according to the Interest due thereupon: And, for the more speedy reimbursing of the said Monies secured and lent upon this new Proposition, that the said Lands of the Bishops be presently installed and made over unto such Feoffees for the speedy Sale thereof, and such Treasurers for the Receipt of the Monies, as may give best Satisfaction to the Lenders.

‘ And upon the Proposition and Security aforesaid, this Court will contribute their best Endeavours for the raising of the said 200,000*l.* if the Parliament in their Wisdom shall so think fit.’

Which is accepted of by the Commons.

Upon reading the foregoing Proposal from the City of *London*, the Commons having declared, That by the Words *Bishops Lands* they did not intend that either *Impropriations* or *Advowsons* should pass, it was proposed to add *Delinquents Estates*, which was carried by 105 against 100. The Tellers for this Addition, Sir *Arthur Heslrig* and Sir *John Evelyn* of *Wilts*; against it, Mr. *Holles* and Sir *Philip Stapylton*. And the Proposal thus amended was accepted by the House, who re-

returned Thanks to the City for their ready Affec-
tions expressed in this Business.

1646.

September,

After which a Motion being made for desiring the Lords Concurrence with this Proposal from the City, it was carried in the Affirmative by 82 Voices against 64. The Tellers for the Question, Sir *John Trevor* and Sir *Philip Stapylton*; against it, Sir *Peter Wentworth*, and Gen. *Cromwell*.

We have been the more particular in setting down the Numbers on each Division, and the Names of the Tellers on every Question, relating to this Affair, not only from the Importance of the Subject, but as these Particulars will greatly illustrate the subsequent Proceedings in regard to the Scots delivering up the Person of the King to the *English* Parliament.

On the 14th of this Month died, the Parliament's The Death of the
late General, the Earl of *Essex*. The Houses Earl of Essex.
being informed thereof the next Day, they immediately adjourned, *In Sense of the sad Loss of the Earl of Essex, a Person of such eminent Worth and Service to the Parliament; as their Journals express it.*

Although both Mr. *Whitlocke* and Mr. *Rushworth* mention the Death of this Nobleman, yet neither of them acquaint us with the Manner or Occasion of it; which having been much controverted, we shall give the Sentiments of some other Contemporary Writers on that Subject.

One of the *Journalists* of these Times tells us, The Sentiments
'That this Day died the Noble Earl of *Essex*, one of the Contem-
that stood up for, and was constant unto, the In- porary Writers
terest of *England*; and so continued, when others thereupon.
turn'd, and turn'd, and turn'd again. He was but a small Time ill, of a healthful Constitution, and died of an Apoplexy.'

Another expresses himself in this Manner,
'Some say that this Earl died of an Apoplexy,
VOL. XV G some

^a The *Moderate Intelligencer*, No. 80, p. 64.

^b *Micro-Chronicon*, September 14, annex'd to *Mercurius Rusticus*.

An. 22. Car. 1.
1646.

September.

‘ That the best Way, in their Opinion, to procure the Advance of the same is, That every Person who hath advanced any Money, Plate, or Horses, with their Furniture and Arms, upon the Public Faith, may, for every Sum of Money he shall further lend upon this new Proposition, be secured a like Sum more out of the Receipts of the Grand Excise in Course, and the Sale of Bishops Lands, which shall first happen, together with Interest after the Rate of 8*l.* *per Cent.* *per Ann.* to be paid every six Months out of the Receipts of the Excise, till Principal and Interest be fully discharged.

‘ As for Example: If there be owing to any Person 100*l.* Principal, which, with Interest due thereupon for three Years past, will make 124*l.* he, advancing 124*l.* more, may be secured for the whole 248*l.* as aforesaid, and so proportionably for a greater or less Sum, and according to the Interest due thereupon: And, for the more speedy reimbursing of the said Monies secured and lent upon this new Proposition, that the said Lands of the Bishops be presently installed and made over unto such Feoffees for the speedy Sale thereof, and such Treasurers for the Receipt of the Monies, as may give best Satisfaction to the Lenders.

‘ And upon the Proposition and Security aforesaid, this Court will contribute their best Endeavours for the raising of the said 200,000*l.* if the Parliament in their Wisdom shall so think fit.’

Which is accepted of by the Commons.

Upon reading the foregoing Proposal from the City of London, the Commons having declared, That by the Words *Bishops Lands* they did not intend that either *Impropriations* or *Advowsons* should pass, it was proposed to add *Delinquents Estates*, which was carried by 105 against 100. The Tellers for this Addition, Sir Arthur Heslrig and Sir John Evelyn of Wilts; against it, Mr. Holles and Sir Philip Stapylton. And the Proposal thus amended was accepted by the House, who re-

returned Thanks to the City for their ready Affec-
tions expressed in this Business.

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.

September,

After which a Motion being made for desiring the Lords Concurrence with this Proposal from the City, it was carried in the Affirmative by 82 Voices against 64. The Tellers for the Question, Sir *John Trevor* and Sir *Philip Stapylton*; against it, Sir *Peter Wentworth*, and Gen. *Cromwell*.

We have been the more particular in setting down the Numbers on each Division, and the Names of the Tellers on every Question, relating to this Affair, not only from the Importance of the Subject, but as these Particulars will greatly illustrate the subsequent Proceedings in regard to the Scots delivering up the Person of the King to the English Parliament.

On the 14th of this Month died, the Parliament's late General, the Earl of *Essex*. The Houses being informed thereof the next Day, they immediately adjourned, *In Sense of the sad Loss of the Earl of Essex, a Person of such eminent Worth and Service to the Parliament; as their Journals express it.*

The Death of the
Earl of Essex.

Although both Mr. *Whitlocke* and Mr. *Rushworth* mention the Death of this Nobleman, yet neither of them acquaint us with the Manner or Occasion of it; which having been much controverted, we shall give the Sentiments of some other Contemporary Writers on that Subject.

One of the *Journalists* ^a of these Times tells us, 'That this Day died the Noble Earl of *Essex*, one that stood up for, and was constant unto, the Interest of *England*; and so continued, when others turn'd, and turn'd, and turn'd again. He was but a small Time ill, of a healthful Constitution, and died of an Apoplexy.'

The Sentiments
of the Contem-
porary Writers
thereupon.

Another expresses himself in this Manner ^b, 'Some say that this Earl died of an Apoplexy,'

VOL. XV

G

some

^a The *Moderate Intelligencer*, No. 80, p. 647.

^b *Micro-Chronicon*, September 14, annex'd to *Mercurius Rusticus*.

An. 22. Car. 1. agreed to, the following Lords entering their
1646. Names as dissenting thereto,

October.

LINCOLN,
SUFFOLK,
BERKELEY,

WILLOUGHBY,
HUNSDON,
MAYNARD.

Then the next Vote being read, ‘*Resolved, &c.* That this House doth declare, That whatsoever Conference, Consultation, or Debate shall be had with the Commissioners of *Scotland*, concerning the Disposal of the Person of the King, it shall not be understood to be any Capitulation, in relation to retarding the March of the *Scots* Armies and Forces out of the Kingdom, or of any Treaty between the Kingdoms concerning the same.’ And the Question being again put, Whether this Vote should so pass? it was also carried in the Affirmative, without any Dissent enter’d against it. A Committee of fourteen Lords was likewise appointed to confer, consult, and debate on the Subject of the foregoing Votes, with the *Scots* Commissioners; and a proportionable Number of the Commons were desired to join with them, which they agreed to.

A Committee of both Houses appointed to confer with the *Scots* Commissioners thereupon.

October. The chief Business of all this Month was debating and disputing about the Disposal of the King’s Person, in consequence of the foregoing Votes; the Commons positively asserting it as the sole and absolute Right of the *English* Nation, the King being in *England*; and the *Scots* Commissioners as strongly insisting on their Joint Right therein. The Arguments, on the *Scots* Side, are entered in the *Lords Journals*; and were printed in a single Pamphlet of this Time, which is in our Collection, together with some Speeches of the Lord Chancellor of *Scotland*, delivered at different Meetings of the *English* and *Scots* Commissioners for this Business. The Printer of this Pamphlet, we find, was afterwards questioned for it in the House of Lords; tho’, upon proving that it was licensed by one *Mabbot*, assigned to that Office, he was dismissed. But that this Affair was more narrowly

rowly searched into by the Commons, is certain from the Proceedings in their *Journals*: For, upon a strict Examination of the Printers, they found that the Preface to these Speeches, to be printed with them, was given to *Laurence Chapman*, a Bookseller, by the Lord Chancellor of Scotland's own Hand. On which the following Observations were made: First, That to have Arguments held forth to the Kingdom, against the Judgment of Parliament, in Matters of this Importance, is not for the Good of the Kingdom. Next, To have Arguments printed all on one Side, and none of the other, is not to deal fairly with the Kingdom. Lastly, To desire the Lords, That a Committee may be appointed to join with one of their House, to consider of some Way of righting the Houses, and to prevent Inconveniences of the like Nature for the future.

But the *Scots*, being aware of some Impediment to their Pamphlet in *London*, had taken Care to have another printed, by the King's Printer, at *Edinburgh*^a; which, by comparing with the Entries in the *Lords Journals*, is found to agree exactly, except as to the Lord Chancellor's Speeches; which we here also subjoin, in order to set this Argument in its full Light^b.

The LORD-CHANCELLOR of Scotland's first SPEECH at a Conference, in the Painted-Chamber, with a Committee of both Houses, Oct. 1, 1646.

My Lords and Gentlemen,

THE End of this Conference is to advise what is fit to be done for the Peace and Security of the Kingdoms in relation to the King,

An. 22. Car. 1.
1646.

October,

The Earl of London's Speech at the first Meeting of that Committee.

G 3

^a *Evan Tyler.*

^b The Editor of these Speeches introduces them thus to the Reader: *I understand that the Right Hon. the Lord-Chancellor of Scotland had not Right done him by the printed Copy of his Speech to the King's Majesty at Newcastle, concerning the Propositions of Peace, there being in that Copy Errors and Omissions, and both material; which hath moved me to resolve, as to print the former [already given at p. 83.] according to the true Copy, so, for preventing the like Mistakes and Misrepresentations, first to procure to myself, and now to communicate to the public View, the true Transcripts of these last three Speeches.*

. 22. Car. I.
1646.

October.

and how to dispose of his Majesty's Person, which is a Matter very ticklish, and of most high Concernment; and they who would build very high, must dig very low for a firm Foundation: And therefore I shall make bold to desire, That whatever we resolve upon concerning the King's Majesty, it may be done by joint Advice and Consent of both Kingdoms; and that the Unity between the Kingdoms may be inviolably preserved, as that wherein (next to God's Protection) the chief Strength of both lies, which should be laid as a Ground of our future Debates. And because the Purpose we are to speak of is very grave and serious, I shall speak of it with that Sincerity, as I wish my Words were written with the Beams of the Sun, and registered to Posterity, that all the World might see the Candour and Integrity of our Proceedings towards the King and our Brethren of *England*: And, as I had occasion once to express in this Place, so do I now say, That no Man hath Conscience nor Honour who will not remember our Solemn League and Covenant, as the strongest Bond under Heaven between God and Man, between Man and Man, and between Nation and Nation; in which our Unity is founded upon Verity in a threefold Relation, to God, to the King, and amongst ourselves: The first is the greatest, and ascends as high as Heaven; for Religion, which hath its Name *a Religando*, unites us to God himself; and so long as he is in League with us, we need not fear who be against us. Let us therefore hold fast our Unity in Religion, and beware of Toleration of all Religions, which is the ready Way to have none; for there is nothing more divine in God than Unity, and nothing more diabolical in the Devil than Division, who therefore is known to the Vulgar by his cloven Foot to be the Spirit of Division.

The next Ground and Relation of our Unity is with the King, to whom we are bound (in the strictest Bonds of loyal Subjection) by our Allegiance and Covenant, as to one Head and Monarch

narch; and therefore the faithful Endeavours of both Kingdoms should, without wearying, be constantly contributed, that we may be united to him by a happy and just Peace; for if one of the Kingdoms shall cast off the King, and the other have a King; if the one shall make Peace with the King, and the other not make Peace, but be still at Variance with him, it is to be feared that no human Wit nor Policy will be able to keep the two Kingdoms long without a Rupture: And if it please God so to incline the King's Heart, and direct the Wisdom of the Parliaments, as that the King and we could make a happy Agreement, no Power or Policy can be able to divide us; for *qui conveniunt uni tertio, conveniunt inter se.*

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.
October.

‘ The third Ground and Relation of our Unity is the Conjunction of the two Kingdoms; which hath been acknowledged to be so necessary and useful to both, that they have often declared they would stand and fall, and, like *Hippocrates's* Twins, live and dye together. And, therefore, as we regard our Solemn League and Covenant with God Almighty, and tender the Standing and Safety of the Kingdoms; let us, with one Heart and Mind, join our Counsels and Actions, that whatsoever we resolve upon for our common Peace and Security in relation to the King, and of each Kingdom to other, may be done in Zeal to Religion, in Loyalty to the King, and with Unanimity amongst ourselves. And as the *Pythagoreans* did note the Number of two with the Mark of Infamy, as being the first Number that durst part from Unity^m; so, which soever of the Kingdoms shall first violate the Unity which is bound up in our Covenant, may apply it to themselves: But if we shall adhere to that Unity which is builded upon the firm Foundation of Verity, in our Relations to Religion, the King, and amongst ourselves, it will be a threefold Cord which is not easily broken; and

^m Numerus Binarius infamis est, quia primus ausus est discedere ab Unitate.

An. 22. Car. I. and our Unity, I hope, shall be turned into an
1646. Identity, and both Kingdoms may be perfectly one.

October.

‘ Having thus, in the first Place, laid a Ground for Unity of Counsels and Resolutions, I shall, in the next Place, humbly desire and protest, That whatever may be our Propositions or Debates concerning the King, it be not mis-construed as if one of the Kingdoms were imposing Conditions upon the other, or that we are absolutely wedded to any one Desire more than to another; but that (all several Ways being amicably debated and rightly pondered,) that which may serve most for the Safety, Security, and Happiness of the King, and both Kingdoms, may be gravely resolved upon. And now I come to the Question itself, concerning the disposing of his Majesty’s Person; first negatively, and then positively: Negatively, the Question is not of the Power and Authority of the Houses of Parliament in disposing of any Person, or judging of any Case which is of single Concernment to *England*; nor is the Question how the King’s Person may be disposed of, *de Facto*, by any one of the Kingdoms; neither is the Question properly *de jure* & *posse*, but *de esse* & *bene esse*: And as it is neither good Logic nor good Divinity to argue *a posse ad esse*; so sure I am, in this Case, it is far worse Policy for either Kingdom to dispute what they may do in the Height of their Power, when both are consulting what is fittest to be done for the Peace and Security of both. And the Relation of both Kingdoms to his Majesty, and of each Kingdom to other, being rightly considered, as he is King to both; as both are Subjects to him; as both are engaged in the same Cause, and have been in the same War, and are labouring under the same Danger; are seeking the same Remedies, and should have the same Security; we do hold, That the disposing of the King’s Person doth not properly belong to any one of the Kingdoms, but jointly to both. And after *Scotland* hath suffered the Heat of the Day and Winter’s Cold; have forsaken their own Peace for Love of their Brethren;
have

have set their own House on Fire to quench theirs; after so much Expence of their Blood in all the three Kingdoms; after we have gone along with you in all the Hardship of this War, and (without Vanity be it spoken) have been so useful in this Cause; and that the King hath cast himself into the Hands of the Scots Army; and that, by the Blessing of God upon the joint Endeavours of both Kingdoms, we are come to the Harbour of a Peace; we cannot expect that the Honourable Houses will think it agreeable with Conscience or Honour, or with the Justice of the Houses, that the Person of the King should be disposed of by them, as they shall think fit, or by any one of the Kingdoms alone; but that whatever shall be resolved in this may be done by joint Advice of both, as may serve most for the Peace, Security, and Happiness of both Kingdoms.

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.

October.

*The LORD-CHANCELLOR of Scotland's second
SPEECH, Oct. 6.*

My Lords and Gentlemen,

‘**A**T our last Meeting in this Conference, your Lordships did assert the Vote of the Houses, That the Person of the King should be disposed on as the two Houses shall think fit; and we did hold, That the King, who is the Head and Monarch of both Kingdoms, ought not to be disposed of by any one of the Kingdoms, but by joint Advice of both, as might serve most for the Peace, Happiness, and Security of his Majesty and both Kingdoms; which we fortified with several Arguments from the Interests and Relations which both Kingdoms have equally to the King, and from the Covenant and Treaty between the Kingdoms, as the best Way to preserve our Unity. But since your Lordships do adhere to the Vote of the Houses, as that which you cannot part from, we do humbly desire, That your Lordships may be pleased (in Time convenient, at the Close of this

*His Speech at the
second Meeting,*

Con-

An. 22. Car. I.

1646.

October.

Conference) to report the Difference of our Judgment to the Honourable Houses; who, upon better Reasons, both may, and, we hope will, take their Vote into further Consideration: And so, with Reservation of our Judgment, That the disposing of his Majesty's Person doth belong to both, and not any one of the Kingdoms, especially in such a Juncture of Affairs as both Kingdoms stand engaged in this Cause, I shall descend particularly how the King's Person should be disposed of to the best Advantage of both Kingdoms, and for attaining such a happy Peace as all good Men should desire.

But lest we should walk in the Dark upon Obscurity of ambiguous Words, I shall desire, That the Words *Disposing of the King's Person* may be rightly understood, and the true Sense of it may be clearly known: For, *Dolus versatur in Uniuersalibus*. And, *To dispose of the King's Person, as both Houses, or both Kingdoms, shall think fit*, may, in some Sense, be to *depose*, or worse: But because the Word *dispose* may admit a more benign Interpretation, as when Men commit their Estates and Children, or that which is dearest to them to be disposed of (which is but to be advised) by those who have nearest Relation to them, and in whom they repose most Trust, I shall speak of the disposing of his Majesty's Royal Person in that Sense, which, I hope, is also the Sense of the Houses. Nor do I know any other Way how his Majesty's Person can be disposed of, but that he be put either under Restraint, or be at Freedom with Honour and Safety: As for the Way of Restraint, I look upon it as it looks upon us, as a Remedy more dangerous than the Disease; and as a Mean to draw the War of foreign Kings upon us, (especially the Prince being in other Kingdoms) rather than to quiet our Troubles at home. And therefore supposing that none of the Kingdoms will take any Way concerning his Majesty's Person, but such as may

con-

consist with Duty and Honour, and which may lessen, and not increase our Troubles, I shall lay aside the Way of Restraint; and speak of the Way which may be with Freedom, Honour, and Safety, which can be no other but that his Majesty shall go into *Scotland*, or come to his Parliament here, or some of his Houses near abouts.

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.
October.

His going into *Scotland* is full of Dangers and Inconveniences to both Kingdoms: The *Amalekites* are not yet driven out of that Land: The bloody barbarous *Irish*, banded with a wicked Crew of Malignants, possess the Mountains and Highlands, which are the Strong-holds and never-conquer'd Parts of that Kingdom. They have not laid down Arms, but keep in a Body together; and they are so near *Ireland*, as the Forces of the Rebels there may in two or three Hours Space come over and join with them; and *Scotland* not being able to keep and entertain Armies long, the King, being there, may raise such Forces in *Scotland*, as may make Way quickly into *England*. And therefore his Majesty's going into *Scotland*, before our Peace be settled, being of most dangerous Consequence to both Kingdoms, I shall humbly offer to your Lordships Consideration his Majesty's coming to *London*, or some of his Houses hereabouts, as the most probable Way to procure a speedy and happy Agreement; which is also his Majesty's own Desire in his Answer to the Propositions. And although no Persuasion of ours could prevail to procure a more satisfactory Answer for the Time, than what is returned to the Houses of Parliament, yet I assure your Lordships that the Committee of Estates of the Parliament of *Scotland*, and the Noblemen who were at *Newcastle*, did faithfully contribute their best Endeavours that his Majesty might have given his Assent to the Propositions: And as we did then deliver our Minds with that Plainness and Freedom which was fit for faithful and loyal Subjects, with no less Regard to this Kingdom than our own Nation;

so

An. 22. Car. I.

1646.

September,

some of a Surfeit, others of the Plague, and many thought he was poison'd; but whether he was or not, it was confessed by all Men that he died suddenly; and it is most certain the Parliament suspected him to harbour some honourable Thoughts of his Majesty, and that was Reason enough to kill him by one Means or other.—The Truth of this last Assertion we know not; but thus much appears from the *Journals* of the Commons, that they look'd upon it as so scandalous a Reflection, that they appointed a Committee to find out the Author and Printer of this News Paper.

Lord *Clarendon*^c agrees with the last Writer as to the Rumour of the Earl's being poison'd, and his good Intentions towards the King; which last he imputes 'to a Resentment of the Indignities himself had received from the ungrateful Parliament, and a wonderful Apprehension and Detestation of the Ruin he saw like to befall the King and the Kingdom;' adding, 'That *Cromwell* and his Party were wonderfully exalted with his Death, he being the only Person whose Credit and Interest they fear'd without any Esteem of his Person.'

Mr. *Ludlow* informs us^d, 'That the Earl's Death was occasioned by his having over-heated himself in the Chace of a Stag in *Windsor Forest*; and that it was a great Loss to those of his Party, who, to keep up their Spirits and Credit, procured his Funeral to be celebrated with great Magnificence, at the Charge of the Public.' By which Manner of Expression, he seems to confirm the foregoing Observations as to the Earl's Inclinations towards the King. He also concurs with Lord *Clarendon*'s Opinion of *Cromwell*, saying, 'He was persuaded the Lieutenant-General had already conceived the Design of destroying the Civil Authority, and setting up for himself.'

This Digression concerning a Nobleman, who made so great a Figure in the Transactions of these

^c History, 8vo. Edition, Vol. V, p. 42.

^d *Memoirs*, Vol. 1, p. 185.

these Times, will, we presume, be thought neither tedious nor unnecessary^e. An. 22. Car. I. 1646.

But besides the Loss which the Lords had sustained by the Death of this Peer, the whole Power and Authority of that House began now to totter. September.
Lilburne's Attack against this Body was not singular; there were many other Pamphlets published about this Time, endeavouring to sap the Foundation of the antient Jurisdiction of the Peers. The Lords order a Pamphlet, wrote against the Peerage, to be burnt,
 One of these, particularly, was censured the 16th of this Month by the Lords, and ordered to be burnt by the Hands of the common Hangman. It had this bold Title, *A Defiance against the arbitrary Usurpations, or Encroachments, either of the House of Lords, or any other, upon the Sovereignty of the House of Commons the High Court of Judicature of the Land; or upon the Rights, Properties, and Freedoms of the People in general.*

Sept. 24. A Message came up from the Commons this Day, to put the Lords in mind of two Votes concerning the Disposal of the Person of the King, which had laid before them a long Time. The Lords ordered these Votes to be immediately read, and went into a Committee to consider of them; and, after a very long Debate, as the *Journals* express it, the House being resumed, the Question was put, Whether the two Votes, as sent up from the House of Commons, should now pass? the Numbers stood eleven and eleven. Then a second Question was put, Whether the House should sit that Afternoon, and debate this Business again? and it passed in the Affirmative.

Accordingly, at the said Time, it was again debated, and the first Vote being read *in hæc Verba*, 'Resolved, upon the Question, That the Person of the King shall be disposed of as both Houses of the Parliament of *England* shall think fit,' it was And agree to two Votes of the Commons concerning the Disposal of the King's Person;

G 2

agreed

^e September 16. The Lords ordered a Writ to be sent to Sir *Walter Devereux*, Bart. to take his Seat in their House as Viscount *Hereford*, that Honour descending to him by the Earl of *Essex's* Death without Issue.

100 *The Parliamentary History.*

An. 22. Car. I. agreed to, the following Lords entering their
1646. Names as dissenting thereto,

October.

LINCOLN,
SUFFOLK,
BERKELEY,

WILLOUGHBY,
HUNSDON,
MAYNARD.

A Committee of
both Houses ap-
pointed to confer
with the Scots
Commissioners
thereupon.

Then the next Vote being read, ‘*Resolved, &c.*
That this House doth declare, That whatsoever
Conference, Consultation, or Debate shall be had
with the Commissioners of *Scotland*, concerning
the Disposal of the Person of the King, it shall
not be understood to be any Capitulation, in rela-
tion to retarding the March of the *Scots* Armies and
Forces out of the Kingdom, or of any Treaty be-
tween the Kingdoms concerning the same.’ And
the Question being again put, Whether this Vote
should so pass? it was also carried in the Affirma-
tive, without any Dissent enter’d against it. A
Committee of fourteen Lords was likewise ap-
pointed to confer, consult, and debate on the Sub-
ject of the foregoing Votes, with the *Scots* Com-
missioners; and a proportionable Number of the
Commons were desired to join with them, which
they agreed to.

October. The chief Business of all this Month
was debating and disputing about the Disposal of
the King’s Person, in consequence of the forego-
ing Votes; the Commons positively asserting it as
the sole and absolute Right of the *English* Nation,
the King being in *England*; and the *Scots* Com-
missioners as strongly insisting on their Joint Right
therein. The Arguments, on the *Scots* Side, are
entered in the *Lords Journals*; and were printed in
a single Pamphlet of this Time, which is in our
Collection, together with some Speeches of the
Lord Chancellor of *Scotland*, delivered at different
Meetings of the *English* and *Scots* Commis-
sioners for this Business. The Printer of this Pam-
phlet, we find, was afterwards questioned for it in
the House of Lords; tho’, upon proving that it was
licensed by one *Mabbot*, assigned to that Office, he
was dismissed. But that this Affair was more nar-
rowly

rowly searched into by the Commons, is certain from the Proceedings in their *Journals*: For, upon a strict Examination of the Printers, they found that the Preface to these Speeches, to be printed with them, was given to *Laurence Chapman*, a Bookseller, by the Lord Chancellor of Scotland's own Hand. On which the following Observations were made: First, That to have Arguments held forth to the Kingdom, against the Judgment of Parliament, in Matters of this Importance, is not for the Good of the Kingdom. Next, To have Arguments printed all on one Side, and none of the other, is not to deal fairly with the Kingdom. Lastly, To desire the Lords, That a Committee may be appointed to join with one of their House, to consider of some Way of righting the Houses, and to prevent Inconveniences of the like Nature for the future.

But the *Scots*, being aware of some Impediment to their Pamphlet in *London*, had taken Care to have another printed, by the King's Printer, at *Edinburgh*^a; which, by comparing with the Entries in the *Lords Journals*, is found to agree exactly, except as to the Lord Chancellor's Speeches; which we here also subjoin, in order to set this Argument in its full Light^b.

The LORD-CHANCELLOR of Scotland's first SPEECH at a Conference, in the Painted-Chamber, with a Committee of both Houses, Oct. 1, 1646.

My Lords and Gentlemen,

THE End of this Conference is to advise what is fit to be done for the Peace and Security of the Kingdoms in relation to the King,

An. 22. Car. 1.
1646.

October,

The Earl of London's Speech at the first Meeting of that Committee.

G 3

^a *Evan Tyler.*

^b The Editor of these Speeches introduces them thus to the Reader: *I understand that the Right Hon. the Lord-Chancellor of Scotland had not Right done him by the printed Copy of his Speech to the King's Majesty at Newcastle, concerning the Propositions of Peace, there being in that Copy Errors and Omissions, and both material; which hath moved me to resolve, as to print the former [already given at p. 83.] according to the true Copy, so, for preventing the like Mistakes and Misrepresentations, first to procure to myself, and now to communicate to the public View, the true Transcripts of these last three Speeches.*

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.

October.

and how to dispose of his Majesty's Person, which is a Matter very ticklish, and of most high Concernment; and they who would build very high, must dig very low for a firm Foundation: And therefore I shall make bold to desire, That whatever we resolve upon concerning the King's Majesty, it may be done by joint Advice and Consent of both Kingdoms; and that the Unity between the Kingdoms may be inviolably preserved, as that wherein (next to God's Protection) the chief Strength of both lies, which should be laid as a Ground of our future Debates. And because the Purpose we are to speak of is very grave and serious, I shall speak of it with that Sincerity, as I wish my Words were written with the Beams of the Sun, and registered to Posterity, that all the World might see the Candour and Integrity of our Proceedings towards the King and our Brethren of *England*: And, as I had occasion once to express in this Place, so do I now say, That no Man hath Conscience nor Honour who will not remember our Solemn League and Covenant, as the strongest Bond under Heaven between God and Man, between Man and Man, and between Nation and Nation; in which our Unity is founded upon Verity in a threefold Relation, to God, to the King, and amongst ourselves: The first is the greatest, and ascends as high as Heaven; for Religion, which hath its Name *a Religando*, unites us to God himself; and so long as he is in League with us, we need not fear who be against us. Let us therefore hold fast our Unity in Religion, and beware of Toleration of all Religions, which is the ready Way to have none; for there is nothing more divine in God than Unity, and nothing more diabolical in the Devil than Division, who therefore is known to the Vulgar by his cloven Foot to be the Spirit of Division.

The next Ground and Relation of our Unity is with the King, to whom we are bound (in the strictest Bonds of loyal Subjection) by our Allegiance and Covenant, as to one Head and Monarch

narch; and therefore the faithful Endeavours of both Kingdoms should, without wearying, be constantly contributed, that we may be united to him by a happy and just Peace; for if one of the Kingdoms shall cast off the King, and the other have a King; if the one shall make Peace with the King, and the other not make Peace, but be still at Variance with him, it is to be feared that no human Wit nor Policy will be able to keep the two Kingdoms long without a Rupture: And if it please God so to incline the King's Heart, and direct the Wisdom of the Parliaments, as that the King and we could make a happy Agreement, no Power or Policy can be able to divide us; for *qui conveniunt uni tertio, conveniunt inter se.*

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.
October.

‘ The third Ground and Relation of our Unity is the Conjunction of the two Kingdoms; which hath been acknowledged to be so necessary and useful to both, that they have often declared they would stand and fall, and, like *Hippocrates's* Twins, live and dye together. And, therefore, as we regard our Solemn League and Covenant with God Almighty, and tender the Standing and Safety of the Kingdoms; let us, with one Heart and Mind, join our Counsels and Actions, that whatsoever we resolve upon for our common Peace and Security in relation to the King, and of each Kingdom to other, may be done in Zeal to Religion, in Loyalty to the King, and with Unanimity amongst ourselves. And as the *Pythagoreans* did note the Number of two with the Mark of Infamy, as being the first Number that durst part from Unity^m; so, which soever of the Kingdoms shall first violate the Unity which is bound up in our Covenant, may apply it to themselves: But if we shall adhere to that Unity which is builded upon the firm Foundation of Verity, in our Relations to Religion, the King, and amongst ourselves, it will be a threefold Cord which is not easily broken; and

^m Numerus Binarius infamis est, quia primus ausus est discedere ab Unitate.

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.

October.

and our Unity, I hope, shall be turned into an Identity, and both Kingdoms may be perfectly one.

‘ Having thus, in the first Place, laid a Ground for Unity of Counsels and Resolutions, I shall, in the next Place, humbly desire and protest, That whatever may be our Propositions or Debates concerning the King, it be not mis-construed as if one of the Kingdoms were imposing Conditions upon the other, or that we are absolutely wedded to any one Desire more than to another; but that (all several Ways being amicably debated and rightly pondered,) that which may serve most for the Safety, Security, and Happiness of the King, and both Kingdoms, may be gravely resolved upon. And now I come to the Question itself, concerning the disposing of his Majesty’s Person; first negatively, and then positively: Negatively, the Question is not of the Power and Authority of the Houses of Parliament in disposing of any Person, or judging of any Case which is of single Concernment to *England*; nor is the Question how the King’s Person may be disposed of, *de Facto*, by any one of the Kingdoms; neither is the Question properly *de jure & posse*, but *de esse & bene esse*: And as it is neither good Logic nor good Divinity to argue *a posse ad esse*; so sure I am, in this Case, it is far worse Policy for either Kingdom to dispute what they may do in the Height of their Power, when both are consulting what is fittest to be done for the Peace and Security of both. And the Relation of both Kingdoms to his Majesty, and of each Kingdom to other, being rightly considered, as he is King to both; as both are Subjects to him; as both are engaged in the same Cause, and have been in the same War, and are labouring under the same Danger; are seeking the same Remedies, and should have the same Security; we do hold, That the disposing of the King’s Person doth not properly belong to any one of the Kingdoms, but jointly to both. And after *Scotland* hath suffered the Heat of the Day and Winter’s Cold; have forsaken their own Peace for Love of their Brethren;
have

have set their own House on Fire to quench theirs; after so much Expence of their Blood in all the three Kingdoms; after we have gone along with you in all the Hardship of this War, and (without Vanity be it spoken) have been so useful in this Cause; and that the King hath cast himself into the Hands of the Scots Army; and that, by the Blessing of God upon the joint Endeavours of both Kingdoms, we are come to the Harbour of a Peace; we cannot expect that the Honourable Houses will think it agreeable with Conscience or Honour, or with the Justice of the Houses, that the Person of the King should be disposed of by them, as they shall think fit, or by any one of the Kingdoms alone; but that whatever shall be resolved in this may be done by joint Advice of both, as may serve most for the Peace, Security, and Happiness of both Kingdoms.

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.
October.

*The LORD-CHANCELLOR of Scotland's second
SPEECH, Oct. 6.*

My Lords and Gentlemen,

AT our last Meeting in this Conference, your Lordships did assert the Vote of the Houses, That the Person of the King should be disposed on as the two Houses shall think fit; and we did hold, That the King, who is the Head and Monarch of both Kingdoms, ought not to be disposed of by any one of the Kingdoms, but by joint Advice of both, as might serve most for the Peace, Happiness, and Security of his Majesty and both Kingdoms; which we fortified with several Arguments from the Interests and Relations which both Kingdoms have equally to the King, and from the Covenant and Treaty between the Kingdoms, as the best Way to preserve our Unity. But since your Lordships do adhere to the Vote of the Houses, as that which you cannot part from, we do humbly desire, That your Lordships may be pleased (in Time convenient, at the Close of this

His Speech at the
second Meeting,

Con-

An. 22. Car. I.

1646.

October.

Conference) to report the Difference of our Judgment to the Honourable Houses; who, upon better Reasons, both may, and, we hope will, take their Vote into further Consideration: And so, with Reservation of our Judgment, That the disposing of his Majesty's Person doth belong to both, and not any one of the Kingdoms, especially in such a Juncture of Affairs as both Kingdoms stand engaged in this Cause, I shall descend particularly how the King's Person should be disposed of to the best Advantage of both Kingdoms, and for attaining such a happy Peace as all good Men should desire.

‘ But lest we should walk in the Dark upon Obscurity of ambiguous Words, I shall desire, That the Words *Disposing of the King's Person* may be rightly understood, and the true Sense of it may be clearly known: For, *Dolus versatur in Universalibus*. And, *To dispose of the King's Person, as both Houses, or both Kingdoms, shall think fit*, may, in some Sense, be to *depose*, or worse: But because the Word *dispose* may admit a more benign Interpretation, as when Men commit their Estates and Children, or that which is dearest to them to be disposed of (which is but to be advised) by those who have nearest Relation to them, and in whom they repose most Trust, I shall speak of the disposing of his Majesty's Royal Person in that Sense, which, I hope, is also the Sense of the Houses. Nor do I know any other Way how his Majesty's Person can be disposed of, but that he be put either under Restraint, or be at Freedom with Honour and Safety: As for the Way of Restraint, I look upon it as it looks upon us, as a Remedy more dangerous than the Disease; and as a Mean to draw the War of foreign Kings upon us, (especially the Prince being in other Kingdoms) rather than to quiet our Troubles at home. And therefore supposing that none of the Kingdoms will take any Way concerning his Majesty's Person, but such as may

con-

consist with Duty and Honour, and which may lessen, and not increase our Troubles, I shall lay aside the Way of Restraint; and speak of the Way which may be with Freedom, Honour, and Safety, which can be no other but that his Majesty shall go into *Scotland*, or come to his Parliament here, or some of his Houses near abouts.

An. 22. Car. I.

1646.

October.

His going into *Scotland* is full of Dangers and Inconveniences to both Kingdoms: The *Amalekites* are not yet driven out of that Land: The bloody barbarous *Irish*, banded with a wicked Crew of Malignants, possess the Mountains and Highlands, which are the Strong-holds and never-conquer'd Parts of that Kingdom. They have not laid down Arms, but keep in a Body together; and they are so near *Ireland*, as the Forces of the Rebels there may in two or three Hours Space come over and join with them; and *Scotland* not being able to keep and entertain Armies long, the King, being there, may raise such Forces in *Scotland*, as may make Way quickly into *England*. And therefore his Majesty's going into *Scotland*, before our Peace be settled, being of most dangerous Consequence to both Kingdoms, I shall humbly offer to your Lordships Consideration his Majesty's coming to *London*, or some of his Houses hereabouts, as the most probable Way to procure a speedy and happy Agreement; which is also his Majesty's own Desire in his Answer to the Propositions. And although no Persuasion of ours could prevail to procure a more satisfactory Answer for the Time, than what is returned to the Houses of Parliament, yet I assure your Lordships that the Committee of Estates of the Parliament of *Scotland*, and the Noblemen who were at *Newcastle*, did faithfully contribute their best Endeavours that his Majesty might have given his Assent to the Propositions: And as we did then deliver our Minds with that Plainness and Freedom which was fit for faithful and loyal Subjects, with no less Regard to this Kingdom than our own Nation; so

An. 22. Car. 1.
1646.

October.

so are we now, with the same Candour and Tenderness of Affection, willing and ready to concur with the Honourable Houses in every Thing which may promote the great Work of Reformation; and settle Religion, according to the Covenant, with a well-grounded Peace. And for these Ends we desire that his Majesty's Answer may be improved to the best Advantage of the Publick.

‘ For albeit the King hath not given a present Assent to the Propositions, yet he hath not in his Answer refused them; but doth promise, That he will chearfully grant and give his Assent unto all such Bills (at the Desire of the two Houses) and reasonable Demands for *Scotland*, which shall be really for the Good and Peace of his People: To which End he desireth and proposeth, That he may come to *London*, or any of his Houses thereabouts, upon Security that he shall be there with Honour, Freedom, and Safety, as the best Expedient to procure a happy Agreement between his Majesty and his Parliament; which we desire may be weighed in the Balance of righteous Judgment, as a Business of the greatest Consequence which can fall within human Consideration, and wherein the Glory of God is most concerned of any Business under Heaven. For upon a blessed Agreement between the King and his Parliament, Religion and Righteousness, Truth and Peace, which are the Compend and Height of all Happiness, will be established, to the eternal Fame and Glory of *Great Britain*, and the great Comfort of all the Protestant Churches; and upon our Disagreement, all the Calamities of a bloody and unnatural War will be continued, and nothing heard nor seen in Church nor State but Confusion. God hath brought both Kingdoms, through the Surges and Waves of a boisterous Tempest, into the Harbour of a Peace, and hath scattered most Part of our Enemies; and now our Work is how to come ashore, and establish a right Peace. I hope, it is as far from our Desires and Intentions, as it is against our Covenant and Professions, to change the Fundamental Go-

Government. We have need to take heed, that we run not from one Extreme into another; *Dum Stulti vitant Vitia, in contraria currunt*: Therefore our Study should be how to cure the Wound which our Sins and the evil Counsels of others have made between the King and his Parliament, to make up the Breach, and not make it wider.

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.
October.

‘ It hath been universally acknowledged, That the King’s Removal from his Parliament is the immediate and chief Cause of all the War, Mischiefs, and Calamities of the Kingdoms: Then his Majesty’s Presence in joining with his Parliament must be the best, if not the only Remedy to remove our Troubles; for it is a Maxim no less true than common, that *Contraries have contrary Consequents*.ⁿ

‘ The King desires to come to his Parliament, not only to have his Doubts cleared, and have those Difficulties explained which hinder his Consent to the Propositions as they now stand; but likewise that his Coming may raise a mutual Confidence between him and his Parliament: If the last were done, the first would soon be performed, and all those Mountains of Difficulties would easily be removed, and become Vallies.

‘ Your Commissioners had no Power to give any Reasons, no not so much as tell what is the Meaning of any of your Demands, nor hearken to any Desire of the King’s: And certainly some Things might be justly moved by his Majesty, which are necessary for the Crown and a well-grounded Peace, as, That he may have his Revenues; That he may return with Honour and Safety to his Crown and Government: And if the King were with his Parliament, where he might both give and receive Satisfaction, he might, with Reason, be convinced to assent to what he now conceives to be unreasonable.

‘ The making of a Peace is so great and glorious a Work, and so acceptable to all good Men, and to the whole People, that it would (after so great

ⁿ *Contrariarum Contraria sunt Consequentia.*

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.

October.

great Trouble) be like Rain to the new mown Grass, or like a Resurrection from the Dead, and is a Work worthy of a King's Presence: And the King may, without Arrogancy, desire that Glory to himself, the more to re-ingratiating him to his People, and not devolve that Honour wholly to any other, wherein he himself ought to be the prime Actor. And therefore the King's Presence with his Parliament, is the most probable Way to attain to a speedy and blessed Peace; which certainly will be the more durable, if it be with the Goodliking of both Sides.

I know there is one common Objection (and I know not another) wherewith many are possess'd and prejudiced against the King's Coming to his Parliament, That his Presence may breed Division, and that he may thereafter withdraw and continue our Troubles. Unity and Concord, I confess, is that by which Kingdoms and Common-Wealths do flourish; and there is nothing more dangerous than Division, *Concordiâ enim Res parvæ crescunt, Discordiâ vero maximæ dilabuntur*. But is there any greater or more dangerous Division, than to have the Head divided from the Body? To have the King divided from his Parliament, the Representative Body of the Kingdom, whereof he is the Head? Hath not this Division divided Brother against Brother, the Father against the Son, and the Son against the Father, and Country against Country? This Division is the Cause of all our other Divisions: Take this away and all our other Divisions are at an End; *Ablatâ Causâ tollitur Effectus*. The King doth, with all Earnestness, desire to be joined with you; and stands more in need of Reconciliation, and I hope will, according to his Profession, endeavour it, rather than Division: And, I trust, the Wisdom of the Honourable Houses is such as they will do so too, and rather be reconciled to the King, than divide amongst ourselves. And that Argument, not to admit of the King's Coming to his Parliament, because his Presence may breed Division, is an Argument to debar

debar him perpetually from his Parliament. And now the Case is altered from what it was, when it was thought unfit that the King should come to his Parliament, because then he had Forces in the Field, Garrisons and Strong-holds to return to: Now he hath none of these against you, and his Desire of coming to his Parliament cannot be but with Resolution to agree and stay with you; for if he were once with you, where can he go from you? And if they were esteemed Enemies to the Parliament and the Peace of the Kingdoms, who advised the King to withdraw from his Parliament, what Estimation will the World have of them who will not suffer him to return to his Parliament, when he offers to cast himself into your Arms? Nor can there be a more real Testimony of our Respect and Affection to *England*, than that we desire he may be with you, and be advised by you; neither can you have any greater Honour, than that (after you have dissipated your Enemies) his Majesty is willing to return to you: And if so kind an Offer shall be refused, and the King driven to Despair, it is to be feared these Kingdoms will be involved in greater Difficulties than ever; and we shall be driven out of the Harbour and Entrance of a Peace, into the Tempest of new and bloody Wars.

‘ For although *Scotland* be most willing and desirous that the King should return to his Parliament with Honour, Safety, and Freedom; and that he may remain where his personal Presence may serve most for the Security and Happiness of his People; yet if any such Course shall be taken, or any Demand made, for rendering of his Person, which cannot stand with his Honour and Safety; or which cannot consist with our Duty, Allegiance, and Covenant; nor with the Honour of that Army, to whom (in Time of his extreme Danger) he had his Recourse for Safety; it cannot be expected that we can be capable of so base an Act. And if (to shun this, and avoid Occasion of quarrelling between the Kingdoms) he shall go to *Scotland*, and resent his Expulsion out of *England*, and crave the

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.

October.

Assist-

112 *The Parliamentary History*

AN. 22. CAR. I.
1646.

October.

Assistance of that Kingdom for Recovery of his Right to his Crown, he may in a short Time raise such Forces in *Scotland* and *Ireland*, as, with the Assistance of foreign Princes, these Kingdoms may be made a Field of Blood, and the youngest amongst us not live to see the End of these unnatural Wars: But if the present Opportunity be wisely managed, and that we maintain the just Privileges of Parliament and Liberty of the Subject in both Kingdoms, with that Wisdom and Discretion as that may be given to God which is God's, and to *Cæsar* what is *Cæsar's*; if we fear God and the King, and do not meddle with them who are given to change; that same Divine Providence and Wisdom, which hath brought us through many Difficulties, will also teach us how to establish these Kingdoms in Peace, and the King's Throne in Righteousness, that the great Blessing of a constant and friendly Conjunction of the two Kingdoms (now united by Allegiance and loyal Subjection to one Sovereign and Head) may be firmly observed and continued to all Posterity.

*The LORD-CHANCELLOR of Scotland's third
SPEECH, Oct. 10.*

My Lords and Gentlemen,

And at the third. **T**HIS Day I hope will bring our Conference to some Results to be reported to the Houses; and therefore I shall frame my Discourse and Arguments with that Succinctness as may bring us soonest to a Close.

At our first Meeting, the Subject of our Debate was, Whether the Right and Power of disposing of the Person of the King is solely in the two Houses as they shall think fit, or in the two Kingdoms; and, at our last Meeting, we had some Arguing about the same Question, but your Lordships did still assert the Vote of the Houses; and we say, (in respect of the Interest and Relations which both Kingdoms have equally to the King, especially in the present Juncture of Affairs, when
both

both Kingdoms are entered in the same League and Covenant, have jeopardard their Lives in the same War, are labouring under the same Danger, are seeking the same Remedies, and stand in need of the same Peace and Security; and both Kingdoms are bound by our Covenant to preserve Unity, and are obliged by Treaty that none of us shall make any Peace, Cessation, or Agreement whatsoever, without mutual Advice and Consent of both) That the Person of the King cannot be disposed of without the joint Advice and Consent of both Kingdoms: But as we do acknowledge that *England* hath Parity of Interest with *Scotland*, so we do still offer they shall have Parity of Power in disposing of the King: And we do affirm, That the Person of the King, who is King of *Scotland* as well as of *England*, and is Head and Monarch of both Kingdoms, cannot be disposed of by any one of the Kingdoms alone; but whatever is to be done concerning the disposing of his Majesty's Person, ought to be done by joint Advice and common Consent of both, as may serve most for the Peace, Security, and Happiness of the King and Kingdoms; which we did prove by several Arguments, to which there was nothing answered in effect, but *That the King being within England, his Person was to be disposed of as the two Houses shall think fit; and that the King being with the Scots Army, and they being paid by the Parliament of England, he is in effect in the Power of the Houses, and ought to be at their disposing; in the same Way as if he had come to the Army of Sir Thomas Fairfax, or any other of the Parliament's Armies.*

An. 22. Car. I.

1646.

October.

‘To this we shall not need to make any other Reply than what we have made already, That the King's present Residence in *England*, nor no Locality, can take away the Reality of our Relations formerly mentioned by us; far less can it take away the Engagements and Stipulations between the Kingdoms; and though the *Scots Army* be paid

An. 22. Car. 1.
1646.

October.

by the Parliament of *England*, yet they are the Army of *Scotland*, raised for the Pursuance of the Ends of the Covenant, and are to be ordered and directed by the Parliaments or Committees of both Kingdoms : And therefore they cannot, with Conscience, Duty, or Honour, deliver the Person of the King, without his own Consent, to be disposed of as the two Houses shall think fit : But we have declared, and do still declare, That we are content the Person of the King be disposed of (the Word *disposed* being taken in a right Sense) as may serve most for the Peace, Safety, Security, Honour, and Happiness of the King and both Kingdoms ; and did offer to your Lordships Consideration his Majesty's coming to or near *London*, as the most probable Means to procure a speedy and well-grounded Peace. And seeing your Lordships have done us the Honour to meet with us in this free and brotherly Conference, we do expect that you will concur and assent to this Proposition, or propound a better Expedient for the Good of both Kingdoms.

‘ But if the Honourable Houses will not admit of this Proposition, our next Desire is, (that it may appear no lawful and possible Means are left unessayed which may procure a happy Agreement betwixt the King and his Parliaments, and for our further Exoneration) That Commissioners may yet once more be sent from both Kingdoms to his Majesty, to shew the Meaning of our Propositions, and to assert them, and to hear the King's Doubts and Difficulties and Desires ; who may further intimate, that (if his Majesty shall not give a satisfactory Answer to the Propositions) then both Kingdoms will, without making any such farther Application to him, take such Course as they shall judge fittest for the Peace and Security of the Kingdoms.

‘ And as, at the beginning of this Conference, I did begin with a most lawful and laudable Desire for Union betwixt the King, and

and among ourselves, so shall I close in the same An. 22. Car. I.
Dialect. For the first, of Religion: If we do re- 1646.
member our Vows to God to perform them, and October.
shall endeavour really, constantly, and sincerely,
the Reformation of Religion, and Uniformity ac-
cording to our Covenant, we may certainly ex-
pect that God will crown this great Work, where-
in he hath honoured us to be Actors, with his
Blessing; but if in place of Uniformity, which
we are obliged to endeavour, there shall be
a Toleration of all Sects and Sorts of Religion;
and if we neglect to build the House of God, and
become insolent upon our Successes, although we
could mount up with Eagle's Wings, and build
our Nests as high as the Stars, and had an Army
who, for Valour and Strength, could march to
Constantinople, God shall lay our Glory low in
the Dust, and suffer the Work to fall in our Hands,
like the Confusion of *Babel*: And whatever hath
been moved by us concerning the King, we desire
it may be rightly constructed, as proceeding from
such as have not wavered from their first Principles;
for when the King was in the Height of his Power,
we did not, and I hope, never shall, flatter him;
and when the Enemy was in the Height of their
Pride and Strength, *Scotland* did fear no Colours:
And now, when the King is at his lowest Ebb,
and hath cast himself into our Army for Safety,
we hope your Lordships will pardon us, from our
Sense of Honour and Duty, to be very tender of
the Person and Posterity of the King, to whom
we have so many near Relations; and not like the
worste of us, that we cannot so far forget our Al-
legiance and Duty, as not to have an Antipathy
against the Change of Monarchical Government,
in which we have lived through the Descent of so
many Kings, and under which both Kingdoms
have been govern'd so many Ages, and flourished
in all Happiness. And now my last Word shall
be for constant Unity between the Kingdoms;
which as it hath been the chief Means to promote
work wherein both Kingdoms are so
H 2 deeply

An. 22. Car. 1.

1646.

October.

deeply engaged, so there is nothing can make us so formidable to our Enemies, nor so much aiding one to another, as the cherishing and continuing thereof; and I dare say that no Man would divide the one from the other, but such as desire to fish in troubled Waters, and are real Enemies to both. God hath blest'd the joint Endeavours of both Nations; both are in one Ship, and are come thro' a very great Storm; and now, when we are come into the Harbour, it would be great Shame to both to split upon the Rocks of Division, & *devorato Bove deficere in Cauda*; and your Lordships may be confident that *Scotland*, who have esteem'd no Hazard too great for settling of Religion and Love to their Brethren, will stick so fast and firmly to you, so long as you hold the Principles of your Covenant, as no Fear nor Favour will ever be able to divide them from you; and we do expect that reciprocal Amity which may perpetuate our Unity.

Some PAPERS given in, by the COMMISSIONERS of the PARLIAMENT of Scotland, to the Honourable Houses of the PARLIAMENT of England, in Answer to their Votes of the 24th of September, 1646, concerning the Disposing of his Majesty's Person^a.

For the Right Honourable, the SPEAKER of the House of PEERS pro Tempore.

Right Honourable,

WE do herewith present to the Honourable Houses two Papers, in Answer to their Votes of the 24th of September; wherein we have contributed our best Endeavours to come to a speedy

^a Mr. *Rusbecorth* mentions these Papers, and takes Notice of the before-mentioned Circumstance of their being sold at the Press in *London*, but prints only such Part thereof as is quoted in the Commons Answer thereto, which will appear in the *Proceedings* next Month. Hence it is probable that he had not the *MS.* as printed by their Commissioners Order.—To the Nation, we have therefore printed the whole first Edition thereof, published under their own Direc^t

‘ speedy Agreement in the great Affairs now in
 ‘ Agitation, and to preserve and continue a firm
 ‘ Correspondence between the Kingdoms: And
 ‘ we cannot but promise to ourselves, that we shall
 ‘ meet with the same Affections in the Honourable
 ‘ Houses; that all Differences being determined,
 ‘ and all just Desires satisfied, these Kingdoms may
 ‘ still remain in a sweet Concord and brotherly
 ‘ Conjunction, than which nothing can be more
 ‘ acceptable to

An. 22. Car. I.
 1646.
 October.

Your Lordship's

*Worcester-House,
 October 20, 1646.*

Most humble Servants,

LOUDON,	A. JOHNSTON,
LAUDERDALE,	CHARLES ERSKINE,
HUGH KENNEDY,	RO. BARCLAY.

October 20, 1646.

‘ **H**AVING received the Votes of both Houses, A Paper present-
 ‘ dated the 24th of September, concerning ed to the Lords,
 ‘ the disposing of the King's Person as both Houses by the Scots
 ‘ of Parliament shall think fit; although we judge Commissioners,
 ‘ (as in Charity we ought) that it is not the Mean- occasioned by the
 ‘ ing and Intention of the Honourable Houses, to Votes concern-
 ‘ claim or assume to themselves the whole and sole ing the Disposal
 ‘ Power to dispose of his Majesty's Person, of the King's
 ‘ which Person.
 ‘ is known to be a Matter, as of high, so of com-
 ‘ mon and equal, Concernment to both Kingdoms:
 ‘ Yet lest, by our Silence, the Right and Interest of
 ‘ the Kingdom of Scotland should be prejudiced;
 ‘ and lest that Sense of those Votes, which many
 ‘ have apprehended and expressed, should minister
 ‘ Occasion of Misunderstanding and Difference be-
 ‘ tween the Kingdoms, according to the Desires
 ‘ and Hopes of our common Enemies, we have
 ‘ judged it necessary, with that Freedom, Candour,
 ‘ and Plainness which becometh Brethren, to re-
 ‘ present our Thoughts concerning this great Busi-
 ‘ ness to both Houses.

‘ We do acknowledge, that as, positively, the
 ‘ Houses of Parliament have as much Power in

AN. 22. CAR. I.
1646.

October.

disposing of the King's Person, as any one Parliament hath, or can have, to dispose of a King, who hath more free Kingdoms than one; so, negatively, none ought or may dispose of his Majesty's Person without or against their Consent. The like, we suppose, will be mutually acknowledged in Reference to the Parliament of *Scotland*; it being a Fundamental Right and Liberty of either Kingdom, That none can justly, without their own Consent, impede or restrain the Person of their King from coming amongst them, and doing the Duties of a King unto them: And in both these Senses we acquiesce in the Vote of the Honourable Houses.

But if the Vote should be meant, or made use of, as restrictive to the Parliament of *England*; and exclusive of the Parliament of *Scotland*: Or, as if the two Houses were to dispose of the Person of the King, by their single and sole Authority, without the Consent and Concurrence of the Kingdom of *Scotland*; we trust this Sense is as far from the Thoughts of both Houses, as it is from Justice and Equity: The Parliament of *Scotland* having as much Interest in the Person of the King of *Scotland*, as the Parliament of *England* hath in the Person of the King of *England*; and the Person being but one, both Kingdoms must needs share equally in that joint Interest. Neither hath the Parliament of *England* any more Power to dispose of the Person of this King of *Scotland*, being in *England*, than the Parliament of *Scotland* hath to dispose of the Person of this King of *England*, if he were in *Scotland*: And as the Parliament of *England* might justly conceive their Interest and Power to be greatly prejudiced, if the Parliament of *Scotland* should claim the sole Power to dispose of his Majesty's Person, being in *Scotland*; and, consequently, if they shall so think fit, to restrain his Person from coming to his Houses of Parliament, when the necessary Affairs of this Kingdom require his Presence; so we cannot but in Justice expect to be dealt with by the Honour-

‘ Honourable Houses, as they would have us, in like An. 22. Car. I.
‘ Cases, to deal with them. 1646.

‘ Although what we have now expressed might
‘ be sufficient, as to our Sense of the Vote ; yet it
‘ shall not be superfluous, but very expedient, that
‘ we further clear ourselves and our real Intentions,
‘ in that which we first offered in our Paper of the
‘ 11th of *August*, concerning a joint Consultation
‘ and Resolution of both Kingdoms, what is next
‘ to be done in Reference to the King ; which
‘ Motion we now resume, to be still insisted upon :
‘ For the Question is not, Whether the Houses of
‘ Parliament or the *Scots* Army shall dispose of
‘ the Person of the King in *England* ? Our Army
‘ claimeth no Power to dispose of his Majesty’s
‘ Person. And as they could not refuse to receive
‘ him when he came amongst them, so they are
‘ ready to obey and submit to the joint Resolutions
‘ of both Kingdoms concerning his Majesty. Nei-
‘ ther is the Question, Which of the two King-
‘ doms shall trust the other with the present Reli-
‘ dence of the King’s Person, till he be disposed of
‘ by the Consent and Agreement of both ? Let it
‘ be far from both Kingdoms, that the former mu-
‘ tual Confidence should now turn to a mutual
‘ Diffidence ; and let not a Blessing from Heaven
‘ be expected upon either of the Nations, which
‘ continueth not faithful to the other, according
‘ to the Covenant. Our Confidence in the Wis-
‘ dom, Justice, Loyalty, and Faithfulness of the
‘ Honourable Houses is such, that whensoever the
‘ King shall be willing to return unto them, and
‘ they willing to receive him, we shall not make
‘ the least Impediment, but give our chearful Con-
‘ sent. Least of all is the Question concerning
‘ any Privilege or Power of the Parliament of *Eng-
‘ land*, or any Law, Liberty, or Practice of this
‘ Kingdom, to dispose of their King. It is not our
‘ Meaning to controvert what in that Kind they
‘ may do, or at any Time have done, according to
‘ their Laws, which are best known to themselves,
‘ for

October.

An. 22. Car. 1.

1646.

October.

' for their Good and Safety, without the least Sha-
 ' dow of any Dependency upon another Kingdom.
 ' But withall we desire it may be remembred, that
 ' this is to be transferred equally to the Power and
 ' Privilege of the Parliament of *Scotland*. We do
 ' not meddle with any of the single or proper Rights,
 ' Privileges, or Laws of this Nation, more than
 ' we would have our Brethren to meddle with ours.
 ' It is one Thing what the Parliament of *England*
 ' might have done, in another Cause or War, before
 ' their Engagements by the Covenant and Treaties
 ' with the Kingdom of *Scotland*: It is another
 ' Thing what ought to be done after such Condi-
 ' tions and Ties, imposed by neither Kingdom upon
 ' the other, but by both jointly upon themselves,
 ' and as mutual Obligations, both to God and each
 ' to other: Although we might also go further back
 ' than to the Covenant and Treaties, and plead
 ' the common and equal Interest of the Kingdoms,
 ' in their common Head and Sovereign, ever since
 ' they were so united, as may sufficiently appear,
 ' even by some Instances in his Majesty's Time
 ' who now reigns over us. It may be remembred,
 ' as to the Interest of *Scotland*, that when his Ma-
 ' jesty was first invited and desired to come into
 ' that Kingdom to be crowned, it was represented
 ' by the Lords of his Majesty's Privy Council in
 ' *England*, that the great Affairs of this Kingdom
 ' could hardly dispense with his Majesty's going to
 ' *Scotland*; and, therefore, that either he might re-
 ' ceive his Crown of *Scotland* by a Vicegerent there,
 ' or that it might be sent hither unto him. Like
 ' as this present Parliament, when the King went
 ' last into *Scotland* to settle the Peace of that King-
 ' dom, did earnestly desire and press that he might
 ' not go, but that he might stay here for the
 ' urgent Affairs of this Kingdom. But both in the
 ' one Case and in the other, the Interest of the
 ' Kingdom of *Scotland* was preserved; and as it
 ' was most necessary that his Majesty should go
 ' into that Kingdom for receiving that Crown, so
 ' his

his Majesty found it expedient to go thither for the settling of Peace. It may also be remembred, as to the Interest of *England*, that the *English* Nobility, both at *The Birks*, *An.* 1639, and at *York*, *An.* 1640, (whose Letters, to that Purpose, are yet extant and to be seen) and this Parliament, *An.* 1641, did claim an Interest to see and know our Demands proposed to the King, that neither his Majesty nor themselves might be thereby prejudiced.

An. 22. *Car.* I.
1646.
October.

But the present Question needeth not go so far upon a back Trade: Whatsoever the joint Interest of the Kingdoms was formerly, it is without Controversy now much more conjoined: And unless we lay aside the Covenant, Treaties, Declaration of both Kingdoms, and three Years Conjunction in this War, neither the one Kingdom nor the other must now look back what they might have done singly before such a strict Union; but look forward what is fittest to be done, by both jointly, for the common Good of both, and for the Ends of the Covenant, which both are obliged jointly to prosecute and promote. So that the true and proper Question in this Conjunction of Affairs is, Whether both Kingdoms have not a joint and common Interest in disposing of the King of both, for the Good of both; and that his Majesty's Person ought not to be disposed of by either Kingdom singly? Much might be said for this joint Way, and against a divided Way, from the Nature of all Associations, and the common Rules of Equity observed between Persons, Societies, or Nations, which have a joint Interest in the same Person, Parent, Master, Servant, or in the same Thing, Inheritance, Lands, House, Stock, or the like: In which Cases, one of the Parties associated may not, without the Consent of the other, dispose of that which is common, especially if it be a common Person; and least of all, if it be a Person of chiefest Eminency or Concernment: For although a common Thing may be divided,

An. 22. Car. 1.

1646.

October.

divided, and to each Party his proper Share assign-
 ed, yet one individual Person doth not admit of a
 Partition, and so requireth the greater Union and
 Conjunction of Councils in the Disposal of it.
 And as Reasons may be drawn from the Nature
 of all Associations, so especially from the Nature
 of ours in the Solemn League and Covenant;
 the Title, Narrative, Articles, and Conclusion of
 it, do along link together the Interest of the King-
 doms, in this common Cause so much concerning
 the Glory of God, their own Safety, Union, and
 Peace, and the Honour and Happiness of the King
 and his Posterity; which Ends of the Covenant
 both Parliaments, as well as other Subjects of both
 Kingdoms, have obliged themselves jointly and
 mutually to promote, according to their Power,
 and to continue zealously and constantly therein
 all the Days of their Lives, against all Opposition;
 and to assist and defend all those that enter into this
 League and Covenant in the maintaining and pur-
 suing thereof, and never suffer themselves to be
 divided, directly or indirectly, from this blessed
 Union and Conjunction. So that the Ends of
 the Covenant, upon which the Disposal of the
 King must needs have a strong Influence, are not
 to be prosecuted by the two Kingdoms, as by two
 distinct Bodies acting singly; but *they were united
 by solemn Covenant made to Almighty God, and by
 League each to other, as one entire Body, to prose-
 cute this Cause*; which was the Expression used
 by the Honourable Houses in their Declaration of
 the fifth of *August*, 1645, to the Lords the States
 General of the United Provinces of the *Low
 Countries*. In which Declaration this notable
 Instance was given, which deserveth also to be
 remembred, That, by the Covenant, both Houses
 of Parliament, and many Thousands of other his
 Majesty's Subjects of *England and Ireland*, stand
 bound, as well as we, to hinder the setting up of
 Church-Government by Bishops in the King-
 dom of *Scotland*; and that we, as well as they,
 stand

stand bound to endeavour the Extirpation thereof in England and Ireland. And as, by the Covenant, the Kingdoms are fast linked together in the whole Prosecution of this Cause; so particularly both are obliged to endeavour, mutually, to preserve and defend the King's Majesty's Person and Authority in the Preservation and Defence of the true Religion and Liberties of the Kingdoms; that the World may bear Witness, with our Consciences, of our Loyalty, and that we have no Thoughts or Intentions to diminish his Majesty's just Power and Greatness.

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.
October.

From the Treaty the same Thing doth further appear; it being thereby manifest, that as our Army was to be levied for the common Good of both Kingdoms, in the Pursuance of the Ends expressed in the Covenant, and not as Auxiliaries for the single Good of this Kingdom; so they are not tied to be subject to the Resolutions and Directions of either Kingdom singly, but of both jointly. Also, by the eighth Article, no Cessation, Pacification, nor Agreement for Peace whatsoever, is to be made by either Kingdom, without the mutual Advice and Consent of both: So that if the Disposal of the King's Person, mentioned in the Vote of both Houses, be intended for the Good, Peace, and Security of both Kingdoms, then it should not be done without the mutual Advice and Consent of both; but if intended for the Peace and Security of this Kingdom within itself singly, this were to settle the Peace of the one Kingdom, not only without the Counsel and Consent, but before the Settlement of the other, and so the more inconsistent with the plain Scope of that Article. Moreover, by the ninth Article of the same Treaty, all Matters of Difference arising between the Subjects of the two Nations are to be resolved and determined by the mutual Advice and Consent of both, which hath ever been the usual Way in such Cases. Neither know we any other Way for healing

An. 23. Car. 1.

1646.

October.

healing of Differences between two free Nations, which are as Brethren and Equals, and neither of them subordinate to the other. If therefore any Difference should arise; which God forbid, between the two Parliaments, or any others of the Subjects of the two Nations, concerning the disposing of his Majesty's Person, then the Question cannot be otherwise resolv'd and determin'd, but by the mutual Advice and Consent of both. How much better is it (according to the sixth Article of the Covenant) to consult how to prevent all Differences which are like to arise between us or our Posterities?

The Honourable Houses, in their Wisdom, did think fit that, in the managing of this War, there should be a Conjunction of the Councils of both Kingdoms in Reference to the *English* as well as to the *Scots* Forces: How much more may we expect a Conjunction of Councils in disposing of his Majesty's Person, wherein the one Kingdom is as much interested as the other?

If more need to be said in this Business, we hope it is not forgotten, how the Declarations of both Houses, and their Commissioners sent into *Scotland* to desire their Assistance and Engagement in this War, did invite, solicit, and persuade that Nation upon Principles of common Interest; and in regard the one Kingdom cannot enjoy a firm and durable Peace, while the other is in War, we were also put in Mind of the Affection and Duty which becometh Brethren. And as we did, upon these and the like Considerations, espouse our Brethrens Quarrel, so it cannot be offensive that we desire from them an Improvement of the very same Principles; and that the same Measure of the Conjunction of Interests be given to us, which was got from us. God forbid that Ways of separating the Interests of the Kingdoms should now be studied, as much as Ways of uniting them were before endeavoured. We cannot but expect better Things from our Bre-

‘ Brethren, than in their Prosperity to desert us, An. 22. Car. I.
 ‘ who did engage and join with them in their great- 1646.
 ‘ est Affliction; or to think of securing their own
 ‘ Peace without us, while the Troubles of our
 ‘ Kingdom continue.

October.

‘ Wherefore we cannot chuse but obtest by the
 ‘ common Good of both Kingdoms; by the Con-
 ‘ junction and Parity of Interests; by the Love of
 ‘ Brethren; by Declarations of both Houses; by
 ‘ former Precedents; by the Treaty between the
 ‘ Kingdoms; by the Solemn League and Covenant;
 ‘ yea, by the very Law of Nations and Rules of
 ‘ common Equity, that there may be a Conjunction
 ‘ of the Councils and Resolutions of both King-
 ‘ doms; in disposing of that Royal Person who is
 ‘ King of both; and that all lawful and possible
 ‘ Means (of which this is one and a chief one) may
 ‘ be used, which may preserve his Majesty’s Per-
 ‘ son, Honour, and Happines according to the
 ‘ Covenant; Monarchical Government according
 ‘ to the Fundamental Laws of both Kingdoms;
 ‘ together with a firm and happy Union between
 ‘ the Kingdoms.

‘ These Principles we desire still to go upon; and
 ‘ therefore if the Vote of both Houses, communi-
 ‘ cated unto us, be understood as a material De-
 ‘ mand of his Majesty’s Person to be delivered un-
 ‘ to them, to be disposed of as they shall think fit:
 ‘ This, as it doth not necessarily follow from the
 ‘ Words of the Vote, nor doth agree with that
 ‘ Sense of the Vote, which, in Charity, we are
 ‘ most willing to entertain, so there are just and
 ‘ great Reasons against it. We acknowledge that
 ‘ we are not to presume the worst, but the best,
 ‘ concerning the Intentions of the Honourable
 ‘ Houses towards the King. But we do not doubt
 ‘ it will be mutually acknowledged that, for pre-
 ‘ venting of Differences afterwards, it is most fit
 ‘ and necessary that there be a clear and distinct
 ‘ Understanding between the two Kingdoms in a
 ‘ Business of this Nature and Consequence; and
 ‘ that

An. 22. Car. I.

1646.

October.

' that it is not to be expected from private Persons,
 ' tho' under Jurisdiction, much less from another
 ' Kingdom, that they should pass from their In-
 ' terest or just Security, because they have to do
 ' with such as they judge to be honest and faith-
 ' ful. To speak therefore to the Nature of the
 ' Thing in itself: If the *Scots* Army should deliver
 ' up his Majesty's Person without his own Consent,
 ' and that upon the Vote communicated unto us,
 ' which (although it may suffer a benign Interpre-
 ' tation, and be understood of the disposing of the
 ' King's Person favourably and honourably, yet)
 ' as the Words stand, is comprehensive and capa-
 ' cious of more than is fit to be expressed: This
 ' Act of the Army were not agreeable to their Oath
 ' of Allegiance, obliging them to defend his Ma-
 ' jesty Person from all Harms and Prejudices; nor
 ' to the Solemn League and Covenant, which was
 ' not intended to weaken, but to strengthen, our
 ' Allegiance, and to wipe off the Calumny and
 ' Aspersions of Rebellion: For which End, before
 ' our Engagement in this War, it was mutually
 ' covenanted between the Kingdoms, to preserve
 ' the King's Majesty's Person and Authority, in
 ' the Preservation of the Religion and Liberties
 ' of the Kingdoms; thereby holding forth to the
 ' World, that the Preservation and Defence of Re-
 ' ligion and Liberties may well consist, and was
 ' intended to consist, with Preservation of his Ma-
 ' jesty's Person and Authority; whom therefore our
 ' Army cannot deliver to be disposed of by any
 ' others at Pleasure. This Delivery were also
 ' inconsistent with the joint, equal, and common
 ' Interest of both Kingdoms in the Disposal of his
 ' Majesty's Person, which we have before asserted;
 ' and were, upon the Matter, a Passing from the
 ' Right and Interest of the Kingdom of *Scotland*
 ' in that Business. It were also contrary to his
 ' Majesty's Power of Residence in any of his
 ' Kingdoms, and to the free exercising of the Du-
 ' ties of his Place, and Acts of Personal Govern-
 ' ment,

ment; such as the hearing and redressing of the Grievances of his Subjects in Parliament, and his concurring to the making of Laws. Neither could it stand with the Commissions given to the Committee of Estates and General Officers of our Army, or with their Military Oath, to deliver up their King without his own Consent, and without Warrant from the Parliament of *Scotland*, to be disposed of by another Nation: Even as it were not to be expected, that the Army under the Command of Sir *Thomas Fairfax*, if they were in *Scotland* for our Assistance there, in the like Cause, and under the like Engagements, in a Recess of the Parliament of *England*, and without their Warrant, would, upon the like Demand, deliver up the King (having cast himself in their Hands) to be disposed of by the Parliament of *Scotland*. Finally, if it be contrary to the Law and common Practice of Nations, to deliver up the meanest Subject fled to them, though it be for the greatest Crimes, (for which Cause the Parliament of *England* in the fourth of King *James*, as likewise in the large Treaty, refused a general Act of Remanding between the two Kingdoms, unless they should be united into one,) how much more would the World abroad condemn our Army for a base and dishonourable Act, if they should deliver up their Head and Sovereign (having cast himself into their Hands) to be disposed of at the Arbitrement of another Nation?

And now we hope it will not be tedious, that we further enlarge ourselves upon this great Subject, by adding satisfactory Answers to such Objections as have been, or may be, made against our Desires and Principles in this Business.

Objection 1. *That the Scots Army is an Auxiliary Army of England, and under their Pay; and therefore ought to deliver up the King, to be disposed of by both Houses as they shall think fit.*

Answer. It is sufficiently known, that the Scots Army came not into this Kingdom in the Nature of Auxiliaries: For when it was desired by the

Par-

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.

October.

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.

October.

Parliament of *England* that the Kingdom of *Scotland* should send an Auxiliary Army into this Kingdom, to be subject to the Directions and Resolutions of both Houses, it was absolutely refused, as may appear by the several Papers about that Purpose yet extant. The Kingdom of *Scotland* did foresee and consider how prejudicial it was to forsake their own Peace; and what infinite Troubles, Losses, and unavoidable Danger their Engagement with the Parliament of *England*, against so powerful and prevailing an Enemy, would bring upon the Kingdom of *Scotland*: And as they regarded not the large Offers nor the Threats of the other Side for all their Prosperity; so there was no Offer of Pay, or other worldly Advantage whatsoever from the Houses of Parliament, which could have induced them to undertake so hazardous and desperate a War. It was the Good of Religion, King, and Kingdoms they set before their Eyes; in order to which End, they accounted nothing too dear unto them: And having resolved to engage in this Cause for Assistance of their Brethren therein, they did not stand upon Conditions; but, without Respect to the Season of the Year, the great Strength of the Enemy, and other Discouragements, they did, in a short Time, levy an Army at their own Charge: And, because of the many Burdens then lying upon this Kingdom, were content for the present to accept of a Sum towards the monthly Entertainment of that Army, amounting to little more than Half Pay, and to supersede all further Recompence till the War should be at an End. And seeing the Kingdom of *Scotland* was to quit their own Peace, and, equally with *England*, to undergo the Hazard of the War, it was found reasonable that the Prosecution thereof, and the making of the Conditions of Peace after the War, should be with joint Advice and Consent of both Kingdoms: And, according to these Grounds, a Covenant was agreed upon for the Reformation of Religion, and for Preservation of the Liberties of the Kingdoms, and

‘ and of the King’s Person and Authority: To-
 ‘ gether with a Treaty, wherein it is declared that
 ‘ the Scots Army shall be commanded by a General
 ‘ appointed by the Estates of Scotland, and shall
 ‘ be subject to such Resolutions and Directions, as
 ‘ are and shall be mutually agreed upon and concluded
 ‘ between the Kingdoms, or their Committees in that
 ‘ Behalf appointed, for pursuance of the Ends of the
 ‘ Covenant; of which one is to defend and preserve his
 ‘ Majesty’s Person.

An. 22. Car. I.
 1646.
 October.

Object. 2. ‘ *That the King is in England, and
 ‘ therefore to be disposed of by both Houses of Par-
 ‘ liament, and cannot be disposed of by the Scots Army;
 ‘ And tho’ the Kingdom of Scotland may pretend to an
 ‘ Interest and Power in the disposing of the King,
 ‘ yet they can have no Exercise of that Power in En-
 ‘ gland: And albeit the Scots Army, according to
 ‘ the Treaty between the Kingdoms, be only subject
 ‘ to such Resolutions as are mutually agreed upon
 ‘ by both Kingdoms, or their Committees appointed in
 ‘ that Behalf; yet this is only to be understood in
 ‘ ordering and regulating of the Scots Forces for
 ‘ prosecuting the War; and the Treaty extends no
 ‘ further.*

Ans. ‘ Although his Majesty’s riding one Day’s
 ‘ Journey might wholly subvert the Grounds of
 ‘ this Objection; yet we shall not insist upon this
 ‘ Answer, because we conceive it toucheth not
 ‘ the true State of the Question. It hath been al-
 ‘ ready cleared what is not, and what is, the State
 ‘ of the Question; which being remembred we do
 ‘ assert, That the King coming voluntarily to the
 ‘ Scots Army, they cannot, in Duty, deliver him
 ‘ against his Will to the Houses of Parliament, with-
 ‘ out Consent of the Kingdom of Scotland: For
 ‘ the Being in England takes not away the Relation
 ‘ between the King and his Subjects of the
 ‘ Kingdom of Scotland; nor ought it to impede
 ‘ the Performance of the mutual Duties founded
 ‘ upon that Relation: For Allegiance hath no
 ‘ Limitation of Place, being grounded upon the
 ‘ Law of Nature as well as the Law Municipal,
 VOL. XV. I ‘ and

Ann. 22. Car. 1.
1646.

October.

and so is rather universal than local. The Difference of Place takes not away the Relation and mutual Duties between Parents and Children; and it is not the Place but the Relation which gives Interest to the disposing of the Person of the King. As his being in *England* takes not away the Relation between him and his Subjects of *Scotland*, so it doth not infringe the mutual Obligations and solemn Engagements between the Kingdoms, for joint Councils in Prosecution of the War and settling of the Peace; the King's Coming to the *Scots* Army being an Emergency of our joint War; and the right Disposal of his Person, the only Mean, for the present, of our joint Security and Peace. Neither can the King's being in *England* prejudice any Right or Privilege of either Kingdom; for it is the Fundamental Right and Privilege of the Parliament of *Scotland*, and the Liberty of that Kingdom, (as we acknowledge it to be the Right and Privilege of the Kingdom of *England*) that the Person of their King ought not to be disposed of, but with their Advice and Consent. The Place of the King's Residence (as was answered to us, when in the Large Treaty it was desired his Majesty might some Times reside in *Scotland*) is at his own Election, in either of the Kingdoms as the Exigence of Affairs shall require, and he shall think fit; or else must be determined by the mutual Advice and Consent of both Kingdoms.

From all which Grounds it is apparent, that the Kingdom where he resides for the Time, may do no Act which may hinder his Majesty to perform the Office and Duty of a King to the Kingdom from which he is absent in Person; nor impede him to repair to that Kingdom, when the Affairs thereof shall necessarily require it. Otherwise, if the Kingdom where his Majesty resides hath the sole Interest and Right to dispose of his Person, the Estates of the Parliament of *Scotland* might, upon former Occasions, and may now, in case the King and Prince shall

repair

* repair to *Scotland*, lawfully detain them there;
 * and make it the Place of the ordinary Residence
 * of them and their Posterity, without the Consent
 * of the Kingdom of *England*; which we acknow-
 * ledge could not be done without a manifest Pre-
 * judice and Injury to this Kingdom. Wherefore
 * we cannot but conclude, That wheresoever the
 * King be, in *Scotland* or *England*, he being the
 * King of both, ought to be disposed of for the
 * Good and with the Consent of both Kingdoms.
 * And if it be considered that the *Scots* Army was
 * invited and called into this Kingdom by both
 * Houses, in a Treaty for prosecuting the Ends of
 * a Solemn League and Covenant, whereof one is
 * to preserve and defend his Majesty's Person, there
 * can remain no Doubt concerning the Exercise of
 * that Right and Interest in this Kingdom: And
 * therefore it seems very strange that when, upon
 * Invitation, they are come into *England*, as for o-
 * ther Ends, so to defend his Majesty's Person,
 * their being in *England* should be made use of as
 * an Argument why they should deliver up the Per-
 * son of their King to be disposed of as both Houses
 * shall think fit. Whereas it is alledged, That
 * the Treaty extends no further than to the order-
 * ing and regulating of the *Scots* Forces in rela-
 * tion to the War; although this be really an-
 * swered from the Nature of the Thing, the King's
 * Coming to the *Scots* Army being an Emergency
 * of the War; and so the Delivering of his Person
 * comes under the Regulation and Direction of
 * both Kingdoms or their Committees, as an Act
 * of the *Scots* Army; yet, that all Doubt may be
 * removed, we further add, That it is clear from the
 * third Article of the Treaty, that the *Scots* Army
 * is to receive the Directions of both Kingdoms or
 * of their Committees, in all Things which may
 * concern the Pursuance of the Ends of the Cove-
 * nant and Treaty, whether in relation to Peace or
 * War. In the eighth Article of the Treaty, no
 * Cessation, Pacification, or Agreement for Peace
 * whatsoever, is to be made by either Kingdom,

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.

October.

An. 22. Car. I.

1646.

October.

‘ or the Army of either Kingdom, without the
 ‘ Advice and Consent of both Kingdoms. And in
 ‘ the ninth Article, all Differences arising between
 ‘ the Subjects of the two Nations are to be resol-
 ‘ ved and determined by the mutual Advice and
 ‘ Consent of both Kingdoms.

Object. 3. ‘ *That the Scots Army did carry away*
 ‘ *the King from the Leaguer before Newark, when*
 ‘ *there was a Committee of both Houses there, with-*
 ‘ *out seeking their Consent; and that they have since*
 ‘ *disposed of him without Consent of the Houses of*
 ‘ *Parliament; whereas, by the Treaty, they ought to*
 ‘ *do nothing without a joint Resolution of both King-*
 ‘ *doms, or their Committees.*

Ans. ‘ No sooner did the King come into the
 ‘ Scots Army, but the very same Day the Com-
 ‘ mittee of Estates of Scotland, residing with that
 ‘ Army, did acquaint the Commissioners of both
 ‘ Houses therewith; and, not satisfying themselves
 ‘ with this, the Day following they wrote a Letter
 ‘ to the Committee of Scotland, residing at *Edin-*
 ‘ *burgh*, and another to the Committee of both
 ‘ Kingdoms here, which was communicated to
 ‘ both Houses, desiring the Advice of this King-
 ‘ dom, as in a Matter of common Interest, and
 ‘ declaring they would obey the joint Resolutions
 ‘ of both Kingdoms; yet no Answer or Advice
 ‘ was returned unto them, either from the Houses
 ‘ or their Commissioners. But immediately after the
 ‘ Surrender of *Newark*, they received Information
 ‘ that 5000 Horse and Dragoons, from Sir *Thomas*
 ‘ *Fairfax*’s Army, were upon their March towards
 ‘ them Northward, which the Honourable House
 ‘ of Peers was pleased to give Orders to stop, there
 ‘ being no Enemy in those Parts to be opposed :
 ‘ Upon Consideration whereof, the Quarters where-
 ‘ in they had stayed, during the Siege of *Newark*,
 ‘ being extremely exhausted, and the Service for
 ‘ which they came thither being performed, for
 ‘ preventing Mistakes or new Troubles between
 ‘ the Kingdoms, they removed into *Yorkshire*; and
 ‘ the King, as he came unto them of his own ac-
 ‘ cord,

cord, did voluntarily march along with them. Upon several Occasions afterwards, they and we did earnestly desire the Honourable Houses to send a Committee, to join and co-operate with the Committee of Estates there upon the Place, in all Things according to the Treaty; but no Answer was returned. And, from Time to Time, the Houses were acquainted with the Proceedings in that Army; which were, according to the Covenant, and the known Resolutions of both Kingdoms, to debar all such of both or either Kingdoms as had been in Arms against the Parliament, from coming into their Quarters, or to the Court, or to the King's Person, according to the Desire of the House of Peers. And whereas it is affirmed, That, by the Treaty, the *Scots* Army ought to do nothing without a joint Resolution of both Kingdoms, or their Committees; there is no such Clause in the Treaty: But they are to be subject to such Resolutions as are, and shall be, agreed upon and concluded mutually between the Kingdoms and their Committees; as, by Ordinance of Parliament, the Army under the Command of the Earl of *Essex*, or of Sir *Thomas Fairfax*, was to receive and observe the Directions of the Committee of both Kingdoms sitting at *Westminster*; but in case no new Directions were sent unto them, they were left to former Orders, if any were, or otherwise to their own Judgment and Discretion. There was never any such Resolution agreed upon between the Kingdoms, or their Committees, as that the *Scots* Army should not receive the King, if he came unto them; but it is an Agreement between the Kingdoms, in the Covenant, that they should preserve and defend his Majesty's Person; and, in the Declarations of both Kingdoms, to rescue him from the common Enemy: So that the *Scots* Army having often desired to know the Direction and Advice of the Houses of Parliament, concerning the King, and no new Directions being signified unto them, according

An. 22. Car. 1.
1646.

October.

An. 22. Car. 1.
1646.

October.

‘ cording to the Treaty, they were to observe the
‘ Directions and Resolutions formerly agreed up-
‘ on between the Kingdoms. And as the *Scots*
‘ Army do, and will ever, acknowledge that they
‘ claim no Power to dispose of the King’s Person ;
‘ but are subject to, and shall be ready to follow,
‘ whatsoever both Kingdoms shall agree upon, as
‘ best for the King and Kingdoms ; so their keep-
‘ ing and preserving his Majesty’s Person, (as they
‘ would do to any Person of his Eminency and
‘ Relation in an Army or Garrison-Town) with-
‘ out the least Thought of hindering his voluntary
‘ Return to his Parliament, cannot be reputed or
‘ called a Disposing of his Person.

Object. 4. ‘ *If any Peer of England go to the Scots*
‘ *Army, and desire their Protection, can he not be*
‘ *disposed of without the Consent of the Committee*
‘ *of Estates of the Kingdom of Scotland residing*
‘ *with that Army ?*

Ans. ‘ There is a wide and manifest Difference
‘ betwixt the Relation the *Scots* Army hath to any
‘ Subject of *England*, and the Relation they have
‘ to their King ; which are sufficiently distinguished
‘ in the third and fourth Articles of the Covenant :
‘ For, by the one, they are mutually obliged to pre-
‘ serve and defend his Majesty’s Person, ; and, by
‘ the other, they are mutually obliged to endeavour,
‘ that all Incendiaries and Dividers betwixt the
‘ King and his People, or betwixt the Kingdoms,
‘ be brought to Trial and condign Punishment be-
‘ fore the Supreme Judicatories of the Kingdoms
‘ respectively: And the Kingdom of *Scotland* hath
‘ equal Right and Interest with the Kingdom of *En-*
‘ *gland*, in the Disposal of the Person of the King,
‘ which they cannot pretend unto concerning the
‘ Person of any Subject of *England*.

Object. 5. ‘ *That seeing it is alledged by us, That*
‘ *the Disposing of the King’s Person comes in Place*
‘ *of a Peace, then the Receiving of the King into*
‘ *the Scots Army, without Consent of the Houses, is*
‘ *equivalent to the making of a Peace without Con-*
‘ *sent*

sent of the Kingdom of England, contrary to the eighth Article of the Treaty. An. 22. Car. I. 1646.

October.

Ans. ' It hath been sufficiently answered before,
' That the Scots Army neither hath, nor will, take
' upon them to dispose of the King. He came
' unto them without Capitulation or Treaty; his
' Residence with them is voluntary and free; and
' they do nothing which may hinder him to come
' to his Houses of Parliament. But if the King-
' dom of Scotland should consent to the Desire of
' the Houses, that they may have the sole Dispos-
' al of the Person of the King, (it being that which
' comes in the Place of the Peace and Security of
' both Kingdoms) they will really quit the Right
' and Interest they have by the eighth Article of
' the Treaty, concerning the making of a Peace;
' for which soever of the Kingdoms is acknow-
' ledged to have the sole Dispos- al of the King, may,
' without the other, make Peace with him, when,
' how, and in what Terms, they please.

Object. 6. ' That England is a free Nation,
' and in former Times it was in the Power of the
' Parliament of England to dispose of their Kings;
' and if one Kingdom pretend to a joint Right of dis-
' posing of the King, while he is in the other, it is
' to entrench upon the former Liberty of that King-
' dom. That the Kingdom of Scotland have no Rea-
' son to distrust the Houses of Parliament, who, when
' the King shall be in their Power, will not dispose
' of him otherwise than may consist with their Duty,
' according to the Covenant and Treaty between the
' Kingdoms.

Ans. ' We will not dispute what Power the
' Houses of Parliament formerly had to dispose of
' the Person of their King; but whatsoever Power
' or Right they have, the like is due to the Parlia-
' ment of Scotland; and so the Person of the King
' being common to both, and indivisible, cannot
' be disposed of, but by Consent of both Kingdoms.
' It were another Question indeed, if it were as in
' former Times, when we had different Kings; if
' there

An. 21. Car. 1.
1646.

October.

‘ there were not an Union of the Kingdoms under
 ‘ one Head and Monarch ; if there were neither
 ‘ Covenant nor Treaty between the Kingdoms :
 ‘ But since all these are, and that the Peace
 ‘ and Security of both Kingdoms is so much con-
 ‘ cerned in the Disposal of the King ; not any one
 ‘ of them, without the other, can justly pretend to
 ‘ the sole Judgment and Right to determine what
 ‘ is best and most expedient for the Safety and
 ‘ Security of both. Nor can it, in Reason, be made
 ‘ an Argument, that the one Kingdom distrusts the
 ‘ other, because the one will not renounce and re-
 ‘ sign all Right and Interest they have in the Per-
 ‘ son of the King, and Matter of their own Secu-
 ‘ rity and Peace, to the Judgment and Determina-
 ‘ tion of the other ; otherwise, according to this
 ‘ Argument, where there is any Trust, there should
 ‘ be no Contract between Person and Person, nor
 ‘ Treaty between Nations : Or, if there be any
 ‘ Treaty or Agreement, the Performance or Non-
 ‘ performance of it, is to be left to Arbitrement.
 ‘ But we cannot see that this doth argue any Dif-
 ‘ fidence or Distrust more than when private Per-
 ‘ sons, lending Money to the Public, desire Securi-
 ‘ ty, and will not depend upon Pleasure. And
 ‘ therefore, though it is not to be questioned but
 ‘ the Houses of Parliament would dispose of the
 ‘ Person of the King, so as might consist with
 ‘ their Duty in performing the Covenant and
 ‘ Treaty, yet this can be no Argument why
 ‘ the Scots Army should neglect their Duty ; or the
 ‘ Kingdom of Scotland quit the Interest and Right
 ‘ they have in the Person of the King.

Object. 7. ‘ *That the King is in the Possession of
 ‘ the Scots Army ; and though a joint Advice and
 ‘ Consent of both Kingdoms be urged for his Dis-
 ‘ posal, yet, if the Houses of Parliament agree
 ‘ not to what Scotland shall desire, the King doth
 ‘ still remain in the Power of the Scots Army, and
 ‘ so the Parliament of England hath no Consent.*

Ans. ‘ If this Argument were turned over, the
 ‘ Strength or Weakness of It may the more ea-
 ‘ sily

‘fily appear: Suppose the King were here at *West-* An. 22. Car. 1.
 ‘*minster*, it may be upon the same Grounds urged, 1646.
 ‘That the Kingdom of *Scotland* would have no
 ‘Consent in his Disposal; and so much the more
 ‘that the Houses claim the sole Interest and Judg-
 ‘ment to dispose upon the King’s Person, which
 ‘we desire may be done jointly, as may be best
 ‘for the Security and Safety of both Kingdoms.
 ‘And we see no Reason why it may not now be
 ‘determined when he is in the *Scots* Army, (who are
 ‘intrusted by both, and subject to the Resolution
 ‘of both Kingdoms) as well as hereafter; since he
 ‘came thither of his own accord, and his Resi-
 ‘dence there is voluntary. And if his Majesty
 ‘shall think fit to repair hither to his Houses of
 ‘Parliament, they shall do no Act which may either
 ‘hinder or dissuade him, but cannot constrain him,
 ‘or deliver him to the Houses to be disposed of as
 ‘they shall think fit.

October.

‘It may now abundantly appear, from the
 ‘Grounds and Considerations before expressed,
 ‘that the *Scots* Army may not deliver up his Ma-
 ‘jesty’s Person, to be disposed of by the one King-
 ‘dom, without the Consent of the other: Upon
 ‘Supposition whereof we shall, in the next Place,
 ‘(without presuming to prescribe Ways, or impose
 ‘Conditions) express ourselves concerning some
 ‘Expedients, which, in Reference to his Majesty,
 ‘deserve to be looked upon, considered of, and
 ‘compared together; where we shall only premise
 ‘thus much, That whatever Way shall be taken,
 ‘if the right End be looked at, his Majesty’s Per-
 ‘son ought to be so disposed of, as may serve most
 ‘for the Safety and Happiness of the King himself;
 ‘for the common Peace and Security of the
 ‘Kingdoms, united in this Cause by the Solemn
 ‘League and Covenant; and as may best agree
 ‘with their Duty, Covenant, and Treaties.

‘These Ends being before our Eyes, although
 ‘it be most eligible and best of all that his Ma-
 ‘jesty should, without further Delay, forthwith give
 ‘Sa-

An. 22. Car. 1.

1646.

October.

Satisfaction in the Propositions of Peace, (which
 hath been with all Instancy pressed not only by
 us, but by all the Judicatories of the Kingdom
 of *Scotland*) and so return fully reconciled to his
 Houses of Parliament: Yet since, to our unspeak-
 able Grief, this hath not been as yet obtained,
 we do propose that his Majesty's Coming to *Lon-*
don, or to some of his Houses near *London*, with
 Safety, Freedom, and Honour, (which is desired
 by himself that he may be heard, and that, upon
 the clearing of his Doubts, he may knowingly
 give a satisfactory Answer to the Propositions;) is
 much better than the other Ways which may be
 expected, in case this his Majesty's Desires be not
 agreed unto. As for his Majesty's going to *Ire-*
land, or other where beyond Sea, it could not
 be the Way to a present Peace now so much de-
 sired; but would certainly prognosticate new
 Troubles. Lastly, His Majesty's Coming hither,
 or near this Place, is a more probable and hope-
 ful Way to preserve the Union of the Kingdoms;
 because the Enemy being still in Arms in *Scot-*
land, and expecting Supplies from *Ireland*, and
 the Kingdom disabled, by their great Sufferings,
 to entertain an Army for suppressing the Malignant
 Party, it were much more easy to raise new
 Forces there, to the Disturbance of the Peace of
 this Kingdom, than it could be here; where, by
 the Blessing of God, all the Forces and Garrisons
 of the Enemy are subdued, and where it
 will not be so difficult to hinder Delinquents from
 Access to his Majesty. The Dangers and In-
 conveniences of any of these other Ways do so
 much preponderate, and the present Condition of
 Affairs doth so much differ from that Time, when
 both Houses, with our Concurrence, did disagree
 from his Majesty's Desire of coming to *London*,
 (at which Time he had both Garrisons and Field-
 Forces un-reduced) that it may be conceived not
 only safe, but, as Things stand, most convenient
 to agree to his Majesty's coming to *London*, or
 near

‘ near it ; upon such Conditions and Assurances An. 22. Car. 1.
 ‘ from him, as shall be, by joint Resolution, found 1646.
 ‘ necessary for preventing the Access of Delinquents
 ‘ to his Majesty, or an intestine Commotion; or
 ‘ foreign Invasion, to the Disturbance of the Peace
 ‘ of either Kingdom. We trust it might accele-
 ‘ rate a happy Peace, bring the present Differences
 ‘ to an End, and be no Grief of Heart afterwards,
 ‘ if, upon such Terms and Conditions, both Houses
 ‘ should be pleased to revive and renew such an In-
 ‘ vitation and Assurance upon their Part, as was
 ‘ contained in their Answer to his Majesty’s Mes-
 ‘ sage of the 11th of September, 1642; where, after
 ‘ Mention made of their chief Grievances, it was
 ‘ added, *All this notwithstanding, as we never gave*
 ‘ *your Majesty any just Cause of withdrawing your-*
 ‘ *self from your great Council; so it hath ever been,*
 ‘ *and shall ever be, far from us to give any Impedi-*
 ‘ *ment to your Return; or to neglect any proper*
 ‘ *Means of curing the Distempers of the Kingdom,*
 ‘ *and closing the dangerous Breaches betwixt your*
 ‘ *Majesty and your Parliament, according to the*
 ‘ *great Trust which lies upon us. And if your Ma-*
 ‘ *jesty shall now be pleased to come back to your*
 ‘ *Parliament without your Forces, we shall be ready*
 ‘ *to secure your Royal Person, Crown, and Dig-*
 ‘ *nity, with our Lives and Fortunes; your Pre-*
 ‘ *sence in this great Council being the only Means of*
 ‘ *any Treaty betwixt your Majesty and them, with*
 ‘ *Hope of Success.* Divers such Passages there are
 ‘ in the Declarations of both Houses, which we
 ‘ shall not need to mention.

‘ But if the Houses of Parliament shall not agree
 ‘ to his Majesty’s Desire of coming hither with
 ‘ Safety, Freedom, and Honour, we offer to be
 ‘ considered in the next Place, whether it be not
 ‘ expedient, that once again Commissioners be
 ‘ sent to his Majesty, in Name of both Kingdoms,
 ‘ with Power to hear his Desires, and to endeavour
 ‘ the Satisfaction of his Doubts and Scruples; with
 ‘ Intimation also, That if his Majesty shall not
 ‘ give Satisfaction in the Propositions, both King-
 ‘ doms

An. 22. Car. 1.
1646.

October.

doms will, without any more such Applications, consult and jointly resolve upon other Ways of their Safety and Security. And upon the other Part, That if his Majesty will be now, at last, graciously pleased to satisfy the Desires of both Kingdoms, his Majesty's Throne, with his just Power and Greatness, shall be established, as well as the Peace and Security of his Subjects.

All which we do propound in a Brotherly Freedom, not being peremptorily wedded or addicted to any Expedient that we have offered; but, if the Honourable Houses, in their Wisdom, shall be pleased to think of any other Expedient which shall be for the Good, Safety, and Honour of the King and Kingdoms, we shall be most willing and ready to agree unto it, when it shall be made known unto us; not doubting but that, in the faithful and conscionable Use of all good and possible Means, which may prevent Differences between the Kingdoms, there will be, at last, a sweet and brotherly Agreement in such a Conclusion, as shall be good in God's Eyes, and wherein both Kingdoms shall find the greatest Comfort and Happiness.

By Command of the Commissioners for the Parliament of Scotland.

JOHN CHIESLEY.

A second Paper from the COMMISSIONERS of the PARLIAMENT of Scotland, dated Oct. 20.

Another on the same Subject.

HAVING received the Votes of both Houses of the 24th of September, declaring, That whatsoever Conference, Consultation, or Debate shall be with the Commissioners of Scotland, concerning the Disposal of the Person of the King, it shall not be understood to be any Capitulation in relation to the retarding of the March of the Scots Army out of this Kingdom, or of any Treaty between the Kingdoms concerning the same: And being desired to give an Answer hereunto before we entered upon the Conference, as we did

An. 22. Car. I.

1646.

October.

‘ did then, so we do now again declare, That our
 ‘ Conference, Consultation, or Debate with the
 ‘ Honourable Houses concerning the Disposal of
 ‘ the Person of the King, shall not retard or be
 ‘ any Hindrance to the March of the *Scots* Army
 ‘ out of this Kingdom, or to any Treaty concern-
 ‘ ing the same. And that it may be manifest how
 ‘ sensible we are of the unnecessary Burthens con-
 ‘ tinued in this Kingdom, by keeping Armies on
 ‘ Foot after the War is at an End; and that it may
 ‘ fully and clearly appear how really it is desired
 ‘ by the *Scots* Army, that, without Delay, they may
 ‘ march out of this Kingdom, with the same Af-
 ‘ fection and Chearfulness that they came in for the
 ‘ Assistance of their Brethren. And to the end all
 ‘ Jealousies, Mistakes, or Misunderstandings of
 ‘ our Intentions may be removed, we do further
 ‘ declare, That we are willing and ready to meet
 ‘ with such as the Honourable Houses shall ap-
 ‘ point, and within twenty-four Hours to agree
 ‘ concerning the Time and Place of the Payment
 ‘ of the 200,000 *l.* and the Security to be given
 ‘ for the other; and to appoint a Day wherein our
 ‘ Forces shall march out of the Town and Castle of
 ‘ *Newcastle*, out of *Tinmouth* Castle, *Hartlepool*,
 ‘ *Stockton*, *Thirlwal*, and all other Places within this
 ‘ Kingdom, (*Berwick* and *Carlisle* being disposed of
 ‘ according to the respective Treaties between the
 ‘ Kingdoms,) and likewise for marching of our Ar-
 ‘ my out of this Kingdom; which, in regard the
 ‘ Winter doth fast approach, and for other import-
 ‘ ant Reasons, we earnestly desire may be with all
 ‘ possible Expedition: And, for this End, that the
 ‘ Money may be speedily sent unto them; for the
 ‘ sooner they shall receive it the more acceptable
 ‘ it will be, and give the greater Satisfaction, and
 ‘ the impoverished and exhausted Country will be
 ‘ the sooner eased. And since the Cause of their
 ‘ Stay and Continuance in this Kingdom is not
 ‘ upon their Part; and that for these six Months
 ‘ past they have received no Pay, whereby they are
 ‘ exceedingly straitened in their Quarters, and the

‘ *Northern*

An. 22. Car. 1.
1646.

October.

‘Northern Parts where they remain greatly over-
 ‘burthened; we do earnestly intreat that, in the
 ‘mean Time, (with the 5000*l.* at *Nottingham* al-
 ‘ready accounted unto them) some competent Pro-
 ‘portion of Money may be sent unto the Army for
 ‘their necessary Entertainment; or otherwise they
 ‘will be forced to enlarge their Quarters for the
 ‘Ease of the Country. In all which we are the
 ‘more desirous to come to a Close, that within
 ‘few Days some of our Number must repair to the
 ‘Scots Army, and from thence to the Parliament
 ‘of *Scotland*, (which is to sit the second of *No-*
 ‘*vember* next) to give an Account of our Proceed-
 ‘ings; and therefore we do earnestly intreat the
 ‘speedy Answer of the Honourable Houses.’

By Command of the Commissioners for the Par-
liament of Scotland.

JOHN CHIESLEY.

Oct. 21. On the reading of the foregoing Papers
 of the Scots Commissioners in the House of Lords,
 after Debate thereupon, it was moved that this
 Vote should be put, ‘That a Committee shall be
 appointed to join with a proportionable Number of
 the House of Commons, to consult and debate with
 the Commissioners of *Scotland*, concerning such
 Things that may settle the Peace, Prosperity, and
 brotherly Amity of the two Kingdoms of *England*
 and *Scotland*.’ But, on a second Motion, ‘That these
 Words, *in Relation to the King*, should be added,
 it was put to the Question, and carried in the Af-
 firmative.’ Then the whole Vote, with this Ad-
 dition at the End of it, being read, it also passed
 in the same Manner.—The Reader may please
 to take particular Notice of this Vote, because
 somewhat material depends upon it in the Sequel.

Oct. 26. The said Papers were read in the
 House of Commons, when a great Debate arose;
 and afterwards it was ordered by that House, That
 they should be referred to the Consideration of the
 same Committee, who formerly managed the Con-
 ference

ference with the Commissioners of *Scotland* about the Disposal of the King's Person, to prepare an Answer to them, and report it to the House. In this Debate we find that *Thomas Challoner*, Esq; Member for *Richmond*, spoke as follows : *

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.
October.

Mr. Speaker,

YOU have just now heard two Papers read before you, from the Commissioners of *Scotland*; the first concerning the Disposal of the King's Person; the other touching the Distractions of the *North*, by reason, as they say, of the Non-payment of their Army: I shall speak nothing to the latter, because it hath been so sufficiently answer'd by divers knowing Members of this House. To the first I shall wholly apply myself, because little or nothing hath been said to that Point.

Mr. Challoner's
Speech upon the
foregoing Papers
being read in the
House of Com-
mons.

The Question then before you is about the Disposal of the King's Person. You say, That he is to be disposed of as both Houses of Parliament shall think fitting; but your Brethren of *Scotland* say, He is to be disposed of as both Kingdoms shall think fitting; and they fortify their Affirmation with these Reasons :

They say, That he is not only King of *England*, but also King of *Scotland*; and as you have an Interest in him, he being King of *England*, so have they no less Interest in him, he being King of *Scotland*. And as they have not the sole Interest in him, he being King of *Scotland*, because they acknowledge withall that he is King of *England*; so have not you the sole Interest in him, he being King of *England*, because they desire you to remember that he is also King of *Scotland*: So as neither Nation having a sole, but a joint, Interest in his Person, they ought jointly to dispose of it for the Weal and Benefit of both Kingdoms.

This I take to be the whole Scope of their Argument, which they have represented unto you under

* From the original Edition, printed by *Francis Leach*.

This Gentleman was elected in Oct. 1645, in the room of Sir *Thomas Danby*, expelled for taking Part with the King.

An. 22. Car. I.

1646.

October.

under so many Disguises, and as it were by Multiplying Glasses, insomuch as the bare Relating of it takes up three large Sheets of Paper.

‘ But while they debate this great Question with you, touching the Disposal of the King’s Person; and while they positively affirm that he is to be disposed of by the joint Consent of both Nations, give me Leave to remember you that, in the mean Time, they dispose wholly of him themselves; and so have done for these six Months, and may for six Months longer, for any thing I can gather out of these Papers.

‘ Their Argument runs thus: Wheresoever the Kingdom of *Scotland* hath an Interest in their King, there they may dispose of him: But the Kingdom of *Scotland* hath an Interest in their King, he being in *England*; therefore in *England* they may dispose of him.

‘ Sir, This may seem at the first to some to be a fair and specious Argument; but, let it be well considered, it will prove erroneous and fallacious: For, in the major Proposition, they understand one Thing by the Word *King*; and, in the minor Proposition, they understand another Thing by the Word *King*; and so here is a Conclusion inferred which the Premises will not warrant.

‘ For the clearing whereof, I pray, Sir, remember that this Word *King* is of a various Signification; sometimes it is taken *in abstracto*, that is for the Royal Power, Function, and Office of a King; sometimes it is taken *in concreto*, that is, for the Man or Person whom we call King.

‘ If their major Proposition be taken in the first Sense, we shall never deny it them; nay we shall acknowledge that the King of *Scotland*, being taken *in abstracto*, we have nothing to do with him at all; he is solely and totally theirs. God forbid that a King of *Scotland*, going out of his Kingdom, should either make *Scotland* cease to be a Kingdom, or give any Participation of Interest to that Country where he doth reside: Let his Person reside in the furthest Parts of the Earth, yet the
Royal

Royal Office and Capacity of the King resideth An. 22. Car. I.
still in *Scotland*: They have his Sword to do Ju- 1646.
stice by; they have his Sceptre to shew Mercy by; }
they have his Seal to confirm what they please by; }
and they have his Laws to govern by: And in this }
Sense it is only meant that the King is never under }
Years, never dies, cannot be deceived, can neither }
do Wrong or take Wrong of any Body; and, in }
this Sense, we fight for King and Parliament, tho' }
the Person of the King be in Opposition to both; }
and in this Sense the Returns and Tests of the }
King's Writs are, *coram me-ipso apud Westmona-*
sterium, and *teste me-ipso apud Westmonasterium*,
let the Person of the King at the same Time be in
France, or the remotest Country in the World:
But a King of *Scotland*, taken in this Sense, is ne-
ver out of *Scotland*; and, therefore, whereas they
say in the minor Proposition, *That the Kingdom of*
Scotland hath an Interest in their King, he being in
England, this must needs be meant of a King in
concreto; that is, only of the Person of their King,
and not of his Royal Capacity. And in this Sense
we must deny that they have any thing at all to do
with him; for tho' the Royal Office of the King
of *Scotland* is solely to be disposed of by the State
of *Scotland*, yet it is not so with his Person; for
Persona sequitur Locum; and his Person must be
disposed of by the supreme Power of that Country
wheresoever he shall happen to abide. Suppose a
King of *Scotland* should be in *Spain*, will they say
they have as great an Interest to dispose of his Per-
son there as in *Scotland*? I think they will not say
so; and yet they did affirm last Day at the Confe-
rence, That they had as good Right to dispose of his
Person at *Westminster*, as they had at *Edinburgh*:
But, under their Favour, *England* is as distinct a
Kingdom from *Scotland* as *Spain*: It is as distinct
in Laws, distinct in Privileges, distinct in Interest;
it is neither subordinate to, nor dependant on, *Scot-*
land; and they can no more dispose of a King of
Scotland's Person, he being in *England*, than if he
were in *Spain*.

An. 22. Car. 1.

1646.

October.

‘ I shall take this as granted for good Law, That let the Person of any Nation under the Sun, which is in Amity with *England*, happen to come into *England*, that Person is forthwith a Subject of *England*; for he, being protected by the Laws of *England*, becomes thereby subject to those Laws; it being most certain that *Protectio trahit Subjectionem, et Subjectio Protectionem*; they being Relatives, the one cannot stand without the other; and as no Man can be said to be a Father that hath no Son, nor no Man a Husband that hath no Wife; so no Man can be said to be protected that is not withall thereby subjected: And since, without such Protection, every Man may kill him and destroy him, it seems to stand with no Proportion of Justice, that a Man should be protected in Life, Limb, or Estate by any Law, that will not subject himself to that Law.

‘ It cannot be denied but that there is a twofold Subjection, legal and local; the legal Subjection is due from a Subject to his natural Prince; the local from any Foreigner to that Prince or State where his Person doth reside. And this, though it be only *pro Tempore*, and the other during Life, yet it doth, for the Time, totally obstruct the Operation of the other Subjection: So that no King can command any Subject of his, living out of his Kingdom; but such Subject of his is to be disposed of by the sole Authority of that supreme Power where he makes his Residence: And since the Question is only about the Person of a King of *Scotland*, for I conceive they will not take upon them any Authority to dispose of the Person of a King of *England*, I do affirm, That if a King of *Scotland* should have come into *England* before the Union of both these Kingdoms, he had been instantly a Subject of *England*, and his Person to be disposed of by the sole Authority of the Laws of *England*; for either we must take him as a King or a Subject, since betwixt them two there is no Medium; as a King we cannot take him, unless we should commit Treason against our natural Prince,
and

and subject ourselves to any but him; it being most certain that there is the same Relation betwixt the King and his Subjects, as betwixt the Husband and his Wife; and as no Man can be said to be a Husband but to his own Wife, so no Man can be said to be a King but to his own Subjects; and therefore we cannot admit of any Regality in the Person of a King of *Scotland* coming into *England*, unless, at the same Time, to the same Person, we should confess Subjection. For that it is most true, that as none can be said to be *Rex sine Regno*; so no Man can be said to be *Rex* but *in Regno*: Therefore, if a King of *Scotland*, coming as aforesaid into *England*, if against the Laws of *England* he do offend, by those Laws of *England* he must be tried, and by none other; for *ubi quis delinquit, ibi punietur*. And it is most sure that we have disposed of the Persons of Kings of *Scotland*, coming into *England*, both living and dead; and if we may dispose of the Person of a King of *Scotland*, without the Consent of the Kingdom of *Scotland*, much more may we dispose of the Person of a King of *England*, he being now in *England*, without their Privy or Advice: But if they have any Power to dispose of him, it is because they are either our Masters or our Fellows: If they be our Masters, let them shew the Time when they conquered us, or the Price for which we were sold unto them: If they be our Fellows, why come they not to our Parliaments, why contribute they not to our Necessities? But as it is apparent that they are two distinct Kingdoms, governed by two distinct Laws; so they ought not to intermeddle one with another's Interest, but to content themselves with what doth naturally appertain to each of them severally.

There is no Doubt to be made but that every Husband hath as great an Interest in the Person of his Wife, as any Subject hath in the Person of his Sovereign; and yet a Man may lose that Interest by some Act of his Wife's; as if she commit Felony, Murder, or Treason, the Law disposeth of her Person, and her Husband cannot claim any

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.

October.

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.

October.

Right so much as to her dead Body : So fareth it with a King, who, by going out of his Kingdom, or by being taken Prisoner by his Enemies, his Subjects lose the Interest they had in him, and he is at the Disposall of his Enemies *Jure Belli*. *John King of England* was cited to appear at *Paris*, to answer for the Death of *Arthur Plantagenet Duke of Brittainy*, whom he had murdered. The State of *England* would not let him go, as holding it a great Indignity and Incongruity that a King of *England* should answer for any thing at *Paris*, right or wrong. The *French* answered, That they cited him not as King of *England*, but as Duke of *Normandy*; as King of *England*, they acknowledged to have nothing to do with him, he was in that Respect without them and beyond them; but as Duke of *Normandy*, which he held in Fee of the Crown of *France*, he owed Fealty and Allegiance for the same to the Crown of *France*, and therefore ought to answer. The *English* replied, That if the Duke of *Normandy* did go, the King of *England* must go; and if the Duke of *Normandy* were beheaded, they knew well enough what would become of the King of *England*. Upon large Debate hereof by all the Lawyers in *France*, it was resolved, that if *John* had been in *Normandy* at the Time of his Summons, he ought to have appeared; but he being *extra Jurisdictionem Regni Franciæ* at the Time of his Summons, and *infra Jurisdictionem Regni Angliæ*, though legally he were a Subject of *France*, yet locally he being in *England*, his Summons was void, and he forfeited nothing by his Non-Appearance.

‘ I will only urge one Argument more, deduced from a known Maxim of the Law. not only of *England* but of *Scotland* also, which the Commissioners of *Scotland* the other Day at the Conference did cite themselves, in my Opinion much against themselves; and that is this, *Quando duo Jura, inter duo Regna*, saith a great Lawyer, *concurrant in una Persona, æquum est ac si essent in diversis*; which is no more than this, When two Kingdoms, held

held by two distinct Titles, do concur in one and the same Person, it is all one as if they were in two distinct Persons. I suppose here is our very Case; here are two Kingdoms, *England* and *Scotland*, held by two distinct Titles, which do both concur in one Person, in the Person of King *Charles*; it is all one saith this Rule and Maxim of the Law, as if they were under two several Persons. Why then put the Case, that there were one King of *England* and another of *Scotland*, would the State of *Scotland* have any thing to do to dispose of the Person of a King of *England*, he being in *England*? I think you will say they could not.

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.

October.

‘ Sir, I am sorry that our Brethren have moved this Question at this Time; for all Questions make Debates, and Debates Differences; and this were a Time for Brothers to reconcile Differences rather than to make them. We have now lived almost 44 Years both under two Princes, and in all this Time this Question was never stirred in till now; had it been stirred in, no question but it had been rejected. The People of *England* would have held it very strange that they could not have disposed of the Person of their own King; or that a King of *England* could not have gone from *Whitehall* to *Richmond* or *Hampton-Court*, without the Will and Appointment of the Council of *Scotland*; they would have thought they had made a bad Bargain by such an Union: For, before the Union, they might have disposed of the Person of their Prince; but after, not. And since they conceived that, by the Addition of *Scotland*, there was an Addition of Charge, they would have been very sorry withall to have had an Addition of Servility.

‘ Since the Beginning of the World there was never before such a Contention about the Person of a King. The *Greeks* and *Trojans* did contend for a long Time in Fight about the dead Body of *Patroclus* which of them should have it; but here is not a Contention about the dead Body of a private Man, but about the living Body of a King: Neither do we contend as they did, who

An. 22. Car. I.

1646.

October.

should have his Person; but here you do contend, as far as I conceive, who shall not have it. Your Brethren of *Scotland* say positively, 'They will not have the King's Person upon any Condition whatsoever. It is now about six Months past that you voted in this House the Demanding of the King's Person, but the Lords then refused to join with you; ever since, untill this present, you yourself did acquiesce, as if you had repented of your former *Vote*:^b Now he must be put upon you, and with such Terms as his present Guardians please to allow of.

' Truly it seems strange to me, that an Army of *Scots*, in Pay of the Kingdom of *England*, which, by the Treaty, ought to be governed by the joint Consent of the Committees of both Kingdoms upon the Place, should, in *England*, take a King of *England* without the Privy of the *English* Committee, and convey him to *Newcastle*, a Town likewise of *England*; and should there keep him for six whole Months, without the Consent of both Houses of Parliament; and when they find it not convenient for them to keep him any longer, then they will capitulate with you upon what Conditions you must receive his Person.

' I never thought to have found a King of *England*, his Person being in *England*, under any other Protection but that of the Laws of *England*; but now I find him under the Protection of a *Scots* Army, whither they say he is fled for Shelter, and that they cannot render him up with Honour.

' Sir, if that Army of theirs be come into this Kingdom as Brethren, Friends, and Confederates, as we hope they are, then is every Person of that Army, during the Time of his Stay here, locally a Subject of *England*; and such Children as are born to them here are not Aliens, but Denizens; and not only local, but legal Subjects of this Kingdom: And therefore they having gotten the King into their Hands, they ought no more to capitulate

^b See Vol. XIV. p. 386, and in this Volume, p. 99,

late upon what Terms he should be delivered into yours, than if the Army of Sir *Thomas Fairfax* were in Possession thereof; who, if they should deny the surrendering of the King unto you, but upon Condition, no question but it were capital.

An. 22. Car. 1.
1646.

October.

‘ They say, That by virtue of the Covenant they are obliged to defend his Person and Authority. What his Authority is in *Scotland* themselves best know; but you are only to judge of it in *England*; since, being not subordinate to any Power on Earth, there is no Power under Heaven can judge you. The Covenant ties you to maintain, in the first Place, the Rights of Parliament, and the Liberties of the Kingdom; and, in the second Place, the King’s Person and Authority; and that only in Defence of the former, and not otherwise. And whereas they expect the King should be received by you with Honour, Safety, and Freedom; I beseech you, Sir, consider whether, as the Case now stands, his Reception with Honour can stand with the Honour of the Kingdom; whether his Safety be not incompatible with the Safety of the Common-Wealth; and whether his Freedom be not inconsistent with the Freedom of the People.

‘ I pray, Sir, take heed lest that, bringing him in with Honour, you do not dishonour yourself, and question the very Justice of all your Actions; be wary that, in receiving him with Safety, you do not thereby endanger and hazard the Common-Wealth; be advised, lest, in bringing him home with Freedom, you do not thereby lead the People of *England* into Thralldom.

‘ I pray, Sir, first settle the Honour, Safety, and Freedom of the Common-Wealth; and then the Honour, Safety, and Freedom of the King; so far as the latter may stand with the former, and not otherwise.

‘ Wherefore I shall conclude with my humble Desire, That you would adhere to your former Vote; that is, That the King be disposed of as both Houses of Parliament shall think fitting; and that you enter into no Treaty, either with the King
or

152 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 22. Car. I. or your Brethren of *Scotland*, lest otherwise thereby
 1646. you retard the going home of their Army out of
 October. *England.*'

The *Scots* Commissioners not having received any Answer to their Paper of the 20th of this Month, relating to their Army in the North of *England*; they sent the following Remonstrances, a few Days after, to the House of Lords, under Cover to their Speaker :

Right Honourable,

A Remonstrance
 from the Scots
 Commissioners,
 requiring Pay for
 their Army.

IT is very well known to the Honourable Houses, that the *Scots* Army, receiving no Pay for these six Months past, have been forced to take free Quarter from the Country People ; whereby the *Northern* Counties have been extremely exhausted and impoverished, and the Necessities of that Army in a great Measure unsupplied. We had rested satisfied that these Things had been already represented to both Houses of Parliament, and that the Inconveniences which might follow thereupon were sufficiently understood : But being advertised, by several Letters, of the growing Necessities of the Army, and the insupportable Burthen of those Parts where they do quarter ; for our further Exoneration, and preventing the great Dangers that may ensue, we have judged it necessary to acquaint the Honourable Houses, that it is rumoured abroad in the *Northern* Parts, that the Country People have a Design to surprize and injure our Forces, as they lie dispersed in their several Quarters. It were a Matter of no great Difficulty for the *Scots* Army, in a forcible Manner, to prevent or suppress any such Insurrection ; but they have resolved to prefer the Public Good, and a happy Correspondence between the Kingdoms, to their own Safety : In pursuance whereof they have written Letters to the Committee of *Yorkshire* and other Counties, earnestly desiring their Concurrence to prevent
 such

From the *Edinburgh* Edition last cited.

' such Inconveniencies as may endanger the Peace An. 22. Car I.
 ' and Union betwixt the Kingdoms: And have 1646.
 ' given Direction to the General Officers of the October.
 ' Army to confer with the Gentlemen of the
 ' Country, and to use their utmost Endeavours to
 ' remove all Jealousies and Mistakes; and particu-
 ' larly to acquaint them how earnestly desirous they
 ' are, and have been for above these two Months
 ' past, to remove out of this Kingdom, and re-
 ' turn to their native Country. Upon which Con-
 ' siderations it is our renewed earnest Request to
 ' the Honourable Houses, that the first 200,000*l.*
 ' may be speedily raised and sent to the Army, and
 ' the Security for the other agreed upon, that they
 ' may forthwith march out of this Kingdom; or
 ' otherwise that, in the mean Time, some Course
 ' may be taken for supplying that Army, and
 ' easing of the Country untill the Money be raised,
 ' whereby the great Danger that is like to arise,
 ' to the Disturbance of the Peace betwixt the
 ' Kingdoms, may be prevented: For if the *Scots*
 ' Army shall be forced to enlarge their Quar-
 ' ters *Southward*, and, in the mean Time, Sir
 ' *Thomas Fairfax's* Army, as we are informed, do
 ' enlarge their Quarters *Northward* into those har-
 ' rased and exhausted Counties, it is easy to fore-
 ' see that these Kingdoms may unhappily be again
 ' embroiled into new and greater Troubles than
 ' they have yet seen; and what great Advantage
 ' will be given to foreign Nations to make use of
 ' our divided Interests to the Ruin of both. All
 ' which, out of the Conscience of our Duty, and
 ' sincere Affection to the Peace and Happiness of
 ' these Kingdoms, we have thought ourselves
 ' bound timeously to make known; and, against
 ' all Jealousies and Misapprehensions, to give per-
 ' fect and full Assurance, that, whatsoever Reports
 ' or Suggestions there may be to the contrary, no
 ' Persuasion, Terror, Plot, nor Combination, shall
 ' ever be able, directly or indirectly, to divide or
 ' withdraw the Kingdom of *Scotland*, from a firm
 ' Conjunction with this Kingdom; but as they
 ' have

An. 22. Car. 1.
1646.

October.

‘ have done hitherto, so for the future shall continue, in pursuance of the Ends of our Solemn League and Covenant, and against all Opposition whether foreign or intestine, to promote and settle the Peace of both Kingdoms; being very confident that the Honourable Houses, in their Wisdom, will seriously apply themselves to the effectual Means for preventing the Dangers and Evils represented; for hastening the Return of our Army, and satisfying all our just Desires for settling the Peace of these Kingdoms; which, with constant Zeal and fervent Affection, shall ever be faithfully endeavoured by

*Your Lordship's**Worcester-House,
Oct. 24, 1646.**most humble Servants,*

LOUDON, HUGH KENNEDY,
LAUDERDALE, ROBERT BARCLAY,
A. JOHNSTON, CHARLES ERSKINE.

Right Honourable,

Another, complaining of Pamphlets being printed against them, &c.

‘ UPON the 11th of *August*, we did declare how desirous the Kingdom of *Scotland* was of the easing of the Burthens and Pressures of this Nation, and their Willingness forthwith to surrender the Garrisons, and recall their Army out of this Kingdom, reasonable Satisfaction being given for their Pains and Charges. And after the Honourable Houses had resolved upon the Ways and Means for their Satisfaction, we were pressed by them to come to a speedy Agreement concerning the particular Time of the Removal of our Army out of this Kingdom; which was insisted on with so much Earnestness, as, at the Conference in *September* last, it was required, that we should declare, That our Consultation about the Disposing of the King should be no Hindrance to the marching of our Army out of this Kingdom, or to any Treaty concerning the same: To which we did not only willingly assent, but have since declared, That we were ready, within four-and-twenty Hours, to agree

'gree concerning the Time and Place of the Pay- An. 22. Car. I.
 'ment of the first 200,000*l.* and the Security to 1646.
 'be given for the other; and to appoint a Day for }
 'the Delivery of the Garrisons, and marching of }
 'our Army out of this Kingdom. For above these }
 'fix Months past no Money hath been sent to our }
 'Army, nor hath any Course been taken for their }
 'Maintenance during that Time, but they have }
 'been forced to quarter upon the *Northern* Coun- }
 'ties; of whose Sufferings we have been so sen- }
 'sible, that there was no Means could occur to }
 'us which might afford them Relief, but we have, }
 'from Time to Time, represented the same to the }
 'Honourable Houses: And we may, from certain }
 'Knowledge, and with Confidence, say, that, for }
 'above these two Months past, the *Northern* }
 'Counties have been no more desirous to be }
 'eased of their Pressures, than the *Scots* Army }
 'hath been to remove out of this Kingdom, }
 'and return to their native Country. All which }
 'notwithstanding, we do perceive that our mali- }
 'cious Enemies will never give over to calum- }
 'niate even our best Actions and most faithful En- }
 'deavours; and, for their own base Ends, to fo- }
 'ment and increase Jealousies and Differences be- }
 'tween the Kingdoms, as may appear by a printed }
 'Declaration here inclosed^d; which we do find to }
 'be so full of wicked Spight, bitter Invectives, and }
 'detestable Lyes, against the *Scots* Army; and so }
 'directly aiming to stir up a Disaffection in the }
 'People against that Nation and Army, as we }
 'could not but present it to the View of the Ho- }
 'nourable Houses; earnestly desiring them seri- }
 'ously to consider how they would construct of it, }
 'if Diurnals and Pamphlets of this Kind were }
 'daily licensed in the Kingdom of *Scotland*, to be }
 'printed against the *English* Nation or Army, and }
 'no Course taken for their Vindication; but }
 'rather all Papers which may clear their Proceed- }
 'ings denied to be licensed, or stopped and sup- }
 'pressed

^d The Declaration, here referr'd to, is not printed with this Remonstrance.

An. 22. Car. 1.

1646.

October.

pressed. We did long since, in our Paper of the
 11th of *August*, express our Confidence that the
 Honourable Houses, in their Wisdom and Ju-
 stice, would take some Course to prevent such
 vile Abuses for the future; and have ever since
 been expecting to hear of their Resolutions for a
 speedy Redress. But having perceived that the
 Patience of the Houses hath animated the Au-
 thors of such Pamphlets to return to their former
 Boldness, we are necessitated to renew our for-
 mer Desires; being still confident that, if the
 Honourable Houses could spare but a little Time
 from their greater Affairs, upon the Perusal and
 Consideration of a few of the Diurnals and Pam-
 phlets that are almost daily published to the
 World, their Wisdom and Affection would ne-
 ver bear with so many base Calumnies and re-
 proachful Aspersions as are therein cast upon their
 Brethren of *Scotland*, with whom they are tied
 by so many Bonds and mutual Obligations. We
 shall not further insist upon this Business, expect-
 ing, upon what is already represented, to receive
 speedy Satisfaction; not doubting also but that
 the Honourable Houses will, in their Wisdom
 and Civility, give Order that the Speeches of the
 Lord-Chancellor of *Scotland*, lately seized on at
 the Press, (and which were by him discharg'd to be
 published till the Conference was reported to the
 Houses) shall be returned unto us. And to the
 end a happy Correspondence, with Love and
 Amity, may be inviolably preserved between the
 Kingdoms, we do again earnestly desire, That
 all Inconveniencies by approaching of Armies may
 be prevented; that some Course may be taken
 for the present Maintenance of the *Scots* Army,
 and Ease of the *Northern* Parts; or, which we
 much rather desire, that the 200,000*l.* may be
 forthwith provided and sent to that Army; and,
 without further Delay, that a Day may be agreed
 on for the Delivery of the Garrisons, and march-
 ing of our Army out of this Kingdom; that, af-
 ter all these Troubles and heavy Pressures of both
 King-

* Kingdoms, they may at last enjoy the Fruits of An. 22. Car. 1.
 * their Labours, a happy Peace, which is the earnest 1646.
 * Desire of

Your Lordship's

October.

Worcester-House,
 Oct. 29, 1646.

most humble Servants,

LOUDON,

HUGH KENNEDY,

LAUDERDALE,

ROBERT BARCLAY.

CHARLES ERSKINE,

Before we conclude the Transactions of this The Parliament
 Month, we shall take Notice of the Preparations attend the Funer-
 ordered for the Earl of *Essex's* Funeral; who was al of the Earl of
 buried on the twenty-second, in *Westminster* Abby, Essex.
 with little less than Regal Pomp and Solemnity;
 both Houses of Parliament, the Lord Mayor, Al-
 dermen, &c. and the Militia of the City of *London*,
 marching in the Procession.

The Lords, also, agreed to an Ordinance, sent An Ordinance
 up by the Commons, for disannulling and making for vacating all
 void all Titles of Honour conferred by the King, Honours granted
 on all Persons, ever since the Lord *Littleton* carried by the King since
 off the Great Seal: And that they shall not May 22, 1642;
 pretend to sit or vote, as Peers, in the Parliament of
England, without the Consent of both Houses of
 Parliament.

But before the putting the Question for the pas-
 sing this Ordinance, the following Lords had asked
 Leave to dissent if it was carried against them;
 and accordingly we find this short Protest entered,
viz. 'That in respect the Ordinance seems to be
 perpetual, and not appearing to be sent to the
 King for his Consent, whereby Things that are
 to be perpetual might be settled in the old Way, by
 the three Estates of the Kingdom, therefore they
 dissented from the same.

RUTLAND,

HUNSDON,

LINCOLN,

WILLOUGHBY,

MIDDLESEX,

NORTH,

SUFFOLK,

ROBERTS.

MULGRAVE,

The

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.

October.

For appointing
Commissioners
of the Great Seal;

The two Houses had likewise a great Dispute, this Month, about nominating new Commissioners of the Great Seal, and several Conferences were held about it. At last they agreed to constitute the Speakers of both Houses joint Commissioners to act in that Office for the Space of twenty Days; but it was enlarged to a longer Time afterwards.

For abolishing
the Name and
Title of Bishops,
&c.

Lastly, in order to the effectual Extirpation of all Episcopal Power out of this Kingdom, the Parliament passed an Ordinance^b, the Preamble to which runs thus: 'That for the abolishing of Archbishops and Bishops, and providing for the Payment of the just and necessary Debts of the Kingdom, into which the same had been drawn by a War, mainly promoted by and in Favour of the said Archbishops and Bishops, and other their Adherents and Dependents, &c.' And then it proceeds to enact, 'That the Name, Title, Style, and Dignity of Archbishop of *Canterbury*, Archbishop of *York*, Bishops of *Winchester* and *Durham*; and of all other Bishops in *England* and *Wales*, be, from *September 6, 1646*, wholly abolished and taken away, and their Lands, Possessions, and Evidences thereof, settled in Trustees, who are to hold such Lands, as the Bishops held of the King, in Fee and common Soccage by Fealty; and such Lands as they held of other than the King, by the accustomed Rents and Services, and discharged of Tithes: That the Trustees have Power to name Surveyors to put the Deeds in safe Custody, who are to take an Oath: That Leases not exceeding three Lives, or twenty-one Years, whereupon an old Rent is reserv'd, are not to be avoided; but Leases made by the Bishops since the first of *December, 1641*, to be void: That such Persons who have surrendered their old Leases since that Time, to the end they might

^b This and the following Ordinance, which are very long, being printed in *Hushands's*, *Scobell's*, and *Rushworth's Collections*, we judge an Abstract of the most material Clauses of them sufficient for our Purpose.

‘ might have a new one granted, shall enjoy their
 ‘ old Leases; with a Saving of the Right of all
 ‘ Persons other than the King and the Bishops; An. 22. Car. I.
1646.
 ‘ also to those who have adhered to the Parliament, November.
 ‘ such Estates as they have forfeited for Non-
 ‘ payment of Rent, and saving, to the Earl of *Pem-*
 ‘ *broke* and *Montgomery*, *Durham-House*: That all
 ‘ Rents payable to charitable Uses be continued:
 ‘ That the Sheriff present to the Judges a fit Per-
 ‘ son to perform the Office of Ordinary: That
 ‘ Commissions upon the Statute for charitable Uses
 ‘ shall be valid, though the Bishop be therein
 ‘ omitted: And that all Issues, triable by the Or-
 ‘ dinary or Bishop, shall be tried by Jury in usual
 ‘ Courſe.’

November. As the last Month ended with an Ordinance for vesting the Temporalities of the Bishops in Trustees, &c. for the Use of the Public; so this began with another for the absolute Sale of them: It was sent up to the House of Lords on the third of this Month, where being canvassed and debated till the 16th, it passed, with some Amendments.

This Ordinance, after reciting the former, enacts, And for selling
all their Tempo-
ralities.
 ‘ That the Trustees therein named shall stand
 ‘ seized of, and receive, the Rents and Profits of
 ‘ the Bishops Lands due after the first of *Novem-*
 ‘ *ber*, 1646: That they have Power to chuse their
 ‘ Counsel, and appoint Stewards of Manors and
 ‘ other Officers, who are to be paid by the Treasurers:
 ‘ That the Contractors for the Sale of the
 ‘ Premises, therein named, be allowed Two-pence
 ‘ per Pound for every Sum they pay the Treasurers:
 ‘ That the Trustees, or any five of them,
 ‘ have Power to convey, according to Contract of
 ‘ six or more of the Contractors enter’d and certified
 ‘ to the Trustees; none of whom are to be Contractors,
 ‘ nor any of the Contractors to be Purchasers:
 ‘ That the Purchasers shall hold the Lands
 ‘ discharged of all Trusts, Accounts, &c. and of
 ‘ all Incumbrances made by the Trustees; who,
 ‘ as

An. 22. Car. 1.

1646.

November.

as well as the Contractors are to be indemnified :
 ' That all Persons Rights be saved which were so
 ' by the former Ordinance : That the *Jura Re-*
 ' *galia* of the Bishopricks of *Durham* and *Ely* re-
 ' main in the Trustees named in the Ordinance
 ' for abolishing of Archbishops and Bishops : That
 ' no Churches, Chapels, or Church yards be sold :
 ' That the Assembly of Divines be paid their Al-
 ' lowance due to them by former Orders of Parlia-
 ' ment, with all their Arrears, out of the Reve-
 ' nues of the Archbishoprick of *Canterbury*, untill
 ' such Time as the Lands and Revenues of the
 ' Archbishops and Bishops be sold : That any
 ' Purchaser who shall be evicted by any eigne
 ' Right, &c. shall have Recompense made him for
 ' the Money he has paid; and, if required, an Act
 ' of Parliament, or Letters Patent under the Great
 ' Seal, for the further Assurance of the Premisses
 ' to any Purchaser : That the Treasurers therein
 ' named have Power to take Subscriptions for the
 ' raising 200,000 *l.* for the Service of the Com-
 ' monwealth, who are, upon Certificate, to ascer-
 ' tain the Money and Interest upon the Public
 ' Faith, and to give Receipts for it : That Money
 ' due by this Ordinance may be assign'd over :
 ' Persons producing a forged Certificate to the
 ' Treasurers, to forfeit any Sum lent by them :
 ' That every Subscriber pay his Subscription with-
 ' in eight Days, on Pain of forfeiting what Mo-
 ' ney is due to him on the Public Faith, unless he
 ' shew a reasonable Cause to the contrary, to be
 ' allowed of by the Trustees : That the Treasu-
 ' rers pay no Part of the said 200,000 *l.* so to be
 ' raised, but by Ordinance of Parliament; nor any
 ' Money that may come into their Hands by Sale
 ' of the Premisses, but by Warrant of the Trustees :
 ' That the Lenders be paid the fourth Part of their
 ' Money, in course as they paid in the same, with
 ' the Interest then due, as Money shall arise by
 ' Sale of the Premisses; but if they be Purchasers
 ' they may deduct all the Money due to them :
 ' That the Treasurers give in their Accounts every
 ' six

‘ six Weeks to the Committee for taking the Ac- An. 22. Car. I.
 ‘ counts of the Kingdom, and have one Penny *per* 1646.
 ‘ Pound allowed them for all Money by them re-
 ‘ ceived and paid: That *Henry Elsyng*, Esq;
 ‘ Clerk of the House of Commons, be Keeper of
 ‘ all Records concerning the Lands, &c., of the
 ‘ late Archbishops and Bishops; to whom Sur-
 ‘ veyors and Contractors are to make their Re-
 ‘ turns, and he to be allowed 100 *l. per Annum* and
 ‘ other reasonable Fees for Writing, Rating, &c.
 ‘ That the Trustees name Surveyors, any three or
 ‘ more of whom shall have Power to enquire
 ‘ what Honours, Manors, Lordships, &c. did be-
 ‘ long to any of the Archbishops or Bishops, and
 ‘ what Sums any of the Premises are chargeable
 ‘ with for pious Uses, and to make an exact Sur-
 ‘ vey; which Surveys are to be kept in such
 ‘ Places as the Trustees shall appoint: That the
 ‘ Surveyors may keep Courts, cause any Person to
 ‘ shew their Writings, and examine on Oath;
 ‘ which they or the Trustees have Power to ad-
 ‘ minister, and to commit to Prison such Persons
 ‘ as shall refuse to take the same, provided they
 ‘ be not Peers: That the Commissioners of Ex-
 ‘ cise pay Interest for the Money due by this Ordi-
 ‘ nance every six Months, after the Rate of 8 *l. per*
 ‘ *Cent.* That Col. *Robert Manwaring* be appointed
 ‘ Register-Accountant of all Accounts concerning
 ‘ the Premises, with a Salary of 200 *l. per Ann.*
 ‘ That Alderman *John Fowke*, of London, be ap-
 ‘ pointed Comptroller of all Entries, Receipts, and
 ‘ Payments; with the like yearly Salary: And for
 ‘ the better securing the Monies due by this Ordi-
 ‘ nance, the Excise settled on the 11th of *Septem-*
 ‘ *ber*, 1643, shall be continued, &c.’ Then fol-
 low Instructions to be observed by the Comptrol-
 ler, the Contractors, the Surveyors, and the Re-
 gister.

Thus the Titles, Honours, and Jurisdictions of
 Bishops were utterly abolished; and their Lands
 and Revenues all ordered to be sold, by an Ordi-

An. 22. Car. I. Finance of Parliament, without ever consulting the King about it.

1646.

November.

There was some Debate between the two Houses as to setting a Price for the Purchase of these Lands; the Lords being for eight Years Purchase, and the Commons for ten. The former gave these Reasons for only eight: First, For the speedy Sale of them, that the Monies may be sooner raised by them: Secondly, That thereby they may be the better dispersed into several Hands: And, thirdly, The Lords had considered of the Sales made of the Abbey-Lands by King *Henry* the Eighth; and did find, that their Lands were then sold at a far lower Rate, although those Times were Times of Peace. The latter argued, That the Bishops Demesne Lands were lett at a very low Rate, and they had a great Addition to them to invite Purchasers, as Houses and Woods; and therefore were to be set at a higher Rate than the other Lands, as being the best and fairest Security: That if their Lordships and some of the Members of the House of Commons would be Purchasers of some of the Bishops Lands, it would be an Honour and Credit to the Sale: But if they and the Commons should pull down the Rate to eight Years Purchase, it would be thought to be done on Purpose to have the easier Bargains. The Lords were convinced by these Reasons, and agreed to ten Years Purchase as it stands in the Ordinance.

To shew what Use the Parliament intended to put some of the Money to, arising from this Sale, we find the following Declaration agreed to by both Houses:

Out of the Produce whereof, 200,000 l. to be paid to the Scots.

‘ Be it declared, by the Lords and Commons in Parliament, That the first 100,000 l. which shall be raised, either by the Sale of the Bishops Lands, or on the Credit of the Ordinances which are passed for that Purpose, shall be paid to our Brethren of *Scotland*, upon the Marching of their Army and Forces out of this Kingdom, at such Time and Place as shall be agreed upon. And
‘ the

‘ the next 50,000 *l.* so raised, at the End of three Months after the former Payment; and 50,000 *l.* more, raised as aforesaid, at the End of nine Months after the first Payment. But, in case the latter 100,000 *l.* shall be more speedily procured, the same shall be sooner paid to them; although there be no Engagement for a more speedy Payment, than at the Times before expressed.’

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.

November.

Indeed the *Scots* Army, being still in the Northern Parts of this Kingdom, was a grievous Burden to that Country to support. Many Instances and Evidences of which, on good Authority, were sent up to Parliament, and read in both Houses. And that a downright Rupture between the two Nations was then expected, in which the scattered Royalists in *England* might reap some Advantage, appears by the House of Commons ordering Guards to be placed at the several Passes over the River *Trent*; that they should take special Care to suffer none to go Northward, without warrantable Passes; and that all Persons whatsoever, who had borne Arms against the Parliament, and other suspected Persons armed, should be stopped. But the *Scots* Commissioners, in order to clear their Army from the Charge of being the Occasion of these Oppressions, presented the following Memorial to the House of Lords, address’d to their Speaker:

Right Honourable,

Nov. 3, 1646.

‘ UPON Saturday Night we received from your Lordships several Papers and Petitions, sent out of the Northern Parts of this Kingdom, concerning the Sufferings of the Inhabitants there, and the Monies paid by them to the *Scots* Army; to which Papers, untill we receive particular Information from our Army, we return this Answer;

‘ That we are informed by some of the Officers of the *Scots* Army now in *London*, that the Inhabitants

The *Scots* Vindication against the Charge of oppressing the Country by their Army,

An. 22. Car. 1.

1646.

November.

bitants of *Cleveland, Bedale, and Askrig*, who sent these Petitions to the Parliament, have suffered more than any others in the Northern Counties, the Quarters of the *Scots Army* being strait, and those Parts fittest for their Accommodation; but that divers Proportions mentioned in those Papers are not near so great as they are represented; and in particular, that the Sums are much less in the subscribed Accounts given by the Country to the *Scots Army*; and whatever Monies are paid by them to the *Scots Army*, they discharge their Quarters with those Monies; which however they may be disproportionable to the Abilities of the Country, yet there is no more taken than in the least Measure may enable the Army to subsist; nor is there any more allowed unto them than Four-pence *per Diem* to the Foot Soldier, Twelve-pence to the Horse, and a third Part Pay to the Officers.

Upon all which we do observe, That the *Scots Army*, receiving no Pay from the Parliament for near these seven Months past, are enforced to quarter in those Parts of the Kingdom which are most exhausted, and have suffered most since the Beginning of these Wars; and are also exceeding straitned in their Quarters, by reason the *English Forces* do lie so near them, whereof the Effects are the Undoing of the poor Inhabitants there; the rendering of the *Scots Army* odious, and raising Discontent in the People against them; whereas if Care had been taken for their Entertainment, and if their Maintenance had been equally laid upon the whole Kingdom, the *Scots Army* had been much better provided, and the Inhabitants of those Northern Parts had never been subjected to these heavy Burthens. And tho' it were true that the present monthly Charge of the *Scots Army* did amount to 19,700*l.* (which we do very much question) yet this Sum is far short of the 31,000*l.* contracted for by the Treaty, besides the Surplusage that appears due upon Account.

We

‘ We do likewise observe from those Papers, An. 22. Car. I. 1646.
 ‘ That we have good Reason to complain of the
 ‘ vile Aspersions so unjustly cast upon the *Scots Army* by the *Weekly Diurnals* and *Pamphlets*; in
 ‘ particular of that printed Declaration presented
 ‘ by us to the Houses; wherein, beside other detest-
 ‘ able and exasperating Language to delude the
 ‘ People, it is said, *That the Scots Army do assess*
 ‘ *according to the Rate of 147,000l. per Menssem;*
 ‘ and we do expect that the Honourable Houses
 ‘ will, in Justice, take Order with such Abusers
 ‘ of the People, and prevent their Practices for the
 ‘ future; upon which we do the rather insist, in
 ‘ that the *Diurnal* this Week has reprinted the
 ‘ same Things; and, to deceive the People, has
 ‘ greatly perverted the Meaning of some Things
 ‘ contained in the Petitions sent from the North:
 ‘ And it doth farther appear, that the Desires of
 ‘ those Petitions and Letters are the same with ours,
 ‘ and that there is an urgent Necessity for the
 ‘ Houses of Parliament speedily to take into Con-
 ‘ sideration the Desires of our several Papers, for
 ‘ hastening the 200,000l. to the Army, and their
 ‘ Removal out of this Kingdom.

‘ And since the Necessities of that Army do daily
 ‘ increase, and the longer they stay in the King-
 ‘ dom they must needs be a greater Burthen to it,
 ‘ especially to those Parts where they do quarter;
 ‘ and seeing most of Sir *Thomas Fairfax’s Army*
 ‘ (for what Ends we know not) is marched North-
 ‘ ward, whereby Differences may arise to the Di-
 ‘ sturbance of the Peace of the Kingdoms, we do
 ‘ earnestly intreat the Honourable Houses to lay
 ‘ these Things timeously to Heart; and to give
 ‘ such a speedy and just Answer to our former Pa-
 ‘ pers, as may be a Means to preserve these King-
 ‘ doms in a happy Union and brotherly Correspon-
 ‘ dence.

*By Command of the Commissioners for the Parlia-
 ment of Scotland.*

JOHN CHIESLEY.

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.

November.

Col. George
Monk first em-
ployed by the
Parliament.

Nov. 12. This Day we find an Entry in the *Journals* of a Report made to the Lords, from the Commissioners of both Kingdoms, That Colonel *George Monk* had been with them, and had engaged his Honour that he would faithfully serve the Parliament in the War of *Ireland*, if he might be employed thither. That he had taken the Negative Oath, was willing to take the Covenant; and would be ready for his Journey at a Day's Warning^b; which being signified to the Commons, both Houses agreed to his Commission, as a Person well qualified to do great Service in those Wars. This is the first public Notice we have met with relating to the Conduct of this Officer, who makes such a Figure in these Annals afterwards.

Both Houses re-
solve to comple-
ment General
Fairfax on his
Arrival in Lon-
don.

Nov. 13. The Speaker acquainted the Lords, That, the Day before, Sir *Thomas Fairfax* arrived in Town, and the same Night came to him, and expressed his Readiness to serve that House in all Things that laid in his Power. Upon which the Question was put, Whether the House should appoint their Speaker, with a Committee of the whole House, to go and complement Sir *Thomas Fairfax* on his Arrival? it was carried in the Affirmative; the following Lords, by Name, only protesting against this Vote; the Earls of *Middlesex*, *Suffolk* and *Lincoln*; and the Lords *Hunsdon*, *Willoughby*, and *Maynard*. The next Morning, at Eleven o'Clock, was appointed for the Speaker to go to Sir *Thomas*, with the whole House, to congratulate his coming to Town, and make an Acknowledgment of his good Services done to the Parliament and Kingdom.

The same Day the Commons also came to a Resolution, That their Speaker, with the whole House, should, the next Morning, make a Visit to Sir *Thomas Fairfax*, their General; and return him the Thanks of the Commons of *England*, as

an

^b Col. *Monk* was taken Prisoner in the Fight at *Nantwich*, in *Cheeshire*, in 1643, being then in the King's Service.

an Acknowledgment of the great Blessings of Almighty God upon his faithful Services, wise Conduct and great Valour, in the whole Discharge of the great Trust committed unto him, and reducing the distracted Affairs of this Kingdom to the present happy Condition and Issue. Accordingly both Houses went to visit him; when, as a Journalist of these Times informs us^e, the Earl of *Manchester*, Speaker of the House of Peers, in the Name of that House, address'd the General to this Effect; 'He gave his Excellency Thanks for all his Care and Pains in the Defence of the Public, expressing their great Acknowledgment of his memorable Services, and faithful Performance of the Trust reposed in him; which their Lordships should always have in Remembrance, and be ready upon all Occasions to express their Gratitude.' But

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.
November.

Mr. *Rushworth* tells us that *William Lenthall*, Esq; Speaker of the House of Commons, made the following Speech to Sir *Thomas Fairfax* :

S I R,

'I Have a very hard Task to perform; to present the Respects of the House of Commons according to your Excellency's Merit, and their Desires. To effect this accordingly, I should have informed myself from Histories that have preserved the Memories of the famous Worthies of former Ages, and should have taken the Dimensions of the largest Coronets and Trophies wherewith they are made glorious; and even those would rather streighten than enlarge the Temples of your Excellency: Or else I should have consulted some of the most learned and eloquent Orators, who have set forth the glorious Gests performed in former Times, whereby I might have insisted on some Parallel for your Wildom, Piety, Justice, and Valour; but I conceived the Virtues and Success which God had bestowed upon you, were very hardly

^e *A perfect Diurnal of some Passages in Parliament, No. 173.*

An. 22. Car. 1. hardly to be match'd, and rather needed more Industry and Memory to enumerate, than Oratory to polish.

1646.
November.

‘ Heretofore when I red the Histories of the Acts of famous Princes and Warriors, in this or other Nations, it was not without some Jealousy that in them there was some Mixture and Glosses of Oratory and Art, the more to set off and give Lustre to their Acts, as Arguments of Emulation for others to follow the Footsteps of their Virtues; but the Actions of your Excellency will add Lustre and Belief to them, being all verified in you. And indeed here, considering the swift Marches, and the Expedition of those grand and difficult Attempts, which were prosecuted and effected by your Excellency, I may say, *The Almighty came riding on the Wings of the Wind*; for these were nothing else but the *Magnalia Dei*, acted in and by you his Instrument.

‘ It was the Custom of the antient *Romans*; after a glorious and successful Prince, to derive his Name to Posterity in Memory of his Virtues; as after that great Prince *Julius Cæsar*, his Successors retained the Name of *Cæsars*, as *Augustus Cæsar*, *Tyberius Cæsar*, &c. Thus hereafter all famous and victorious succeeding Generals in this Kingdom, (if the Times shall prove so unfortunate) will desire the Addition of the Name of *Fairfax*.

‘ And surely the Honour of the late Lord-General was not, whilst he lived, any Way eclipsed by the Succession of your Excellency in his Command; but rather augmented, whilst each retained the Brightness of his own Honour, having both Rays enough to enlighten a Kingdom, then over-set with Clouds and thick Darknefs.

‘ I shall need to say no more but this, That the World will admire your Excellency’s Worth; Posterity will honour your Name; and that the whole House of Commons, in the Name of the Commons of *England*, do return you Thanks for your faithful and memorable Services: The Beginning,

ning, Continuance, and Effect, whereof I must solely attribute to the Almighty, the Lord of Hosts and Victories.

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.
November.

To this extraordinary Harangue (which so modest a Man, as Sir *Thomas Fairfax* is universally allowed to have been, must blush to hear) the General made a short Answer, expressing how much he esteemed himself honoured by the great Respects of the Houses towards him, for which he desired his humble Thanks might be returned; and that he accounted it his greatest Happiness, under God, to be in the least Kind instrumental for theirs and the Kingdom's Good.

Towards the Close of this Month a Message was brought from the House of Commons, with an Order to deliver to the Lords a Letter, with some Examinations, which did concern two Peers of their House, and that they had Directions only to deliver them.

Hereupon the Letter and Examinations were read, the Purport of which was a Charge against the Earls of *Northumberland* and *Pembroke*, that they should send Money to the King at *Oxford*, as had likewise some Members of the House of Commons. Their Lordships being present declared their Innocency in this Business, and desired the Houses would please to put it into a Way of Examination. After Debate this Question was put, Whether, at the Desire of the Earl of *Northumberland* and the Earl of *Pembroke*, there shall be a Committee appointed; and that the House of Commons be acquainted that the Lords desire them to appoint a Committee of their own House, who may be present, if they think fit, to examine this Business? It was resolved in the Affirmative, and an Order made for attaching the Body of *Richard Lloyd* of the *Inner-Temple*, Esq; and bringing him before the Lords, to answer the Scandals raised by him against the Earls of *Northumberland* and *Pembroke*.

Then

An. 22. Car. I.

1646.

November.

Then the following Examination of the said *Richard Lloyd*, taken by the Standing Committee of Parliament in *Truro*, Nov. 16, 1646, was read:

‘ That this Examinant confessed, That on *Sunday* last, being at Dinner at the Sign of the Bull in *Truro*, together with Mr. *Cowes* and Mr. *Trerise*, he, amongst other Things, told them of certain Monies sent from two Lords of Parliament to the King at *Oxford*, during the late Wars in this Kingdom.

‘ And this Examinant now saith, That he, being at *Oxford* about four Years last past, was a Gentleman of the Privy Chamber extraordinary to the King, and rode in his Troop; and about that Time there were two Gentlemen that came from *London*, the one call’d Mr. *Compton*, who was a Page to the Earl of *Pembroke*, and was then one of the King’s Servants; and that they told this Examinant they had brought from *London* 4000 *l.* in Gold quilted about them, from the Earl of *Northumberland* and the Earl of *Pembroke*, from each 2000 *l.* which they had sent to the King; and that the said *Compton* lay in the same House in *Oxford* where this Examinant lay; and that they were so sore with carrying the said Money, that they told this Examinant they kept their Beds three or four Days: That Sir *George Crynes* of *Peckham* in *Surry*, being then at *Oxford*, told this Examinant that he had brought 100 *l.* to the King, which Sir *Poynings Moore*, a Member of the House of Commons, had sent to the King from *London*; and that Sir *Thomas Longueville*, near *Stony-Stratford*, told this Examinant above two Years past, that he had 4 or 500 *l.* sent by some Parliament-Men, Friends of his, to the King: And this Examinant knoweth that there was, of the said Monies, 140 or 150 *l.* paid by Order from Sir *Edward Hyde*, the Chancellor, for Sir *Thomas Lunsford*’s Pay.

‘ And he further confesseth to have said, That the Reasons why the said Persons sent the Money afore-

‘aforesaid was, because the Parliament was weak, An. 22. Car. I.
‘and they knew not how Things would fall out.’ 1646.

Next were read the Examinations of Mr. *Tre-
rise* and Mr. *Cowes* in Confirmation of the fore-
going, and almost in the very same Words, which
we therefore omit.

November.

Nov. 26. No farther Notice of these Exami-
nations being as yet taken by the Lords, we shall
here exhibit a Copy of another Letter from Colo-
nel *Mitton*, in *Wales*, directed to the Speaker of
the House of Lords, concerning the farther Con-
duct of the Archbishop of *York*, in that Country.

Right Honourable,

‘U Nderstanding that my Lord of *York* hath
‘been formerly known unto your Honour,
‘and that you have been some happy Means to
‘reduce him unto the Service of the Parliament;
‘whereby I found him very steady to those En-
‘gagements which I had received from him, and
‘wherewith he hath, from the first Hour untill
‘now, most punctually complied; I do presume
‘to assure your Lordship by these few Lines, upon
‘this Occasion of taking in of the Castle of *Con-
way*, that I have found from this worthy Per-
‘sonage that real and continued Assistance in the
‘Service of the Parliament, for these six or seven
‘Months, that I cannot say that I found the like
‘from any other. He had garrisoned his House
‘for the Parliament before my entering upon this
‘Country; was the first who openly owned and
‘received me and my Forces; assisted me with
‘Men at the Siege of *Carnarvon*; blocked up,
‘with some Assistance I sent him, the Town of
‘*Conway*, and saved the Country round about from
‘Plundering; drew me, by his Advice, to storm
‘that high walled Town; and never did take off
‘his Hands from this Business till this Day that
‘the Castle was surrendered; which being a Truth
‘so generally known in all these Parts, I held my-
‘self bound in Honesty to impart unto your Lord-
‘ship,

Col. Mitton's
further Account
of the Services
done to the Par-
liament by Arch-
bishop Williams.

An. 22. Car. 1. ^c ship, and by your Lordship, if your Honour
 1646. ^c please, unto that most Honourable House; and
 November. ^c so, humbly taking my Leave, I rest

Conway, Nov. 10, Your Honour's humble Servant,
 1646.

THO. MITTON.

Whereupon they For these great Services the Parliament, some
 grant him a ge- Time after ^d, thought fit to free and discharge this
 neral Pardon. — Prelate from all Manner of Sequestrations of his
 Estate, real and personal, and to pass a general
 Pardon to him for all his past Offences.

A Committee of the Commons had been busy,
 for some Time, in framing an Answer to the
Scots Commissioners Papers, concerning the dispo-
 sing of the King's Person; and on the 28th of this
 Month, it was read in that House. After which
 the Question being put, Whether the Lords Con-
 currence should be desired to this Answer? it pas-
 sed in the Negative, on a Division of 110 against 90.
 Next it was resolved, That a Copy of this An-
 swer to the *Scots Commissioners Papers* shall be
 sent to them, as the Answer of the House of Com-
 mons. This was afterwards ordered to be printed
 and published, and we give it at large from the
 original Edition ^c.

*The ANSWER of the COMMONS assembled in Par-
 liament, to the SCOTS COMMISSIONERS PAPERS
 of the 20th, and their Letter of the 24th of Oc-
 tober last.*

The Commons Answer to the ^c **T**HAT there might be a firm and lasting
Scots Commis- ^c brotherly Union between the two King-
sioners Papers, ^c doms, is the earnest Desire of our Hearts; and
 claiming a joint ^c that our Proceedings may be according to our
 Right in dispo- ^c Covenant and the Treaties between us; and
 sing of the King's ^c that our Endeavours have been accordingly our
 Person. ^c own

^c On the second of April, 1647.

^c Printed for Edward Husband, Printer to the Honourable House
 of Commons, and are to be sold at his Shop in Fleetstreet, at the
 Sign of the Golden Dragon, near the Inner Temple, Dec. 4, 1646.

own Consciences, our Brethren of *Scotland*, and all that know our Ways, can bear us Witness.

An. 22. Car. I.

1646.

November.

That we may still walk in the same Path, prevent all Misapprehensions, and bring a right Understanding amongst us, the Commons assembled in the Parliament of *England* do return this ensuing Answer to your Lordships two Papers of the twentieth, and to your Letter of the Twenty-fourth of *October* last; wherein our End being to give Satisfaction to the Arguments in your Papers, we shall therefore answer the several Particulars in the Method we find them; only, to make our whole Intentions the more easily known (the Method you have taken in your Papers not allowing us a clear Connection of the Matters therein contained, and inforcing us to repeat the same Thing oftener than we desire) we shall first premise and lay down these following Considerations:

First, That your Papers being grounded upon the Resolutions of both Houses, and on the Conference thereupon had, we shall set down the true State of the Fact concerning them, which was thus:

Upon the 24th of *September*, 1646, the Houses passed these Resolutions, viz.

1. That the Person of the King shall be disposed of as both the Houses of the Parliament of *England* think fit.

2. That the Houses do declare, That whatsoever Conference, Consultation, or Debate shall be with the Commissioners of *Scotland* concerning the Disposal of the Person of the King, it shall not be understood to be any Capitulation in relation to the retarding of the March of the Scots Armies and Forces out of this Kingdom, or of any Treaty between the Kingdoms concerning the same.

And, upon the same 24th Day of *September*, the following, A Committee is appointed to meet with a proportionable Number of the Lords in the Painted-Chamber, to confer, consult, and debate with the Commissioners of *Scotland*, concerning the

Dis-

An. 22. Car. 1.

1646.

November.

Disposal of the Person of the King, if it shall be desired by the Scots Commissioners; and this to be communicated to the Scots Commissioners by the Members of both Houses of the Committee of both Kingdoms. These Resolutions, ordered to be communicated to the Commissioners of Scotland, were accordingly delivered to them by the Members of both Houses, that are of the Committee of both Kingdoms, the 25th of the same Month.

Upon the 29th Day of September your Lordships, by your Paper, (sign'd John Ghesley, by Command of the Commissioners for the Parliament of Scotland) desired a Conference in these Words, We have perused the Votes of both Houses, communicated to us by your Lordships; and as we did formerly desire in our Paper of the 11th of August last, so we shall be ready on Thursday next to confer, debate, and consult with such as the Honourable Houses have thought fit to appoint; and if their Committee cannot with Conveniency meet at that Time, we desire it may be so soon as possibly they can.

Which was thus granted, viz. October 1, ordered, That the Committee formerly appointed to meet with the Commissioners of Scotland, do meet this Afternoon at Three of the Clock, with the said Commissioners, to confer, debate, and consult with them, concerning the Disposal of the Person of the King, according to the former Votes and Declarations of both Houses.

Upon the first Day of October, before the Conference did begin, all these Papers were read, and your Lordships were told by our Committees, If you were pleased to say any thing herein, they were ready to confer with you according to these Resolutions, so as this Conference was by your Consent to be with these two Limitations, viz.

1. *That it should be about the Disposing of the King's Person as both Houses of the Parliament of England shall think fit.*

2. *That it shall not be understood to be any Capitulation, in relation to the retarding of the*
March

March of the *Scots* Armies and Forces out of the Kingdom, or of any Treaty between the Kingdoms concerning the same.

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.

November.

And all Things in your Speeches and Papers concerning Change of Fundamental or Monarchical Government, or Uniformity in Church-Government, Toleration of all Sects and Sorts of Religions, concerning the King's voluntary disposing of himself, (it being granted by you, that his Person is to be disposed of by your joint Consent) or concerning the Manner of disposing of him, and all other Things of like Nature, saving only about the Right of this Kingdom to dispose of the Person of the King in *England*, without the joint Advice and Consent of the Kingdom of *Scotland*, being foreign to the Matter of these Resolutions, were improper at this Conference; for our Committee having their Limits could not expect to hear any such, or were to intermeddle to give an Answer to them.

Secondly, That the Matter of the Conference being stated by the Houses, and your Lordships often put in mind, in answer to your Claim for the Kingdom of *Scotland*'s Right of joint Interest in disposing the Person of the King, that the sole Matter thereof was concerning the two Houses of Parliament of *England* having the Right to dispose of the Person of the King in the Kingdom of *England*, without the joint Advice and Consent of the Kingdom of *Scotland*, your Lordships did make your Objections, to which our Committees answered; your Lordships replied, and our Committees answered those Replies; yet, in your Paper, you state the Question as if to be debated on your Resolutions, and place our Committee to make Objections; and your Lordships make the Answer of our Committees to your first Objections, and their Answer to your Replies, as one intire Objection. Your Lordships well know an Answer to a Reply may be full as to the Reply, yet not applicable to every Part of the first Objection.

Thirdly,

An. 22, Car. 1.
1646.

November.

Thirdly, ' That your Lordships engaged our Committees, at the Conference, to make no Report of any Thing that had passed at the same, till you had delivered your own Answer in Writing; and before any Report made by our Committee, or any Paper put into the Houses by you, some of your Lordships did give Directions for the printing three thousand Copies of the Lord-Chancellor's Speeches at that Conference; which, by the Printer's Confession, had been published on *Thursday* the 15th of *October* last, had they not been sent for by an Order of the House of Commons, *Wednesday* the 14th of the same Month; after which Time, and not before, they received Order from you not to publish them till further Directions; which Speeches are since published, and said to be printed at *Edinburgh*.

' That you printed those Papers, which you afterward gave in to the Houses as your Answer to those Votes, (which were the Subject of the Conference) sooner than it was possible for the Houses to give an Answer to Papers of that Length, as if the Prepossessing of the People were more considered by you than the Satisfaction of the Houses: And if your Lordships had thought fit to have staid for our Answer, we conceive you would not have published those Papers; which is an Action contrary to the Practice of all public Ministers, who ought not to publish to the People the Transactions between them and that State to which they are employed; which we are enforced to represent to your Lordships, and to publish this Answer, it having been so often done by your Directions in this Kingdom, and in this present Business done after such a Manner; neither we, nor any employed by us, having ever done any such Thing in the Kingdom of *Scotland*.

Fourthly, ' That the Interest of *Scotland* in the King, and the Exercise thereof in the Kingdom of *England*, being of several and distinct Natures, are not to be confounded as one and the same Thing; for if you grant that you have no Right
of

‘ of Exercise of Interest in disposing the Person of An. 22. Car. I.
 ‘ the King, he being in *England*, we shall not 1646.
 ‘ dispute your having Interest in him.

Fifthly, ‘ That the Question then was, Who
 ‘ shall dispose of the Person of the King in *Eng-*
 ‘ *land*, and not after what Manner his Person
 ‘ shall be disposed: And it is to be considered in
 ‘ what Condition the King now is, that he hath
 ‘ deserted his Parliament and People, entered into
 ‘ and continued in a bloody and dangerous War
 ‘ against them, hath not granted those Propositions
 ‘ that, by both Kingdoms, were sent unto him, as
 ‘ the Means of a safe and well-grounded Peace;
 ‘ and therefore is not, for the present, in a Condi-
 ‘ tion to exercise the Duties of his Place, or be left
 ‘ to go or reside where and when he pleaseth: And
 ‘ your Lordships did, at the Conference, declare,
 ‘ That it was prejudicial to both Kingdoms for the
 ‘ King to go into *Scotland*.

November.

Sixthly, ‘ That your Lordships cannot in Rea-
 ‘ son insist, because in our disposing the Person of
 ‘ the King we may hereby prejudice the Kingdom
 ‘ of *Scotland*, (the which was never yet done by us)
 ‘ on such a Possibility to claim a joint Right in
 ‘ disposing the Person of the King in this King-
 ‘ dom; which, from the first coming hither of King
 ‘ *James*, now forty-four Years, was never before
 ‘ claimed, when as the two Kingdoms had not
 ‘ then that Security from each other, against all
 ‘ imaginary Prejudices which might happen thro’
 ‘ the Abuses of their particular Rights, as now
 ‘ they have; being engaged by Covenant, in their
 ‘ several Vocations, mutually to preserve the Rights
 ‘ and Privileges of the Parliaments, the Liberties
 ‘ of the Kingdoms, and the King’s Person and
 ‘ Authority, in the Preservation and Defence of
 ‘ the true Religion and Liberties of the King-
 ‘ doms, as by the third Article of the Covenant
 ‘ doth clearly appear.

‘ What would your Lordships think if we should
 ‘ claim joint Right of Interest in your Towns,
 ‘ your Forces, or Money in *Scotland*, upon that

An. 22. Car. I.

1646.

November.

Supposition, That possibly you may use them to the Prejudice of this Kingdom: Let not the Results of your Arguments for Union or for the King be, That the Kingdom of *Scotland* may exercise their Interest in the Kingdom of *England*; nor let your Expressions obliquely infer, That the Parliament of *England* will not do what becometh them to the King, since all the World doth know that this Kingdom hath, in all Times, shewed as great Affection to their Kings as any other Nation.

Seventhly, ' Because your Lordships most insist upon the Covenant and Treaty in this Case, and also throughout all your Answers to those you call Objections, we shall, out of many, insert some of the Expressions in your Papers concerning the Covenant and Treaty.

Page 121 and 122 of your Papers^a. ' *And unless we lay aside the Covenant, Treaties, Declarations of both Kingdoms, and three Years Conjunction in this War, neither the one Kingdom nor the other must now look back upon what they might have done, singly, before such a strict Union; but look forwards what is fittest to be done by both, jointly, for the common Good of both, and for the Ends of the Covenant, which both are obliged, jointly, to prosecute and promote.*

' *And as Reasons may be drawn from the Nature of all Associations, so especially from the Nature of ours in the Solemn League and Covenant; the Title, Narrative, Articles, and Conclusion of it do along link together the Interest of the Kingdoms in this common Cause, so much concerning the Glory of God, their own Safety, Union, and Peace, and the Honour and Happiness of the King and his Posterity; which Ends of the Covenant both Parliaments, as well as other Subjects of both Kingdoms, have obliged themselves jointly and mutually to promote.*

Page

^a In the Original the References are made to the Pages in the Scots own Edition of their Papers: But the above refer to the Pages where they are to be found in this Volume.

Page 122. 'So that the Ends of the Covenant, upon which the Disposal of the King must needs have a strong Influence, are not to be prosecuted by the two Kingdoms, as by two distinct Bodies acting singly; but they were united by solemn Covenant made to Almighty God, and by League each to other, as one entire Body to prosecute this Cause.

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.
November.

Page 125. 'Wherefore we cannot chuse but obtest, by the Conjunction and Parity of Interests, by the Treaty between the Kingdoms, by the Solemn League and Covenant, that there may be a Conjunction of the Councils and Resolutions of both Kingdoms, in disposing of that Royal Person who is King of both.

Page 128. 'That the Prosecution of this War should be with the joint Advice and Consent of both Kingdoms, and, according to these Grounds, a Covenant was agreed upon for the Reformation of Religion, and Preservation of the Liberties of the Kingdoms, and of the King's Person and Authority.

Page 123. 'From the Treaty the same Thing doth further appear, it being thereby manifest, that our Army was to be levied for the common Good of both Kingdoms, in pursuance of the Ends expressed in the Covenant.

Again, Page 123. 'So that if the Disposal of the King's Person, mentioned in the Vote of both Houses, be intended for the Good, Peace, and Security of both Kingdoms, then it should not be done without the mutual Advice and Consent of both. Thus far out of your Papers.

'Having thus laid down that you claim that nothing contained in the Matter of the Covenant, or to be done in pursuance of the Ends thereof, or that hath a strong Influence thereupon, can be done by the Kingdom of England, in England, without the joint Advice and Consent of the Kingdom of Scotland; we shall, in the next Place, lay down the most material Things contained in the Covenant; which are, the Reformation of Religion in England and Ireland; the Extirpation of Popery, Prelacy, Superstition, Heresy, Schism,

An. 22. Car. 1.

1646.

November.

‘ Schism, and Profaneness; the Preservation of the
 ‘ Rights and Privileges of the Parliaments, and Li-
 ‘ berties of the Kingdoms; and to preserve and de-
 ‘ fend the King’s Majesty’s Person and Authority
 ‘ in the Preservation and Defence of the true Re-
 ‘ ligion and Liberties of the Kingdoms.

‘ Whence it necessarily follows, that the Mili-
 ‘ tia, by Sea and Land, in the Kingdoms of *Eng-
 ‘ land* and *Ireland*; the Power of making Peace
 ‘ and War with foreign States; the King’s Con-
 ‘ sent in the enacting any Law; the Power of the
 ‘ Houses of the Parliaments of *England* and *Ire-
 ‘ land*, in Cases of Judicature upon Delinquents
 ‘ and Monopolies, Impositions and other Grievances upon the People of this Kingdom; the
 ‘ conferring the great Places of Honour and Trust,
 ‘ making of Peers of Parliament, conferring other
 ‘ Titles of Honour; what Revenue the King
 ‘ is to have in *England* and *Ireland*, and how to be
 ‘ disposed; and whatsoever also is to be done by the
 ‘ King and Kingdom, or by either of them, in
 ‘ relation each to other, cannot at any Time be
 ‘ acted without the joint Advice and Consent of the
 ‘ Kingdom of *Scotland*: For the Covenant expres-
 ‘ seth in the third Article, *To preserve and defend
 ‘ the King’s Majesty’s Person and Authority, in the
 ‘ Preservation and Defence of the true Religion and
 ‘ Liberties of the Kingdoms, and for the Reforma-
 ‘ tion of Religion in England and Ireland; the Ex-
 ‘ tirpation of Popery, Prelacy, Superstition, He-
 ‘ resy, Schism, and Profaneness; the Preservation
 ‘ of the Rights and Privileges of Parliaments, and
 ‘ Liberties of the Kingdoms.* It also followeth,
 ‘ that the Kingdoms of *England* and *Ireland*, as
 ‘ well in Things that have no Relation to the King
 ‘ as in those which have, can exercise no Powers
 ‘ or Jurisdictions without the Advice or Consent of
 ‘ the Kingdom of *Scotland*; the Matters of Reli-
 ‘ gion, Privileges of Parliaments, and Liberties of
 ‘ the Kingdoms, comprehending whatsoever is to
 ‘ be acted in the Government of the Kingdoms of
 ‘ *England* and *Ireland*. On this Foundation laid
 ‘ in

‘ in your Papers, the Kingdom of *Scotland* may, An. 22. Car. I.
 ‘ when they see Time, claim a Right of joint In- 1646.
 ‘ terest with the Kingdom of *England* in all the
 ‘ Things before-mentioned, and except against, }
 ‘ and question the Validity of the Ordinances for November.
 ‘ taking away of the Court of Wards; settling the
 ‘ Militia of the Kingdoms of *England* and *Ireland*;
 ‘ for Sale of Bishops Lands, and all other Proceed-
 ‘ ings in Parliament since the Covenant and Trea-
 ‘ ty, whereto the Consent of the Kingdom of *Scot-*
 ‘ *land* hath not been had.

‘ And your Lordships, by obtesting in these
 ‘ Words, *That there may be a Conjunction of the*
 ‘ *Councils and Resolutions of both Kingdoms, in dis-*
 ‘ *posing of that Royal Person who is King of both;*
 ‘ *and that all lawful and possible Means, of which*
 ‘ *this is one, and a chief one, may be used, which may*
 ‘ *preserve his Majesty’s Person, Honour, and Happi-*
 ‘ *ness.* And from your Proposition, *That the King*
 ‘ *may come hither in Safety, Freedom, and Honour,*
 ‘ you do now claim from the Covenant and Treaty
 ‘ a negative Voice, and Right of joint Consent with
 ‘ this Kingdom in all Things in relation between the
 ‘ King and the Kingdoms of *England* and *Ireland*;
 ‘ which are all comprehended under the Words of
 ‘ *Safety, Freedom, Honour, and Happiness.*

‘ We shall now appeal to the Consciences of our
 ‘ Brethren of *Scotland*, and of all those who have
 ‘ taken or red this Covenant or Treaty, if any
 ‘ such Construction can be made out of them, or
 ‘ any of them; or whether it would have ever en-
 ‘ tered into the Thoughts of the free People of this
 ‘ Kingdom to have made such a Covenant or
 ‘ Treaty, which might any way bear such an In-
 ‘ terpretation so destructive to their Freedoms, as to
 ‘ introduce another Nation to be one of the Estates
 ‘ of this Kingdom; and to have a negative Voice in
 ‘ all Things concerning their Welfare; whereby we
 ‘ should at once give up what we have for so many
 ‘ Ages derived from our Ancestors, and what we
 ‘ have endeavoured to preserve with so great an
 ‘ Expence of Blood and Treasure; and so much

An. 22. Car. 1. 1646. the rather, in respect this present Parliament hath

November.

not, nor doth claim any thing of this Nature within the Kingdom of *Scotland*; nor put any such Construction upon the Covenant or Treaties, in relation to the Kingdom of *Scotland*. And how far this is, not only from the Intent, but from the very Words, of the Covenant^o, we shall presently make more fully appear.

We, by the Covenant, in the first Article which concerns Religion, are to endeavour in our several Places and Callings.

In the second, which concerns the Extirpation of Popery, Prelacy, Superstition, Heresy, Schism, and Profaneness, to endeavour in like Manner.

In the third, which concerns the Rights and Privileges of Parliaments, the Liberties of the Kingdoms, and the Preservation and Defence of the King's Person and Authority, in the Preservation and Defence of the true Religion and Liberties of the Kingdoms, to endeavour in our several Vocations.

The fourth, which concerns Incendiaries, they are to be brought to public Trial, and receive condign Punishment from the supreme Judicatories of both Kingdoms respectively.

In the fifth, concerning the continuing of the Peace and Union of the Kingdoms of *England* and *Scotland*, we shall each one of us endeavour, according to our Places and Interest.

In the sixth and last, concerning the Assistance and Defence of all those that enter into this Covenant, to endeavour, according to our Places and Callings, to perform whatsoever we are obliged to by the Covenant.

It seems strange to us, that *England* and *Scotland*, being several distinct Kingdoms; and, by the Covenant, each one being to act in his several Place, Vocation, Calling, and Interest, that the Kingdom of *Scotland* should, from this Covenant, intitle themselves to the Right of exercising any joint

' joint Power in the Kingdom of *England*; the ex-
 ' press Words of the Covenant being directly con-
 ' trary to the Exercise of any joint Power, which
 ' was several and distinct before the making this
 ' Covenant; and the joint Exercise of such Power
 ' would break the Covenant, because we are there-
 ' by obliged, in our several Vocations, mutually to
 ' preserve the Rights and Privileges of the Parlia-
 ' ments, and the Liberties of the Kingdoms; and
 ' the Exercise of such a joint Power, which doth
 ' give a negative Voice to another Nation, in the
 ' Proceedings in the Kingdoms of *England* and
 ' *Ireland*, would be a manifest Breach of those
 ' Privileges and Liberties. And whereas, through-
 ' out your whole Papers, this joint Interest is so
 ' much enforced from the Covenant, neither that
 ' Word *jointly*, nor any other Expression which
 ' will bear that Interpretation, is so much as men-
 ' tioned in the Covenant; and the Words, *Each*
 ' *one in his several Vocation, Calling, Place, and*
 ' *Interest*, which runs throughout the whole Co-
 ' venant, and would have cleared the Meaning of
 ' it, are wholly left out by you; and in all your
 ' Recitals of the Covenant, or Arguments drawn
 ' from thence, there are no Words to that Effect.
 ' Your other Arguments drawn from the Treaty,
 ' *That the Scots Army was brought into this King-*
 ' *dom to pursue the Ends expressed in the Covenant;*
 ' whence you enforce, That whatsoever is to be
 ' done by that Treaty, must be by the Consent of
 ' the Kingdom of *Scotland*, because according to
 ' the Ends of the Covenant, have been more fully
 ' answered in our shewing how far such joint Con-
 ' sent is both from the express Words and Meaning
 ' of the Covenant. And whereas you would en-
 ' force the Meaning of the Covenant to be, That
 ' nothing can be done in pursuance thereof, but by
 ' your joint Consent, because, from the third Ar-
 ' ticle in the Treaty, *Your Army is to be directed*
 ' *by the joint Advice of both Kingdoms, or their*
 ' *Committees*; and from the eighth Article, *That no*
 ' *Cessation or Peace be made by either Kingdom,*
 ' *with-*

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.

November.

Aug. 22, Car. I.

1646.

November.

without Consent of both; and from the ninth Article, That all Matters of Difference between the Subjects of the two Nations are to be determined by joint Consent of both Kingdoms, or their Committees: If no Things, to be done in pursuance of the Covenant, could be done without your joint Consent, the particular and express Provision, that these three Things should be done by joint Consent, had been altogether needless.

Your Arguments from the Treaty, against the Power of this Kingdom's acting in the Things mentioned in your Papers, without the Consent of the Kingdom of Scotland, are particularly answered in the Places where you alledge them.

And your Lordships may well remember, that your first denying of the Power of the Kingdom of England to act without your joint Consent, was not first set on foot concerning the Disposing of the Person of the King in England; and therefore, by reason of some Papers and Speeches of yours concerning the Propositions for Reformation of Religion, and the Militia of the Kingdoms of England and Ireland, and concerning some of your Nation having Offices and Places within this Kingdom, both Houses of Parliament, for the vindicating of the Right of the Kingdom of England from the Construction then, and now, put upon the Covenant and Treaty, did, upon the 29th of June 1646, declare as followeth:

Whereas the Lords and Commons assembled in the Parliament of England, in the Name and on the Behalf of the Kingdoms of England and Ireland, and the Commissioners of the Parliament of Scotland, in the Name and on the Behalf of the Kingdom of Scotland, have thought fit to send to the King the humble Desires and Propositions for a safe and well-grounded Peace, agreed upon by the Parliaments of both Kingdoms respectively; the Lords and Commons of the Parliament of England do declare, That it is not their Intention that any Construction should be made thereupon, as if either Kingdom had any Interest in the Matter of each other's

other's Propositions, or in the legislative Power of each other concerning any of the said Propositions, but that it remaineth distinct in each Kingdom respectively: And that notwithstanding any joint Proceedings upon the said Propositions, either Kingdom hath Power of themselves to continue, repeal, or alter any Law that shall be made upon the said Propositions, for the Good and Government of either Kingdom respectively: And it is hereby declared, that both Houses are fully resolved to maintain and preserve inviolably the Solemn League and Covenant, and the Treaties betwixt the Kingdoms of England and Scotland.

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.

November.

This Declaration being sent to your Lordships, and we receiving no Answer, conceived you rested satisfied therewith. And we desire you further to remember, that whereas, in the Year 1641, divers Things concerning the Kingdom of Scotland were debated in England, your Lordships did then (for the saving the Rights of Scotland, that we might not claim any joint Right in Things concerning that Kingdom) declare, That neither by your Treaty with the English, nor by seeking your Peace to be established in Parliament, nor any other Action of yours, you do acknowledge any Dependency upon them, or make them Judges to you or your Laws, or any thing that may import the smallest Prejudice to your Liberties; but that you came in a free and brotherly Way, by your Informations, to remove all Doubts that might arise concerning the Proceedings of your Parliament, and to join your Endeavours in what might conduce for the Peace and Good of both Kingdoms; no otherwise than if, by occasion of the King's Residence in Scotland, Commissioners, in the like Exchange, should be sent thither from England.

And as we did rest satisfied with those Desires of yours; and this present Parliament never did, nor yet do, claim any Exercise of the Powers within the Kingdom of Scotland, which you desire within this Kingdom, we cannot but, in Justice, expect the like Equity from that Kingdom.

Eighth

An. 22. Car. 1.

1646.

November.

Eighthly, ‘ That by your Arguments for a right
 ‘ of joint disposing of the Person of the King in
 ‘ *England*, (which must relate as well to the Per-
 ‘ sons that are to be about him, as the Place where
 ‘ he is to reside) you seem to claim to have an equal
 ‘ Number, or such a Number as you shall think fit,
 ‘ of the *Scots* Nation to be of the King’s Council,
 ‘ and of his Bed-chamber, and other Officers about
 ‘ his Person and his Successors in the Kingdom of
 ‘ *England*, as a Right of the Kingdom of *Scotland*.

Ninthly, ‘ And concerning your Desires for the
 ‘ speedy Payment of 200,000*l.* mentioned in your
 ‘ Papers of the 24th of *October*, the Parliament of
 ‘ *England* is not engaged to pay you 200,000*l.* at
 ‘ one Time, but only that the first 100,000*l.* there-
 ‘ of be paid unto you upon the marching of your
 ‘ Army and Forces out of this Kingdom, at such
 ‘ Time and Place as shall be hereafter expressed.

‘ That the second 100,000*l.* shall be paid by
 ‘ 50,000*l.* and 50,000*l.* the first 50,000*l.* at the
 ‘ End of three Months after the Payment of the first
 ‘ 100,000*l.* and the second 50,000*l.* at the End of
 ‘ nine Months after the said first Payment; yet, to
 ‘ manifest our Willingness and Readiness to com-
 ‘ ply with our Brethren of *Scotland*, we have, for-
 ‘ above six Weeks last past, spent a great Part of
 ‘ our Time to borrow 200,000*l.* which if we can-
 ‘ not speedily obtain, we assure ourselves our
 ‘ Brethren of *Scotland* will rest satisfied with so
 ‘ much of the 200,000*l.* as we are able to pay for
 ‘ the present: But we most earnestly desire, that
 ‘ whilst some Parts of your Papers press us for the
 ‘ Money, the Body of those Papers and your
 ‘ Speeches at Conferences may not obstruct the
 ‘ Loan; the People lend their Money on Belief
 ‘ that there will be no Breach amongst us; that the
 ‘ Northern Counties, so considerable a Part of this
 ‘ Kingdom may not be destroyed; that the King-
 ‘ dom will be eased of the Burthen of your Army;
 ‘ and that we might be the better enabled to send
 ‘ Relief to *Ireland*: Now, if the People collect
 ‘ out of your Speeches and Papers, that you, who
 ‘ are

are the Commissioners for the Kingdom of Scotland, have Doubt of a Breach amongst us, and of a second War, you do yourselves give Occasion of obstructing the Means of obtaining Money for which you so much press.

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.
November.

And thus having premised these necessary Considerations, we come to the Particulars in your large Paper.

We do affirm, That the Kingdom of Scotland hath no Right of joint Exercise of Interest in disposing the Person of the King in the Kingdom of England; for England clearly being a free Kingdom, no other Kingdom hath Right of Exercise of Interest in it, but by Contract; and by how much any Kingdom hath otherwise Right of Exercise of Interest in it, by so much it is not free. Your Lordships will grant the Disposing of the Person of the King is an Exercise of Interest, and you did grant at the Conference, tho' it be now left out in your Papers, That the Kingdom of Scotland had no Right of Exercise of Interest in England, but by the Covenant and Treaties; which Covenant and Treaties give no joint Power to the Kingdom of Scotland concerning the Disposing of the Person of the King within the Kingdom of England; but doth oblige both Nations to preserve, and not confound, the Rights and Liberties of each, as by the third Article of the Covenant will plainly appear; and the last Treaty is for your coming into England to assist us, that we might enjoy our particular Rights and Liberties.

The Words of the third Article of the Covenant are, *We shall, with the same Sincerity, Reality, and Constancy, in our several Vocations, endeavour, with our Estates and Lives, mutually to preserve the Rights and Privileges of the Parliaments, and the Liberties of the Kingdoms; and to preserve and defend the King's Majesty's Person and Authority in the Preservation and Defence of the true Religion and Liberties of the Kingdoms, that the World may bear Witness with our Consciences of our Loyalty, and that we have no*
Thought

An. 22. Car. I. *Thoughts or Intentions to diminish his Majesty's*
 1646. *just Power and Greatness.*

November.

‘ From whence it is most evident, that the
 ‘ Rights and Privileges of the Parliaments, and
 ‘ Liberties of the Kingdoms, are, in the first Place,
 ‘ to be preserved; and this every one is to do in his
 ‘ several Vocation, and not to intermeddle within
 ‘ each other’s Precincts, but when and so far forth
 ‘ as they are duly called thereunto; nor with each
 ‘ other’s proper Rights and Interests, which we are
 ‘ bound to preserve, and to preserve distinct, else we
 ‘ break our Covenant: And we are to preserve the
 ‘ King in his Person and Authority relatively, *viz.*
 ‘ *In the Preservation and Defence of the true Reli-*
 ‘ *gion and Liberties of the Kingdoms.* We do not
 ‘ desire to take away your Right of Interest in the
 ‘ Person of the King; but we say you have no Ex-
 ‘ ercise of that Right, the King being in *England*:
 ‘ And we are so far from claiming any Right for
 ‘ the Kingdom of *England* in this Case, which, in
 ‘ the like, we would not give to our Brethren of
 ‘ *Scotland*, as we do freely and willingly declare,
 ‘ That if the King were duly in *Scotland*, we
 ‘ should not claim any joint Interest in disposing of
 ‘ his Person there.

‘ And if your Arguments for strict Mutuality
 ‘ were to the Question, you might, with much
 ‘ more Reason, have offered, that the King should
 ‘ be six Months with us without your Consent,
 ‘ your Army having disposed of him six Months
 ‘ without our Consent; and, after that Time, then
 ‘ to have inferred a joint Consent. Your Lord-
 ‘ ships will not think but that both Houses of the
 ‘ Parliament of *England* may as well be trusted
 ‘ with the Disposing of the Person of the King in
 ‘ *England*, as the *Scots* Army may.

‘ Your Discourse, *That the Person of the King*
 ‘ *is not to be restrained from his voluntary coming to*
 ‘ *either Kingdom, when the necessary Affairs of the*
 ‘ *Kingdoms do require it*, is not to the Question,
 ‘ and not applicable to the Condition in which the
 ‘ King now is; as is fully declared in the fifth Con-
 ‘ sideration,

‘ Your

' Your Instance, *That two being associated of* An. 22. Car. I.
 ' *Lands, Stock, or the like,* (for those of Parent, 1646.
 ' Master, and Servant have no Relation to the pre-
 ' sent Debate) *one may not dispose of them without*
 ' *the Consent of both;* and thence infer, *Much less*
 ' *may we, being associated, dispose of the Person of*
 ' *the King without your joint Consent.* These are
 ' not to the Case in question, but do trouble the
 ' right Understanding of it; for we are associated
 ' in some common Ends, for the Good of both;
 ' but not associated in that which is our several
 ' distinct and particular Rights, which is the only
 ' Matter before us: And the Disposing of the
 ' Person of the King in the Kingdom of *England,*
 ' according to the Case in question, is the parti-
 ' cular Right of the two Houses of Parliament:
 ' The Kingdom of *Scotland* hath no more Right
 ' of joint Exercise of Interest of disposing the Per-
 ' son of the King in the Kingdom of *England,* than
 ' they have Right of joint Exercise of Interest in
 ' our Inheritance, Lands, Stocks, or the like,
 ' which yourselves bring as Examples to this Case.
 ' From our Declaration of the 5th of *August,*
 ' 1645, sent to the Lords the States General of the
 ' *United Provinces,* as recited by you, *viz. They*
 ' *were united by solemn Covenant made to Almighty*
 ' *God, and by League each to other, as one entire*
 ' *Body to prosecute this Cause,* you cannot infer
 ' your joint Right of disposing of the Person of the
 ' King in *England;* for that Declaration was in
 ' answer to an Embassy from the Lords the States
 ' General, desiring to be admitted as Mediators for
 ' a Year; which, by the eighth Article of the
 ' Treaty, we were not to make without the joint
 ' Consent of the Kingdom of *Scotland;* and the
 ' Words are not, *That we are made one entire Body*
 ' *in all our Rights and Liberties;* but to prevent
 ' any such Construction as you put upon them, the
 ' Words are, *As one entire Body to prosecute this*
 ' *Cause;* so as the being one entire Body is, as to
 ' prosecute the common Cause; which they may
 ' well do in their several Vocations and Callings,
 ' with-

An. 22. Car. 1.

1646.

November.

‘ without confounding the several Interests of the
 ‘ Kingdoms; and not to be one entire Body in
 ‘ our particular Rights and Liberties, which is the
 ‘ only Thing in question.

‘ And as to that you call a notable Instance in that
 ‘ Declaration, viz. *That, by the Covenant, both*
 ‘ *Houses of Parliament, and many Thousands of other*
 ‘ *his Majesty's Subjects of England and Ireland; stand*
 ‘ *bound, as well as we, to hinder the setting up of the*
 ‘ *Church-Government by Bishops in the Kingdom of*
 ‘ *Scotland; and that we, as well as they, stand bound*
 ‘ *to endeavour the Extirpation thereof in England and*
 ‘ *Ireland; we desire it may be observed, that that*
 ‘ *Expression in the Declaration is according to the*
 ‘ *Tenor of the Covenant, which obligeth us to act*
 ‘ *in our several Vocations, without confounding the*
 ‘ *particular Interests of the Kingdoms; and no*
 ‘ *Words in that Declaration infer any other Sense;*
 ‘ *and your Inferences from the Covenant are di-*
 ‘ *rectly against the Covenant, as doth before appear.*

‘ The eighth Article of the Treaty is, *That no*
 ‘ *Cessation, nor any Pacification or Agreement for*
 ‘ *Peace whatsoever, shall be made by either Kingdom,*
 ‘ *without the mutual Advice and Consent of both*
 ‘ *Kingdoms, or their Committees in that Behalf*
 ‘ *appointed; who are to have full Power for the*
 ‘ *same, in case the Houses of the Parliament of Eng-*
 ‘ *land, or the Parliament or Convention of Estates*
 ‘ *in Scotland shall not sit.*

‘ Your Lordships Inference from this Article,
 ‘ *That because we cannot make Peace without your*
 ‘ *joint Consent, we cannot therefore dispose of the*
 ‘ *Person of the King, in the Kingdom of England,*
 ‘ *without your Consent,* is thus clearly answered:
 ‘ The not making any Cessation, Pacification, or
 ‘ Agreement for Peace without you, and our dis-
 ‘ posing of the Person of the King without you, do
 ‘ consist well together; and it cannot from hence
 ‘ be inferred, that therefore the Place where the
 ‘ King shall reside untill this Peace were made, he
 ‘ being in *England*, ought not to be at the Ap-
 ‘ pointment of the Parliament of *England*.

‘ We

‘ We know your Lordships can and will witness
 ‘ with us, that, since our Covenant and Treaty,
 ‘ we have not received any Dignities or Offices
 ‘ from the King; nor suffered any foreign Agents
 ‘ to interpose in this Cause, or any Messengers to
 ‘ pass between the King and Queen; or sent any
 ‘ Committees to the King without your Consent;
 ‘ or done any thing with him that may admit Co-
 ‘ lour of our making Peace without your joint
 ‘ Consent: But if disposing the Person of the King
 ‘ in *England*, without joint Consent, be a making
 ‘ of Peace and a Breach of the Treaty, then it
 ‘ unanswerably follows, that your Army hath made
 ‘ Peace with the King and broken the Treaty, for
 ‘ they have disposed of him without our Consent,
 ‘ and since our Votes to the contrary.

An. 22. Car. 1.
 1646.

November.

‘ If your Lordships had been pleased to have set
 ‘ down in your Paper the ninth Article, you would
 ‘ never have drawn any Argument from thence,
 ‘ for your joint Right in disposing the Person of the
 ‘ King in *England*; the Words are, *That the Pub-
 ‘ lic Faith of the Kingdom of Scotland shall be given
 ‘ to their Brethren of England, that neither their
 ‘ Entrance into, nor their Continuance in, the King-
 ‘ dom of England, shall be made use of to any other
 ‘ Ends than are therein expressed in the Covenant,
 ‘ and in the Articles of this Treaty; and that all
 ‘ Matters of Difference that shall happen to arise
 ‘ between the Subjects of the two Nations, shall be
 ‘ resolved and determined by the mutual Advice and
 ‘ Consent of both Kingdoms, or by such Committees
 ‘ as for this Purpose shall be by them appointed,
 ‘ with the same Power as in the precedent Article.*

‘ Now, from the very Words of the eighth and
 ‘ ninth Articles, the Differences to be resolved and
 ‘ determined are between the Subjects of the two
 ‘ Nations; and, in case the two Houses of the
 ‘ Parliament of *England*, or the Parliament or Con-
 ‘ vention of Estates in *Scotland* do not sit, are to
 ‘ be resolved and determined by their Committees,
 ‘ who, as your Lordships construe the Article,
 ‘ would have Power finally to resolve and deter-

‘ mine

An. 22. Car. 1.
1646.

November.

mine the Rights of both Kingdoms in the greatest Cases, and even without Instructions, the Cases being so various as the Parliament could not possibly foresee all that might happen, to give Instructions in them; and therefore the Article, to avoid any such Construction, doth purposely provide, that the resolving and determining of the Differences in this Article, are only to be the Differences between Subject and Subject. We shall not think that our Brethren, united with us in Covenant and Treaty, coming into the Kingdom to our Assistance, will insist to claim Right of joint Interest to dispose of the Person of the King, he being in this Kingdom, and alledge the ninth Article of the Treaty for it; which, from the Beginning to the Ending, provides against it. Your Lordships may with as much Reason argue, That, when you have Possession of our Towns, or other Rights, if you do differ with us about them, you may, because you differ, claim joint Interest in them, for that all Differences are to be resolved by the joint Advice and Consent of both, and alledge the ninth Article of the Treaty for it. And now we hope your Lordships will rest satisfied, that we claim nothing against the Covenant, Treaty, or our Declaration of the 5th of August 1645, sent to the Lords the States General of the *United Provinces*; but in pursuance of them.

And as to your Lordships Argument, *That you may expect a Conjunction of Councils in disposing the Person of the King, because the Houses did think fit that, in the managing of this War, there should be a Conjunction of the Councils of both Kingdoms, in reference to the English as well as unto the Scots Forces*: Your Lordships well know the Houses joining your Lordships in their Councils in managing their *English* Forces, was the single voluntary Act of the two Houses, and not the joint Act of both Kingdoms; and was determinable at the Pleasure of the two Houses, and practised accordingly; and whensoever the Houses pleased

pleased, they did dispose their Councils and Forces without your Consent, and therefore a joint Interest of both Kingdoms cannot be argued out of it. Do you think, if you had claimed it as a joint Right of Interest of the Kingdom of *Scotland*, that we should ever have joined you in our Councils, or governing our *English* Forces. It is most true we did invite your Coming to our Assistance, on Principles of common Interest; we did let you know the one Kingdom cannot enjoy a firm Peace whilst the other is in War; we did put you in mind of the Affection and Duty which becometh Brethren: We still persist on the same Grounds, and we most earnestly desire you to hold the Principles of common Interest so understood; and then we shall hear of no further Claim to the peculiar Right of the Kingdom of *England*, as certainly we shall make none to the peculiar Rights of the Kingdom of *Scotland*.

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.
November.

Your Lordships speak of *espousing our Quarrels*, and, at the Conference, and in your Papers, so often mention your *forsaking your own Peace for us*. Not to look back on former Times, we desire you to remember, that the first Part of this War was made against the Kingdom of *Scotland* by the King, and not by the Kingdom, of *England*; that the two Houses of Parliament did assist to procure your Peace, and, as an unparalleled Testimony of their brotherly Affection, did give you 300,000*l*.

And although it were not so often remembered by your Lordships in your Papers, yet we should not forget the Love of our Brethren in coming to our Assistance; and shall return any Measure of Conjunction of Interest that we have had, not got, from you; but hazard our own Peace for yours, and requite every Kindness you have done, or desired to do for us: And this your Desire, That the same Measure of Conjunction of Interest be given to you which was got from you, may satisfy you that the Measure of Conjunction of Interest is upon common Principles, and not in

An. 22. Car. 1.
1646.

November.

the Exercise of each other's particular Rights ;
 for we have neither had, nor do desire, any particular Right in the Kingdom of *Scotland*, and therefore you, by your own Argument, ought not to desire any particular Right in the Kingdom of *England*; and do therefore obtest, by the common Good of both Kingdoms ; by the Love of Brethren ; by the Treaty between the Kingdoms ; by the Solemn League and Covenant ; by the Law of Nations ; by Benefits formerly received and acknowledged ; and by that universal Law of a Christian Life, *viz. to do as you would be done unto*, which we desire you seriously to weigh : By all these, and by whatever else may be obliging, we desire you not to claim to dispose of our particular and peculiar Rights ; not to render us suspected with the People towards the Person of the King ; not to do that which may strengthen the Hands of any malignant Faction amongst us ; not to publish such Things as may sow the Seeds of a Division, which will be equally destructive to both Kingdoms ; not to think it our Duty alone to keep the Covenant ; and not to forget the Honour, Freedom, and Safety of both the Kingdoms.

Your Lordships say, *You acknowledge you are to presume the best concerning our Intentions, but are not therefore to part with any Interest or Security, because we are honest and faithful. We conceive it unreasonable you should, and we never desired it ; but if you be not to part with any of your Rights, are your Brethren of England to part with any of theirs ? Should you claim that from them which yourselves say they ought not to claim from you ? If you are to presume the best, what Ground have you to suspect the worst, and make Suppositions that we will abuse our Rights ? Indeed, my Lords, your Expressions in your Paper, That your Army, by their Oath of Allegiance ; your Committee of Estates, by their Commission ; your Officers, by their Military Oath, ought to defend the King from Harms and Prejudices : Your often repeating at the Conference, That the King*
came

‘ came to your Army for Shelter and Defence, and therefore you are to preserve him, may indure such an Interpretation, as if you desired the People should believe the King needs Shelter, Defence, and Preservation from the Kingdom of Scotland and the Scots Army, against the two Houses of the Parliament of England; and that the Parliament of England is more to be suspected and less confided in than the Scots Army: But if this be far from your Thoughts, as we hope your Lordships will say it is, let it be also from your Expressions, from which such Inferences may be drawn.

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.
November.

‘ To that you say, *The entering into the Covenant was to wipe off the Calumny and Aspersions of Rebellion*; it hath no Relation to the Question in Debate; neither do we find any Ground how, or why, the Parliaments of either Kingdom could have been taxed with Rebellion, though they had never joined in this Covenant; or, if any such Aspersions could have been deservedly cast upon them, how the Covenant could have wiped them off.

‘ We have already answered what you here repeat for the King’s voluntary Residence in either Kingdom; and have already told you, with the Reasons why, That it is not to the Question, neither is the King in a Condition for the Exercise of the Duty of his Place; but if he were, your Lordships may rest assured the two Kingdoms will never differ about his residing in the Kingdom of Scotland, for his doing the Duties of his Place there. Your Lordships proceed, *That it could not be expected from the Army under the Command of Sir Thomas Fairfax (if they were in Scotland for your Assistance in like Case, as your Army is for ours) to deliver up the Person of the King; neither can it be expected from your Army.*

‘ This Argument might have been urged to us, if we had ever made any Allegation to that Effect; but we shall say even (your Lordships own Words) *The Army under Sir Thomas Fairfax, in the like Case, on the like Resolution of the*

An. 22. Car. 1.

1646.

November.

Parliament of *Scotland*, ought to deliver the Person of the King in *Scotland*, to be disposed by the Parliament of *Scotland*. And now, your Lordships receiving Satisfaction in this your main Argument, we shall not doubt but you will acknowledge our Right as we do yours, and proceed accordingly.

In your next Argument you return, with an heavy Tax upon us, to the Law and common Practice of all Nations, *Not to deliver up the meanest Subject fled to them, tho' for the greatest Crimes*; and amplify it, *by our refusing the Act of remanding in the 4th of King James*: And farther say, *If the meanest be not to be delivered, how will the World abroad condemn your Army for so base and dishonourable an Act, to deliver up the King, having cast himself into your Hands, to be disposed at the Arbitrement of another Nation*: For of us your Words of another Nation must be taken, we claiming the Right of disposing of him in *England*.

This, rightly understood, will give Satisfaction to all the World in the Justness of our Desires; and we shall put the Substance of the Argument in such Words as, in rightly placing the Strength of it, none may be deluded.

It is thus: Every Kingdom challengeth the Disposall of the Persons within their own Kingdom, though they be the Subjects of another Kingdom; and, on this Ground, it is clear that the Kingdom of *Scotland* hath not the Disposall of the meanest of their own Subjects, in whom they have the sole Right, that Subject being in the Kingdom of *England*; much less the Disposall of the Person of the King who is in *England*, in whom you allow the Kingdom of *England* to have a joint Right.

Your Army in *England* (we follow your Argument on the Law of Nations) cannot be considered in any other Condition than our own Army; and will any Nation say, if the King were in our Army, that it were the least Baseness or

Dis-

‘ Dishonour, but their Duty, for them to deliver up the Person of the King, to be disposed by both Houses of Parliament. The King is not in the Kingdom of *Scotland*, and your Army is in the Kingdom of *England*; is it not, by your own Argument, dishonourable (to say no more) for us not to dispose of the King in *England*; and we are confident your Lordships will rest satisfied that there was no Need of that Expression, that the two Houses of Parliament should claim or require that which was base or dishonourable for you to do.

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.
November.

‘ To what you say that *the King cast himself upon your Army*, and use the like Phrases in so many Places of your Papers, we shall only say, We had rather enjoy our own Rights, than debate upon what Grounds the King came to your Army; or, if he had none, why he should think himself more sure in that Army than in that of Sir *Thomas Fairfax*, or in that *English Army* that joined with yours in the Service before *Newark*: Or why *Monf. Montrevil*, a *French Agent*, to whose Lodging the King first came, was so many Weeks at *Southwell*, the head Quarter of your Army before *Newark*, notwithstanding Exceptions were taken by the *English Committee* against his, the said Agent’s, being there.

‘ And now we come to those you call Objections, which being of your Lordships penning, and also the Answers to them, may be the more easily suited to your Desires. But the Matter in Debate being, That the Kingdom of *Scotland* hath no Right of joint Exercise of Interest in disposing the Person of the King in the Kingdom of *England*, we shall place this our Assertion before your several Arguments or Objections against it, and then give Answers to them.

ASSERTION. ‘ We do affirm that the Kingdom of *Scotland* hath no Right of joint Exercise of Interest in disposing of the Person of the King, in the Kingdom of *England*.

An. 22. Car. 1. *The COMMONS ANSWER to the first OBJECTION
or ARGUMENT of the SCOTS COMMISSIONERS.*

1646.

November.

[*This we have already given from their own Papers, at p. 127.*]

‘ Were the Things in this Objection so as they
‘ are set down, yet it would not follow, that there-
‘ fore the *Scots Army* ought not to deliver up the
‘ King to be disposed by both Houses, without the
‘ joint Advice and Consent of the Kingdom of *Scot-*
‘ *land*. And here we might leave all that is contain-
‘ ed in this Objection, but for that many Things in
‘ it, when rightly recited, (now at least exceedingly
‘ mistaken) are Proofs for our Assertion; and be-
‘ cause, from the Matter of Fact misrecited, there
‘ are many Reflections upon us of Ingratitude,
‘ we shall make a true State of this Business from
‘ the Truth of the Matter of Fact.

‘ By the fourth Article of the Treaty, the Charge
‘ of levying, arming, and bringing your Forces to-
‘ gether, furnished with a Train of Artillery, was
‘ to be computed according to the Rates, as if the
‘ Kingdom of *Scotland* were to raise them for
‘ themselves, and for the present to be done by
‘ the Kingdom of *Scotland* upon Account, to be
‘ repaid or satisfied when the Peace of the two
‘ Kingdoms is settled; yet who shall read the
‘ Words in your Paper. *viz. that you did in a short*
‘ *Time levy an Army at your own Charge*, would
‘ little have expected that that which you call your
‘ own Charge was to be repaid.

‘ By the fifth Article this Army was to be paid
‘ as if the Kingdom of *Scotland* were to employ
‘ the same on their own Occasion; and towards
‘ the defraying thereof, *it not amounting to a full*
‘ *Month's Pay*, (these are the Words, not as now in
‘ your Paper, *Little more than half a Month's Pay*)
‘ be monthly paid 30,000 *l. Sterl.* by the Parlia-
‘ ment of *England*; and if the State of *Scotland*
‘ shall have just Cause to demand further Satis-
‘ faction, when the Peace of both Kingdoms is
‘ settled (for what?) for the Pains, Hazard, and
‘ Charges

‘ Charges they have undergone in the same, they
 ‘ shall, by way of brotherly Assistance, have due
 ‘ Recompence made unto them by the Parliament
 ‘ of *England*. An. 22. Car. I.
1646.
November.

‘ And when we finally agreed upon a Sum in
 ‘ gross, the Residue of the whole Month’s Pay,
 ‘ proportioned according to your own Rates, was
 ‘ given in and claimed by your Estimate; and,
 ‘ together with all other Demands for raising and
 ‘ maintaining your Forces, and for your Pains,
 ‘ Hazard, and Charges, satisfied by us in the gross
 ‘ Sum of 400,000 *l.* agreed to be paid unto you
 ‘ in lieu of all Demands whatsoever; can we now,
 ‘ in reason, conceive, that such an Army in the
 ‘ Kingdom of *England*, so to be raised and paid
 ‘ wholly by the Kingdom of *England*, should
 ‘ claim any Right to detain the Person of the King
 ‘ in their Hands from his being disposed in *Eng-*
 ‘ *land* by the two Houses of Parliament? If we
 ‘ had foreseen as much, as your Lordships say you
 ‘ did, there would have been no such Debate as
 ‘ now is.

‘ It is most true that, by our Declaration of the
 ‘ 8th of *November*, 1642, and the 27th of *June*,
 ‘ 1643, when we invited your Coming in; and
 ‘ when, on the 19th of *July*, 1643, our Commit-
 ‘ tees went to treat with you to come to our As-
 ‘ sistance, (whose Arrival at *Edinburgh* was on the
 ‘ seventh of *August*) our Enemies were powerful
 ‘ and prevailing. It is also as true, that all might
 ‘ have been lost, had not the good Providence of
 ‘ Almighty God mercifully and seasonably inter-
 ‘ posed in our greatest Straits, and mightily changed
 ‘ the State of our Affairs between the Time of
 ‘ our Invitation of you, and your Coming in; be-
 ‘ tween which Time 93 Colours of Horse of the
 ‘ Earl of *Newcastle*’s Army were utterly defeated
 ‘ in *Lincolnshire*; his old Army broken before
 ‘ *Hull*; the King’s Army, where himself was in
 ‘ Person, wasted at the Siege of *Gloucester*; that
 ‘ Siege raised, the City relieved, and that Army
 ‘ broken at the Battle of *Newbery*; with some
 ‘ other

An. 22. Car. 1.
1646.

November.

other happy Successes at *Alton, Arundell*, and other Places; all which was to the great Weakening of the Enemy and Strengthening of our Party.

And whereas you will seem to intimate that, *for the Good of Religion, King, and Kingdom, you did voluntarily forsake your own Peace, though you had considered how prejudicial it would be, and what infinite Loss, Trouble and Danger your Engagement with the Parliament of England would bring to the Parliament of Scotland*; yet we desire you again seriously to consider, whether *Scotland* could have continued in Peace, if the King had here prevailed against us: Had not you more hazarded you Peace by sitting still, and letting a powerful prevailing Enemy invade *Scotland*? Hath not the last Year's Experience shewed you what a Party he might have found there? Had it not been a greater Charge to defend yourselves upon your own Account, than, by assisting this Kingdom, to prevent your own Ruin at our Charge? We cannot believe you can think you were out of Danger, though it was then your Lot to be the farthest from it of the two Kingdoms.

We did never imagine that the Treaty (no way disadvantageous to you) should be look'd upon as it seems it is by these Words, *We stood not upon Conditions*, as if we ought to give you much better Conditions. Certainly if we, without any other Relation, look only into the Nature of the Conditions, Auxiliaries might be had (and are daily had in other Parts, and of your Nation) on the same, or lower Conditions. We should most gladly have omitted these Things, but that they are misrecited in your Paper, and so often press'd upon us; and we hope we shall both take Notice of mutual Obligements to make our brotherly Union more firm.

We shall, before the World, at all Times manifest that we shall go along with them that set the highest Value on your Assistance; but we desire your Lordships would not, by insisting upon

‘ on your own Deserts upon mistaken Grounds, An. 22. Car. I.
 ‘ lay Reflections of Ingratitude upon us, of which 1646.
 ‘ you know we are not guilty. We have before }
 ‘ so fully answered your Arguments, from the Co- November.
 ‘ venant and Treaty, and shewed that they direct-
 ‘ ly make good our Resolutions, as we shall say
 ‘ nothing in this Place to them; but observe that
 ‘ in this Argument, you mention the Defence of
 ‘ the King twice from the Covenant, yet, in both
 ‘ Places, leave out the Words, *in the Preserva-*
 ‘ *tion and Defence of the true Religion and Liber-*
 ‘ *ties of the Kingdoms.*

[*The Assertion prefix'd to the Commons Answer
 to the first Objection, We do affirm, &c. is
 repeated at the Head of each of them.*]

*The COMMONS ANSWER to the second OBJECTION
 or ARGUMENT of the SCOTS COMMISSIONERS.
 [Already given at p. 129.]*

‘ Herein is repeated what you have said before;
 ‘ some Things are new, as that it begins with,
 ‘ *Although his Majesty's riding one Day's Journey*
 ‘ *might wholly subvert the Grounds of this Objection,*
 ‘ yet, &c. But we shall never suppose, the King
 ‘ being in *England*, our Brethren of *Scotland* will
 ‘ take him out of this Kingdom, neither will sup-
 ‘ pose what Differences between the two King-
 ‘ doms one Day's Journey might make. It is
 ‘ one Thing if the King had come duly unto you
 ‘ into *Scotland*, and clear another his coming to
 ‘ your Army in the Kingdom of *England*. You
 ‘ here repeat the King's voluntary Coming to your
 ‘ Army, and we say we desire not to debate on
 ‘ what Grounds he came. We never said his be-
 ‘ ing in *England* took away your Relation to him;
 ‘ but that you have no Right of disposing of his
 ‘ Person in this Kingdom: And, by a former Ar-
 ‘ gument of your own from the Common Law and
 ‘ Practice of all Nations, his being in *England*
 ‘ gives us a Right, if we had it not otherwise.
 ‘ And

An. 22. Car. I.

1646.

November.

‘ And we desire your Lordships to consider that,
 ‘ by your Argument of the Relation between the
 ‘ King and his Subjects, when you also assert the
 ‘ Right of mutual Performance and Exercise of
 ‘ them, as well without as within each Kingdom
 ‘ respectively, in *England* as *Scotland*, or in *Scot-*
 ‘ *land* as *England*, you confound the particular
 ‘ Rights of the two Kingdoms, which would be
 ‘ a great Violation of the Covenant: And if you
 ‘ may argue for your joint Consent, because the
 ‘ King’s Coming to you was an Emergency of
 ‘ War, you may, by the same Reason, claim a
 ‘ joint Interest in the disposing the Northern
 ‘ Counties, and say they fell into your Hands as
 ‘ an Emergency of War.

‘ If, in your Allegation of the Fundamental
 ‘ Right of the Kingdom of *Scotland*, and the Li-
 ‘ berty of that Kingdom, you mean in *Scotland*;
 ‘ we did never dispute against it: But if you mean
 ‘ in *England*, then, if we had taken the King be-
 ‘ fore our Conjunction by the Covenant and Trea-
 ‘ ty, our disposing of him without your Consent
 ‘ had been against the Fundamental Rights of the
 ‘ Parliament of *Scotland*; which we are confident
 ‘ you will not say.

‘ And your Lordships having agreed, at the
 ‘ Conference, that the Kingdom of *Scotland* hath
 ‘ no Right of Exercise of Interest in the Kingdom
 ‘ of *England* but by the Covenant and Treaty;
 ‘ and the two Houses of Parliament did not enter
 ‘ into that Conjunction with our Brethren of *Scot-*
 ‘ *land* to put the particular Rights of the King-
 ‘ dom of *England* into a worse, but into a better
 ‘ Condition by that Conjunction; and the Cove-
 ‘ nant and Treaty do provide accordingly; and
 ‘ that we have not parted with this Right by the
 ‘ Covenant and Treaty, we have formerly shewed.

‘ You cannot apply the Large Treaty, concern-
 ‘ ing the King’s voluntary Residency, to this
 ‘ Question, whilst the King is not in a Condition
 ‘ of exercising the Duties of his Place, or dispos-
 ‘ ing of his Person into any of his Kingdoms

‘ at

at his own Election, as in Times of settled Peace: An. 22. Car. I.
And if the King had been in *Scotland* in such a
Case as ours is, we should not have said more to
your detaining of him, than we desire you should
now say to us.

1646.
November.

And whereas your Lordships say, *It seems strange that you, being come in upon Invitation, as for other Ends, so to defend his Majesty's Person, your now being in England should be made Use of for Delivery of the King to be disposed by us; we understand not why the disposing of the Person of the King in England, by both Houses of Parliament, and the Defence of his Person according to the Covenant, may not well consist together: We demand to dispose of the King, because the King is in England; and you, of all other, who come to defend our Rights, should not violate them: And it would be much more strange, if any should think that when we invited you, that by your Assistance we might preserve our Interests, we should invite you to dispose of our Interests.*

You argue from the third Article, the Words whereof are, *That the Army be commanded by a General appointed by the States of Scotland, and subject to such Resolutions and Directions, as are and shall be agreed and concluded on mutually between the two Kingdoms, or by Committees appointed by them in that Behalf, for pursuance of the Ends above-mentioned, which are the Ends expressed in the Covenant; we shall speak more of them in our Answer to your next Objection.*

You apply, but improperly, this third Article for your joint Right of disposing with us the Person of the King in the Kingdom of *England*: And why? Because to defend and preserve his Person is one of the Ends in the Covenant. You may as well say you have Right of joint disposing all our Laws and Liberties; for to defend and preserve them is one, and a main one, of the Ends in the Covenant.

Your

An. 22. Car. I.

1646.

November.

‘ Your Arguments from the ninth Article are
 ‘ before answered: And here you again alledge
 ‘ the Covenant, and here again, as in the for-
 ‘ mer Objection or Argument, when you mention
 ‘ that you are to preserve the Person of the King,
 ‘ you leave out the subsequent Words, in *Prefer-*
 ‘ *vation and Defence of the true Religion, and Li-*
 ‘ *berties of the Kingdom.*

The COMMONS ANSWER to the third OBJECTION
or ARGUMENT of the Scots COMMISSIONERS.
[Given at p. 132.]

‘ The Truth is thus: On *Tuesday* the fifth
 ‘ of *May* last, our Committees before *Newark* had
 ‘ Notice the King was come to *Southwell*, the
 ‘ Head Quarter of your Army there, before they
 ‘ heard any Thing from your Committees of it,
 ‘ who sent two of their Number to give our Com-
 ‘ mittees Notice of the King’s Coming to *South-*
 ‘ *well*; which two did promise to deliver to the
 ‘ rest of their Number the Desires of our Com-
 ‘ mittees, That the King might not remove from
 ‘ *Southwell*: And afterwards our Committees hear-
 ‘ ing the same Day the King came to your Army,
 ‘ that your Army was preparing to march, told
 ‘ your Committees of it, and of their former De-
 ‘ sire, That the King might remain at *Southwell*;
 ‘ your Committees denied there was any Intention
 ‘ in your Army to march: And to the Desire of
 ‘ the King’s not removing from *Southwell*, they
 ‘ said, He was gone to *Kelham* before they heard
 ‘ from our Committees. Whereupon our Com-
 ‘ mittees earnestly pressed them the King might
 ‘ return back to *Southwell*, and not to be at *Kel-*
 ‘ *ham*, where the Body of your Army lay, to cajole
 ‘ or disturb your Soldiers; but could not obtain
 ‘ the Consent of your Committee thereunto. The
 ‘ next Day our Committees hearing that your Ar-
 ‘ my had disposed of their Provisions, and sent in
 ‘ for many Carriages, did again complain to your
 ‘ Com-

Committees ; who again also absolutely denied it, and said, Nothing should be done without our Committees having Notice : Nevertheless, the next Day, being *Thursday*, your Army marched away, and took the King with them ; and when your Army were on their March, and not before, some of your Committees acquainted ours with it. Now it is most evident that, by the Treaty, our Committees being equally to command and direct your Army as your own, and your Army obliged by the Treaty equally to obey them as a joint Committee, if you have any Right because the King came to your Army, the King came to our Committees as to yours, and they had in that respect equal Power to dispose of him.—But what was done is before expressed.

An. 22. Car. 1.
1646.
November.

You say you did write to the Houses ; and your Paper intimates one Reason of your going was, because you heard not from the Houses. You wrote on *Wednesday*, and marched away the next Morning : Could you expect a Return from the two Houses in that Time, the Distance being 100 Miles ? You alledge your March was after the Surrender of *Newark*, when as it was only after the Commissioners for the Treaty had agreed, but before the Agreement was signed by the Committees and Governor of *Newark* ; and the Town was not surrendered till the next Day, which was done, on some Emergency, a Day sooner than was agreed on by that Treaty.

And shall we think that your Army should march away on the Rumour of 5000 Horse and Dragoons of Sir *Thomas Fairfax's* Army marching Northward ? But, however, there was no such Thing, nor did any such Order of the House of Peers, as your Lordships mention, ever come to the Army of Sir *Thomas Fairfax* ; neither did the General, Lieutenant-General, nor any other Officer that ever they heard of, know of any such Order, till your Lordships mentioned it in your Paper of the 20th of *October* last. And if they had marched, they are under the Command of the

Par-

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.

November.

Parliament, and have shewed themselves faithful
and serviceable, and God hath exceedingly blessed
their Service to the Good of both Kingdoms.

This being the true State of that Business,
our Committee of both Houses being upon the
Place at the Siege of *Newark*, and not so much
as advised with by your Committees what was
fit to be done with the Person of the King (the
Disposing of whose Person, with your joint Con-
sent, you now make a Matter of so high Concern-
ment); but your Army, contrary to Engage-
ment not to remove without the Knowledge of
our Committee, removing and taking the King
with them, without any Notice given to our
Committee before their March, though nothing
but a River parted the two Armies with which
our Committees did then reside: Your Lordships
will now think our Committees had Reason
to desire to return; and there was little En-
couragement for any other Committee to go
down to your Army, especially considering that
you took *Carlisle* from the *English* Forces there,
against the Consent of the Committee then up-
on the Place. And that when your Army was
at *Bramham-Moor*, a little before the King took
Leicester, (the King then being very strong, and
our Affairs in a hazardous Condition) they were
earnestly pressed by our Committee, then a joint
Committee with them, according to the Treaty,
to march Southward; but, contrary to their De-
sires, and against their Consent, your Army
marched away Northward.

It is true that you sent out Orders to debar all
such, of both or either Kingdoms, as had been
in Arms against the Parliament, from coming in-
to your Quarters, or to the Court, or to the Per-
son of the King; and it is as true, that they did
come notwithstanding those Orders, and yet no
Man punished for Breach of those Orders that
ever we heard of.

Your Lordships say, *There is no such Clause in
the Treaty, as that the Scots Army should do no-
thing*

‘ thing without a joint Resolution of both Kingdoms, An. 22. Car. I.
 ‘ or their Committees; and thence infer, you ha- 1646.
 ‘ ving no joint Resolution to the contrary, you
 ‘ might march away. But it is most evident from
 ‘ your Argument, (for your Example, the Army
 ‘ under the Earl of *Essex* or Sir *Thomas Fairfax*, is
 ‘ not at all applicable to your Inference) that it is
 ‘ wholly in your Power whether the Kingdom of
 ‘ *England* shall ever join in directing of your Army
 ‘ or not. You had no Committee for fifteen
 ‘ Weeks before *Newark*, and all that Time our
 ‘ Committee could not order your Army for Want
 ‘ of yours to join with them; when yours did
 ‘ come, they having a negative Voice, did not
 ‘ agree to our Committee’s Desires for the King’s
 ‘ Stay at *Southwell*, or acquaint them with your
 ‘ Armies going away, but denied it to them;
 ‘ so as that main Thing in the Treaty to join in
 ‘ ordering your Army is, both by your Practice
 ‘ and Assertion in your Paper, rendered useles.

November.

‘ And in this Argument also is the Covenant
 ‘ recited for the Defence of the Person of the King,
 ‘ and the Words, *In the Preservation of Religion*
 ‘ and the Liberties of the Kingdoms (a main Clause,
 ‘ without which the other Part ought never to be
 ‘ mentioned) are left out. Certainly, my Lords,
 ‘ we should never have argued thus from the Co-
 ‘ venant and Treaty. And here you say again as
 ‘ formerly, *Your Army claims no Right to dispose*
 ‘ of the King: But we say that, *de Facto*, they do
 ‘ dispose of him; and must, by your Argument,
 ‘ ever do so, unless we agree to the joint Consent
 ‘ of the Kingdom of *Scotland* for disposing of the
 ‘ King in *England*, (and that from such Grounds
 ‘ as, if admitted, would interest the Kingdom of
 ‘ *Scotland* in the Government of the Kingdoms of
 ‘ *England* and *Ireland*) else you will not consent;
 ‘ and unless you consent, you say your Army ought
 ‘ not to part with him; so as he is to be disposed by
 ‘ you in *England* without our Consent, but not by
 ‘ us in this Kingdom without your Consent; which
 ‘ sure cannot be found in the Covenant.

The

208 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 22. Car. I. *The COMMONS ANSWER to the fourth OBJECTION or ARGUMENT of the Scots COMMISSIONERS.* [*Given at p. 134.*]
 1646:
 November.

‘ This contradicts what you have formerly said;
 ‘ *That one coming to another Nation ought not to*
 ‘ *be remanded, though for the greatest Crime.*

‘ And let your Lordships consider, that your
 ‘ *Army in England is not the Kingdom of Scotland.*
 ‘ And here also you recite the Covenant, as to the
 ‘ Defence of his Majesty’s Person; but omit the
 ‘ subsequent Words, *In the Preservation of the true*
 ‘ *Religion and Liberties of the Kingdoms.* And as
 ‘ all Persons in both Kingdoms, who have taken the
 ‘ Covenant, have bound themselves before Almighty
 ‘ God to defend the King’s Person, in the Defence
 ‘ of the true Religion and Liberties of the King-
 ‘ doms; so are they to do it only in their several
 ‘ Vocations, without intrenching upon each others
 ‘ Rights and Privileges; for which Reason also
 ‘ Incendiaries were reserved to the Trial of the
 ‘ Supreme Judicatories of the Kingdoms respective-
 ‘ ly, that their several Jurisdictions might not be
 ‘ prejudged or confounded.’

The COMMONS ANSWER to the fifth OBJECTION
or ARGUMENT of the Scots COMMISSIONERS.
 [*Given at p. 134.*]

‘ It is most true, it hath often been set down
 ‘ in your Papers, *That your Army neither doth*
 ‘ *nor will take upon them to dispose of the King;*
 ‘ yet we know that, *de Facto*, they do dispose of
 ‘ him. You say, *He came without Capitulation or*
 ‘ *Treaty:* We again desire you will not put us
 ‘ upon that Debate. You alledge, *That his Re-*
 ‘ *sidence is voluntary and free:* Yet you sent us
 ‘ Word that you had set a strong Guard upon him;
 ‘ and you cannot say, *That the Covenant, Treaty,*
 ‘ *or Fundamental Rights of the Scots Nation are,*
 ‘ *That he should be in voluntary Freedom with*
 ‘ *us, but in restraint with you.*

‘ You

‘ You argue, That the sole Disposal of the King
 ‘ comes in Place of Peace ; which is not so, unless
 ‘ you will grant that you have now made Peace,
 ‘ for you have the sole Disposal. But all this is
 ‘ before more at large.’

An. 22. Car. I.

1646.

Novembers

*The COMMONS ANSWER to the sixth OBJECTION
 or ARGUMENT of the Scots COMMISSIONERS.
 [Given at p. 135.]*

‘ We have never alledged that the Parliament
 ‘ of *Scotland* hath not the like Exercise of Inter-
 ‘ rest in *Scotland* as we desire to have in *England*,
 ‘ and yet this is often objected against us. But
 ‘ we do aver, that the Right of Exercise of Inter-
 ‘ rest is distinct to each Nation : And from your
 ‘ own Argument, if we do not deny this Right
 ‘ to *Scotland*, why should you deny it to *England* ?
 ‘ The Union of the Kingdoms under one Head
 ‘ doth no more confound the Exercise of particular
 ‘ Rights, than if under several Heads. We never
 ‘ desired you to renounce any Right of the King-
 ‘ dom of *Scotland* ; let us have the same Measure.
 ‘ By your Argument it must follow, That, by
 ‘ *England*’s having the King of *Scotland*, the King-
 ‘ dom of *Scotland* should be King of *England* :
 ‘ For although the Person of the King be not di-
 ‘ visible, yet his Relations are divisible, both in their
 ‘ Nature and Exercise ; the King of *England* and
 ‘ the King of *Scotland* are one Man, but they are
 ‘ not one Thing. And tho’ those Relations are
 ‘ not divisible from his Person, yet is the Exercise
 ‘ of them divisible from his Person, as his Person
 ‘ is divisible from either or both of the Kingdoms,
 ‘ and as the Kingdoms are divisible from each other
 ‘ in Place and in Power, in Right and in Interest,
 ‘ within their several Precincts ; and the exact Pre-
 ‘ servation of this Distinction is the best Means to
 ‘ prevent a worse Division.

‘ And if, as you say, your desiring not to part
 ‘ with your Right, doth not argue any Diffidence in
 VOL. XV. O us,

An. 22. Car. I.

1646.

November.

‘ us; now that it is shewed you have no Right, why
 ‘ will you be diffident of us, to hinder the Exercise
 ‘ of our particular Rights?
 ‘ That which you call your last Objection was
 ‘ an Answer to your Reply.

The COMMONS ANSWER to the seventh OBJECTION or ARGUMENT of the SCOTS COMMISSIONERS. [Before given at p. 136.]

[Although in this Answer of the Commons so far, they have cited every Objection at large as made by the Scots Commissioners, yet here they have gone no farther than the first Paragraph, beginning with, If this Argument, and ending, as they shall think fit; wholly omitting the several Expedients offered by the Scots for the Satisfaction of the King.]

‘ You object, Your Army cannot part with
 ‘ the King without the Consent of the King-
 ‘ dom of *Scotland*; the Kingdom of *Scotland* can-
 ‘ not consent, unless they may join in the Dis-
 ‘ posal of his Person; they will not join till it be
 ‘ agreed that he be disposed for the Good of both
 ‘ Kingdoms: And can any Thing then be more
 ‘ plain, than that the King is then to remain where
 ‘ he is (as we have said before) untill you will be
 ‘ satisfied? And being where he is, we know, and
 ‘ so do you, that he is disposed of against our Con-
 ‘ sent. And if this Argument were turned over,
 ‘ it would remain good: For we do say, The
 ‘ Kingdom of *Scotland* had not Right of joint In-
 ‘ terest in disposing of the Person of the King if
 ‘ he were at *Westminster*; neither should we claim
 ‘ any, if he were duly at *Edinburgh*. And if this
 ‘ be a good Argument, it will follow, That you
 ‘ should have some of your Nation to reside conti-
 ‘ nually with us, to advise and consent to what
 ‘ Places the King shall go upon every Occasion of
 ‘ his Remove, and upon every Accident that may
 ‘ happen; considering the Temper and Condition
 ‘ of

of these Times may call for sudden and different
Resolutions, and such as they are only capable to
judge of, and to apply Remedies unto, who are
upon the Place.

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.
November.

We doubt not your Lordships are satisfied
that the Coming of the King to your Army was
with a Design, on his Part, against the Good of
both Kingdoms; which, with his denying the
Propositions, being among you, are not Argu-
ments that he ought to be left to his own Will
and Pleasure.

Upon the whole Tract in your Papers we
shall, from brotherly Affection, let you know, to
prevent the like for the future, That your Papers
seem to be prepared, printed, and published to
captivate the Hearers and Readers, to trouble their
Fancies, and hinder the right Understanding of
the Question, that they may be led by an im-
plicit Belief; and seem to hold forth, That
you will so manage your Affairs, as that, if any
Difference should happen, (which God forbid,
and we shall always endeavour to prevent, tho'
it arise elsewhere) it may be laid on the Houses
of Parliament: Your Papers throughout inter-
volving Things of several Natures, mis-reciting
so many Matters of Fact, holding forth Examples
and Similies, (which, if urged by us, were unrea-
sonable) as if they were applicable to the pre-
sent Debate, which yet they are not; that many
Readers and Hearers, though they know not how
to apply them to the Question between us, yet
may think they are to it, because the Scots Com-
missioners would not else have inserted them.

Having thus cleared the Right of the Parlia-
ment of *England*, in disposing the Person of the
King in the Kingdom of *England*, we come
now to the Propositions: But, before we fall in-
to the Particulars of them, we shall give a short
Answer to your Letter of the 24th of *October*
last. You express therein, *That the Scots Army*
having had no Pay for six Months, have been
forced to take free Quarter; which we wonder

An. 22. Car. I.

1646.

November.

to see, when your Army taketh 19,700 *l.* monthly in Money, besides much free Quarter. And we sent your Lordships an Account of this, which we received out of the *North*; besides which they have had, for one Year ending the last of *October* last, 72,972 *l.* 2 *s.* 11 *d.* for the Custom and other Impositions upon Coals only.

Your Letter seems very compassionately to consider the Misery of the *Northern* Parts; but the Ways you propose of Remedy extend the Benefit of your Compassion especially to the *Scots* Army; the which Army's removing into fresh Quarters in *England*, were to make them feel as much Misery as those it would leave. We shall provide what Money we can to enable the *Scots* Army to march into *Scotland*; but you know we are not engaged to you for 200,000 *l.* in present, as your Letter implies. But this is before more at large.

But whilst you would not have the King to go into *Scotland*, (for you say that is prejudicial to both Kingdoms) neither would you have him go into *Ireland*, or beyond Sea, (because you say that would not be a Way to present Peace, but certainly prognosticate new Trouble); and whilst you will not let the Parliament dispose of his Person in *England*, according to their Right, (and the Parliament cannot admit of a joint Right in you of Disposing his Person here, for that were to admit a joint Right in you in all the Liberties of this Kingdom) how shall any be satisfied that this Question, concerning the Disposing of the Person of the King, shall not retard the marching of the *Scots* Army out of this Kingdom? Will they not inquire, What will the *Scots* do with the Person of the King, when their Army marcheth out of the Kingdom? To which we hope it will be answered, Our Brethren of *Scotland* are satisfied the Parliament of *England* will, according to their Right, dispose of the Person of the King in the Kingdom of *England*: And your Lordships may rest assured the Person of the

the King will be disposed by the Parliament of *An. 22. Car. 1.*
England, as may best conduce to the Good, 1646.
 Union, and Happiness of the two Kingdoms.

November.

The Proposition you make for the King to
 come to us with Honour, Freedom, and Safety;
 or that Commissioners may once again be sent
 in the Name of both Kingdoms, with Power to
 hear his Desires, and to endeavour the Satis-
 faction of Doubts and Scruples, is the same in
 Substance made by himself, in his Answer to the
 Propositions sent him by both Kingdoms; but
 that you also propose that some may be sent to
 the King, and he desires to come hither; and
 your Lordships will not think they are more
 reasonable when made by you for the King, than
 when made by the King for himself.

And whereas your Lordships find a Difference
 in the Times when both Kingdoms sent to the
 King, in Answer to his Letters of the 26th and
 29th of *December* last, desiring to come hither,
 for that he had then both Garrisons and Field
 Forces unreduced: We desire your Lordships
 to remember, That although those Passages of
 his having Garrisons and Forces be in the Letter,
 yet the main Matter insisted upon was in these
 Words, *We conceive that, untill Satisfaction and*
Security be first given to both your Kingdoms, your
Majesty's Coming hither cannot be convenient, nor
by us assented unto. And which doth further
 appear in another Letter, sent from the Parlia-
 ment and your Lordships in *March* last, in An-
 swer to a Letter of the King's of the 23d
 of the same *March*, wherein the same Words of
Satisfaction and Security are again expressly re-
 peated; and there hath not been any Act done by
 the King since that Time, that hath, in the least,
 given Satisfaction or Security to this Kingdom:
 But, however, your Lordships well know, that
 the King, at the sending of the said last Letter,
 had no Forces in the Field, nor Garrisons un-
 blocked up; and he hath as many Forces now,
 when you make these Desires for him, as he had

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.

November,

‘ when, to your unspeakable Grief, (as you say
 ‘ in your Papers) he, in his Denial to grant the
 ‘ Propositions sent him from both Kingdoms,
 ‘ made then the same Desires for himself.

‘ Your Lordships recite our Answer to his Ma-
 ‘ jesty’s Message of the 11th of *September* 1642,
 ‘ to which we shall need say no more, than that
 ‘ there is a large Difference between what is to be
 ‘ done to prevent a War, which the common
 ‘ Enemy did begin by keeping the King from us,
 ‘ and what is to be done after such a War to secure
 ‘ a Peace: To secure which, and to preserve
 ‘ brotherly Union between the two Kingdoms,
 ‘ which we most earnestly and from our Hearts
 ‘ desire, we should use all Means conducing there-
 ‘ unto, and endeavour to prevent all Ways of
 ‘ Separation; and if we be in any, to hasten out
 ‘ of them, the true End of our Covenant and this
 ‘ War being that neither of us may be under any
 ‘ Oppressions. Let us both act for the common
 ‘ Good of both, and each enjoy our particular
 ‘ Rights; such Union is strong and will be last-
 ‘ ing: But where one gaineth upon the particular
 ‘ Rights of the other, and then argueth that he
 ‘ must keep it, and the other bear it, to avoid Dis-
 ‘ union; such Arguments are not to be often used,
 ‘ and such Attempts are to be forborne, lest they
 ‘ make a Breach in brotherly Union; which God
 ‘ forbid.

‘ But we are confident the Right of the King-
 ‘ dom of *England* will be acknowledged, and we
 ‘ possessed of it; and we shall make it appear how
 ‘ little Cause there is for those groundless Insinua-
 ‘ tions in your Speeches and Papers, as if the Par-
 ‘ liament of *England* were averse from their antient
 ‘ and fundamental Government, by King, Lords,
 ‘ and Commons, which we had thought the De-
 ‘ claration of the House of Commons of the 17th
 ‘ of *April* 1646, sufficiently cleared to the whole
 ‘ World; or that they were not as really forward
 ‘ as any, for the procuring of a safe and well-
 ‘ grounded Peace, which is the greatest and chiefest
 ‘ of

‘ of our Desires; and it will be manifest to the Judge-
 ‘ ments and Consciences of all, That as we really
 ‘ endeavoured the Good of the King and both
 ‘ Kingdoms, so shall we constantly and faithfully,
 ‘ persevere in those Endeavours; not doubting
 ‘ but, upon our sincere performing our Covenant
 ‘ and Treaties, the Blessing of God will so ac-
 ‘ company us, as there will be a most sweet and
 ‘ brotherly Agreement between the Nations, and
 ‘ such a Conclusion as will be pleasing to God,
 ‘ and wherein both Kingdoms shall find the greatest
 ‘ Comfort and Happiness.’

An. 22. Car. I.
 1646.

December.

Nov. 29. This Answer of the Commons seems to have been resented by the *Scots* Commissioners; for, next Day, the Speaker acquainted the House That he had sent his Servant, with the Answer and a Letter from himself sealed up, to those Commissioners; and the Servant being desired to stay a little, they came to him again, and gave him a Letter, directed to the Speaker, and returned the Answer sealed up as it was and wrapped in a clean Cover. The Servant urged, That he had no Warrant to receive it back if it was the same he brought; but, upon the Commissioners pressing it on him, he took both. The Letter was immediately read; it is not inserted in the *Journals*, but only said to be dated from *Worcester-House*, and subscribed by five of the Commissioners; and therefore we can only conjecture, that they refused to receive it, because it came not to them from both Houses of Parliament, as every Thing else had done.—The House of Lords took no Notice at all of this Matter.

Which being
 sent to the Scots
 Commissioners,
 they refuse to re-
 ceive it.

December. This Month begins with an Ordinance for the better Observation of the monthly Fast; which having been much slighted at this Time by the People, it was ordered to be more strictly kept under several severe Penalties.

The Lords also proceeded, according to a late annual Custom, to nominate Sheriffs for the several Counties

An. 22. Car. 1. Counties in *England* and *Wales*; the Names of all which are particularly entered in the *Journals*.

1646.

December.

Dec. 5. Several Papers were delivered in to the House of Lords, containing the Substance of the Disputes, between the Commissioners of both Nations, about the Payment of the first 200,000 *l.* to the *Scots* Army, and the Manner of their evacuating this Kingdom.—But these Altercations, being very long and tedious as entered in the *Lords Journals*, we pass over; and this the rather, because the Result of the whole was soon after digested into Articles in Form, which will appear under their proper Date.—Mr. *Rushworth* writes, ‘That this first

The Money for 200,000 *l.* which was to be raised according to the Payment of the first 200,000 *l.* to them very speedily raised;

the Parliament’s Proposals to the City of *London*, before given, and on the Security of the Bishops’ Lands, came in so fast, that the whole was made up by the End of the last Month.’ This gave such Encouragement to the *Scots* Commissioners, that, on the seventh of this Month, they presented the following Paper to the House of Lords, addressed to their Speaker :

Right Honourable,

Whereupon they require some further Security for the latter 200,000 *l.*

‘WE do agree with your Lordships concerning the Terms of the Payment of the latter 200,000 *l.* But, as to the Security, we are commanded to desire it may be out of the Estates of Papists, Prelates, and Malignants, according to the Treaty betwixt the Kingdoms; or otherwise we do desire, that we may have some other particular Security: Concerning all which we are ready to confer with your Lordships, and are confident we shall come to a good Agreement.

‘We do likewise expect that, since our Army is to remove out of this Kingdom, and the *Irish* Rebels do and are like more to infest the Kingdom of *Scotland*, the Honourable Houses would take into Consideration what Aid and Assistance
‘ to

' to give to their Brethren of Scotland; or give An. 22. Car. I.
' Power to your Lordships to confer with us about 1646.
' it.

*By Command of the Commissioners for the Parlia-
ment of Scotland.*

December.

JOHN CHIESLEY.

The Lords ordered this Paper to be communi-
cated to the Commons, which was done the next Which the Com-
Day accordingly. But that House resolved to ad- mons refuse.
here to their former Vote of giving no other Se-
curity for the last 200,000 *l.* than the Public Faith;
and the Money to be paid to the Scots Army, ac-
cording to the Times formerly limited. How-
ever,

Dec. 10. We find an Ordinance of Parliament,
passed this Day, for the speedy Conveyance of the
Sum of 200,000 *l.* in Specie, to the City of York,
being the First Payment due to the Scots Army.
The Lord Mayor, and all other Magistrates and
Governors of that City, were required to be aiding
and assisting to the Treasurers, for the safe-keeping
the said Sum, during the Time it should remain
there. *

Notwithstanding every Thing went on so
smoothly, yet the Parliament did not think them-
selves so secure in their new acquired Power, but
it might be overturned again. These Jealousies
were chiefly occasioned by great Numbers of Ma-
lignants resorting then to London, more to com-
pound for their sequestered Estates, than to raise
any fresh Commotions. However, the Parliament
thought fit, for their further Security, to pass a very
severe Vote at this Time, ' That all who should
raise Forces against the Parliament, or either
House,

* This Money, under a great Convoy commanded by Major-
General Skippon, came down to York, Jan. 1. this Year, and was
paid to the Scots, at the Common Hall of that City, very soon
after. At their Coming in all the Artillery of the City were di-
charged.

Drake's History of York, Fol. London, 1736, p. 171.

An. 22. Car. I. House, hereafter, should die without Mercy, and
1646. have their Estates confiscated.

December.

Dec. 14. An Ordinance, formerly brought up from the House of Commons, for clearing the Proceedings of Parliament in the Course of this War, was read in the House of Lords, agreed to, and ordered to be printed; notwithstanding which it is not to be found in *Husband's*, *Scobell's*, or *Rushworth's Collections*; and we give it as entered in the *Journals* of the Lords.

An ORDINANCE for justifying the Proceedings of Parliament.

An Ordinance passed, for justifying the Proceedings of Parliament,

‘ **W** Hereas the Lords and Commons, assembled in Parliament, have been necessitated to prosecute a War in their just and lawful Defence; and thereupon Oaths, Declarations, and Proclamations have been made against them, and their Ordinances and Proceedings, and against others for adhering unto them, and for executing Offices, Places, and Charges, by Authority derived from them; and Judgments, Indictments, Outlawries, Attainders, and Inquisitions, for the Causes aforesaid, have been had and made against some of the Members of the Houses of Parliament, and other his Majesty's good Subjects; and Grants have been made of their Lands and Goods:

‘ The Lords and Commons, assembled in Parliament, taking the same into their serious Considerations have declared, and do hereby declare, That all Oaths, Declarations, and Proclamations heretofore had, or hereafter to be had, against both or either Houses of Parliament, or any the Members of either of them for the Causes aforesaid, or against their Ordinances or Proceedings, or against any for adhering unto them, or for doing or executing any Office, Place, or Charge, by any Authority derived from the said Houses, or either

‘ of

of them ; and all Judgments, Indictments, Out-
lawries, Attainders, Inquisitions, and Grants
thereupon made ; and all other Proceedings for
any the Causes aforesaid, had, made, done or ex-
ecuted, or to be had, made, done, or executed,
whether the same be done by the King, or any
Judges, Justices, Ministers, Sheriffs, or any others
by his Majesty's Direction or Appointment, are
void and of none Effect ; and are contrary to, and
against the Laws of this Realm.

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.

December,

And the said Lords and Commons do further
ordain, order, and declare, That all Judges Ju-
stices of the Peace, Mayors, Sheriffs, Constables,
and all Officers and Ministers, do take Notice
hereof; and are hereby prohibited and discharged,
for all Time to come, from awarding any Writ,
Process, Summons, or Citation, or from pro-
nouncing or executing any Judgment, Sentence
or Decree, or any Way proceeding against, or
molesting any of the said Members of the two
Houses of Parliament, or against any of the
Subjects of this Kingdom for any the Causes
aforesaid.

To shew the *Scots* Nation that the *English* Par-
liament were in perfect Amity and Friendship with
them, another Ordinance was also read and agreed
to on this Day ; which, with the subsequent one,
we give from the same Authority as the foregoing.

*An ORDINANCE concerning the Treaties between
the Kingdoms of England and Scotland.*

THE Lords and Commons assembled in
Parliament, to testify their Desires that
the League and Union between the Kingdoms of
England and *Scotland* may be firmly kept and
preserved, have declared, ordered, and ordained,
and do hereby declare, order, and ordain, That
the Large Treaty passed between the Kingdoms,
the late Treaty for the Coming of the *Scots* Ar-
my into *England*, and the settling of the Garrison
at

Another con-
cerning the Tre-
aties between the
two Kingdoms,

220 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.

December.

‘ at *Berwick*, of the 29th of *November*, 1643.
‘ and the Treaty concerning *Ireland*, of the 6th
‘ of *August*, 1642, for bringing 10,000 *Scots* into
‘ the Province of *Ulster*, in *Ireland*, with all their
‘ Ordinances and Proceedings passed between the
‘ two Kingdoms, and whereunto they are obliged
‘ by the aforesaid Treaties ; and all and every Ar-
‘ ticle and Clause therein contained, shall be, and
‘ are hereby, ratified, and shall, for all Time to
‘ come, be inviolably kept and observed according
‘ to the true Intent and Meaning therein expressed.’

An ORDINANCE concerning the Cessation of Arms
in *Ireland*, and Grants under the Great Seal of
Ireland.

And the Cessa-
tion in *Ireland*.

‘ **W**HEREAS the War in *Ireland* hath been
‘ maintained at the Charge of the Sub-
‘ jects of this Kingdom of *England*, and not of his
‘ Majesty ; yet, (without Consent or Privy of
‘ the Lords and Commons in Parliament) by
‘ Commission or other Authority derived from the
‘ King, a Cessation of Arms hath been made with
‘ the bloody Rebels in *Ireland*, after the Effusion
‘ of so much innocent Blood, and Slaughter of
‘ above 100,000 Protestants, Men, Women, and
‘ Children ; whereby those Rebels have received
‘ great Encouragement, and are the better enabled
‘ wholly to extirpate the Protestants remaining,
‘ and to endanger this Kingdom :

‘ The Lords and Commons assembled in Par-
‘ liament do hereby declare and ordain, That the
‘ said Cessation of Arms in the Kingdom of *Ireland*,
‘ and all Treaties and Conclusions of Peace with
‘ the said *Irish* Rebels, made or to be made by the
‘ King, or by any Authority derived from him,
‘ without Consent of the Houses of Parliament, are
‘ void and of none Effect ; and all Governors,
‘ Commanders, Officers, and Ministers within the
‘ Kingdom of *Ireland* are to take Notice hereof,
‘ and accordingly to demean themselves in their
‘ respective Charges.

‘ And

‘ And the said Lords and Commons do farther
 declare, order, and ordain, That all Grants of Of-
 fices, Lands, Tenements, or Hereditaments, made
 or passed under the Great Seal of England unto
 any Person or Persons, Bodies Politic or Cor-
 porate, since the Cessation made in Ireland, the
 15th Day of December, 1643, are and shall be
 null and void; and that all Honours and Titles
 in the said Kingdom of Ireland, conferred on any
 Person or Persons since the said Cessation, shall
 be null and void.’

An. 22. Car. I.
 1646.
 December.

Dec. 19. This Day both Houses received, a
 Petition, intituled, *The Humble Petition of the
 Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and Commons of the City
 of London, in Common Council assembled*; to which
 was annexed, *An Humble Representation of the
 pressing Grievances, and important Desires of the
 well-affected Freemen, and Covenant-engaged Citi-
 zens of the City of London.*

And first that from the City, in their Corporate
 Capacity, as presented to the Commons:

‘ THE loud and unanimous Cry of many
 Thousands of our Fellow Citizens, as well
 as our own Sense and Fellow-feeling, hath obli-
 ged us to make this present Interposition amongst
 other your public and weighty Affairs. We do
 in the annexed humbly offer unto you their own
 Words and Expressions, with some Omissions
 and a few Alterations, as they were delivered un-
 to us by a great Number of considerable Citizens
 of known Worth, and of approved Integrity to
 the Parliament; that this Honourable House
 may the more clearly see the deep Sense they
 have of the growing Miseries and increasing Di-
 stractions of these Times. [‘ The chief Matter
 thereof is the same with our late Addresses, which

A Petition to the
 Parliament from
 the Lord Mayor
 and Common-
 Council of Lon-
 don, for disband-
 ing of the Army,
 for removing of
 preaching Sol-
 diers, &c.

we

‘ In the Petition to the Lords this Passage runs thus; ‘ The
 chief Matter thereof is the same with our late Addresses, unto
 which we humbly hope your Lordships will still find the same
 Rea-

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.

December.

‘ we humbly hope and pray may incline this Honourable House to resolve upon some speedy Remedy, now you hear the Grievs and Fears of the Generality of this City to be still the same with those, which we, the Representative Body thereof, then tendered unto you:] The Obligation that lies upon us to them, the Duty we owe to the Parliament, and the Interest this City hath in the Peace of the whole Kingdom, would not permit us, either to reject their Petitions, or to conceal their Grievances from you; neither yet can we ourselves but both own their Grievs and Fears, and so humbly join with them in the same Desires.

‘ But to those Reasons, in which we have concurred with our said Fellow Citizens, for the more speedy disbanding of that Army among others, which hath in the Sight of the Kingdom, by God’s Blessing, obtained so many signal Victories; we humbly crave Leave, That as we detract not from their Merit, so we may also add thus much, which is daily complained of, That there are some Officers, and many common Soldiers of that Army, who either have never taken the Covenant, or are disaffected to the Church-Government held forth by the Parliament; that the Pulpits of divers godly Ministers are often usurped by preaching Soldiers and others, who infect their Flock, and all Places where they come, with strange and dangerous Errors; and then we humbly submit it to this Honourable House to consider what Security or Settlement can be expected while they are Masters of such a Power,

‘ Reasons to give your favourable Acceptance and noble Regard, as we humbly and thankfully acknowledge you readily shewed unto the same, when we tendered them unto you Lordships, as the Representative Body of the City alone.’ The Obligation, &c.

The Reason of which Variation seems to be owing to this Circumstance: When the City presented a Remonstrance to both Houses, in May 1646, (which see in Vol. XIV. p. 418, *et seq.*) the Lords returned them their hearty Thanks for it; but the Commons only gave for Answer, ‘ That they would take the same into Consideration when Time should be convenient.’

Power; and what Example, if not Encourage-
ment, the People may take from them to refuse
the Covenant, or, if they have taken it, to con-
temn the same, to the great Derogation of that
Church-Government which the Parliament hath
declared. We humbly hope that, although such
were dismissed, the Parliament, by their Autho-
rity, may otherwise, if Occasion require, suffi-
ciently provide for the Safety of the Kingdom.

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.
December.

But this great Work, as also that which is of
so high Concernment to the establishing of a per-
fect and well-grounded Peace, the bringing home
of his Majesty, we do humbly and wholly submit
and commit, next to the Almighty Hand of
God's Providence, unto the Wisdom of both
Houses of Parliament; being confident that they
will preserve and defend his Majesty's Royal Per-
son and Authority, in the Preservation and De-
fence of the true Religion and Liberties of the
Kingdom, according to the Covenant.

[^b We could not also but join with our said Fel-
low Citizens in that which they desire concerning
the future Election of the Members of this Ho-
nourable House; and although we acknowledge
there can scarcely be found a Parliament where
the Election of some of the Members thereof
hath not been excepted against; yet we humbly
pray, that, as to this Point, we may further de-
sire, That such Complaints as lye before this
Honourable House, or the Committees thereof,
concerning undue Elections, may, with all con-
venient Speed, be examined and determined.]

To that also which concerns the Estates of
Delinquents which are under Sequestration, or
are or shall be either wholly confiscated, or else
compounded for, we humbly desire Leave to add
this Petition in Behalf of ourselves, and many
Thousands of our Fellow Citizens, and all others
who have adhered to the Parliament, That all

just

(b) This Paragraph is omitted in the Petition as presented to the
Lords; but, except in this and the foregoing Instance, the one Pe-
tition is an exact Copy of the other.

An. 22. Car. 1.
1646.

December.

‘ most destroy’d; and, by a treacherous and coward-
 ‘ ly Silence, continue to hold his Peace? We can-
 ‘ not; we dare not; the Oath of God with a Curse
 ‘ lies upon us, if we shall so basely yield to a Spirit
 ‘ of Indifferency and Neutrality in a Cause which
 ‘ doth so much concern God’s Glory and the King-
 ‘ dom’s Good; and shall not (especially in such a
 ‘ Time as this) zealously and constantly, in our
 ‘ Places and Callings, according to our Power,
 ‘ apply our sincerest Endeavours, notwithstanding
 ‘ all Lets and Oppositions, to promote the same.

First, ‘ It cannot but be acknowledged, most
 ‘ worthy Senators, that the Churches of God, in
 ‘ Times of Reformation, have ever thought it the
 ‘ fittest Season of all others, in some extraordinary
 ‘ Manner, to oblige themselves unto Almighty
 ‘ God; as the Divine Goodness hath put it into
 ‘ your Hearts (according to the laudable Practice,
 ‘ upon all Occasions, of the most godly and religi-
 ‘ ous Governors) to strike a solemn Covenant with
 ‘ him; and, by your Authority, to enjoin the same
 ‘ to the Kingdoms, for the Reformation and De-
 ‘ fence of Religion, Laws, Liberties; as an excel-
 ‘ lent Means to acquire the Favour of God, and
 ‘ the uniting and strengthening of the three King-
 ‘ doms of *England, Scotland, and Ireland*, against
 ‘ the common Enemies of the true Reformed Reli-
 ‘ gion, Peace and Prosperity of the Kingdoms; to
 ‘ the apparent Manifestation of your most Christian
 ‘ Zeal and Piety to God and to his Truth: Where-
 ‘ fore we cannot here but make our sad Complaint
 ‘ unto your Honours, in the Expression of our
 ‘ deepest Sense of that great Dishonour which is
 ‘ done unto the heavenly Majesty in the most hor-
 ‘ rible Slighting and treacherous Infringement of
 ‘ this most sacred Oath, and that bold Contempt
 ‘ which is offered at this Day to the Authority of
 ‘ this renowned Parliament in this their so religious
 ‘ Undertaking and Injunction; on the one Part,
 ‘ by those that altogether refuse to enter into this
 ‘ holy Covenant of God and the Kingdoms; and,
 ‘ on the other Part, by them which declaim against
 ‘ it,

it, and cast disgraceful Aspersions upon it; that we cannot look at these Persons (whatsoever their Pretences be) as any other than either malignant Enemies to the Parliament, or the Peace and Union of the Kingdoms, and the Reformation of Religion; nor can we promise to ourselves any Security so long as they are suffered, undiscovered or unpunished, to live amongst us: We therefore make it our humble Prayer unto your Honours, that you would be pleased, as in your pious Wisdoms you shall think most fit, to find out and appoint such Ways or Means to discover and bring so great Misdoers and Offenders against God and your Authority to condign Punishment, as may be most agreeable to the Merit of their so crying Offences: And that as you have long since enjoined, by Ordinance of Parliament, the taking of this sacred Covenant, (which, notwithstanding, is not yet done in many Places of this Kingdom) so you would countenance and defend it inviolable from Neglect, Infringement, Scorn, and Defamation; and, by your Civil Sanction, effectually impose it to be sworn by all, without Exception, under some certain Penalty, as best shall seem unto your Honours, to be duly inflicted, by your religious Justice, upon the wilful Contemnners of the same. And here give us Leave, in all Humility, to offer what seems to us both just and necessary, That such Persons as have not taken, or shall not take, the Solemn League and Covenant; or, having taken it, are manifestly disaffected to the Ends therein expressed, especially in point of Religion, may not be countenanced, employed in, or advanced to, Places of public Trust; as being a Discredit to your Government, dangerous to the Kingdoms, and a Hinderance to the Reformation of Religion. By so doing you shall preserve this great Oath of our God from Contempt and Violation; a Sin which we humbly conceive is the chiefest Cause of most of those Miseries and Calamities that God's just Hand hath brought upon us.

An. 22. Car. 1.
1646.
December,

An. 22. Car. 1.
1646.

December.

Secondly, ' When you did at first conclude upon
 ' that sacred Covenant, (wherein now you have
 ' solemnly engaged both yourselves and us) how
 ' glad were the Hearts of all the Faithful in the
 ' Land, and what rejoicing was there at the Oath;
 ' as in the Days of *Asa*! We hoped then that our
 ' Religion (more precious than our Lives, which
 ' was that the truly Godly had chiefly in their Eye)
 ' had been so secured, that all the Malice, Power,
 ' and Policy both of Men and Devils should never
 ' have been able to overturn the same; but, with
 ' bleeding Hearts we speak it, how is it that, for
 ' all this, such an Inundation of Errors, Schisms,
 ' Heresies, is broken in upon us? which, if not
 ' speedily prevented by your Wisdoms, and op-
 ' posed by your impartial Justice, we fear will
 ' have its dreadful Effect, to the total Subversion of
 ' the Power of Godliness. We are even struck
 ' with Astonishment, that, after such a Covenant,
 ' there should be such Blasphemies uttered to God's
 ' highest Dishonour; that such heretical Opinions
 ' should be broached, to the never-so-much vili-
 ' fying of the Truth; that such Schisms should be
 ' acted and fomented, to the renting and dividing
 ' of the Church; that the Government established
 ' should be so much defamed and opposed, to the
 ' Contempt of the Parliament, in Words, in Books,
 ' in Practice, by the Sectaries of these Times, who
 ' yet seem as Men under Sanctuary, finding no-
 ' thing done unto them for the hindering of these
 ' Mischiefs, or the Punishment of these Enormi-
 ' ties. God hath done great Things for us, and
 ' hath shewed us great Salvation as at this Day;
 ' then Woe be to us if these be our Returns for so
 ' great Blessings. Trusty and right worthy Pa-
 ' triots, we know not whither to go in these our
 ' sad Distempers but unto you, whom God and
 ' this Kingdom hath betruſted with what is most
 ' precious unto him, and dearest unto us, the Pro-
 ' tection of Religion, the preserving of it in Doc-
 ' trine pure, and in Discipline from Contempt and
 ' Scorn; and is that for which above all Things else
 ' we

‘ we beseech your Honours again and again. Here An. 22. Car. I.
 ‘ we would lay the Stress of our Desires, and ex- 1646.
 ‘ press the Urgency of our Affections; we think. {
 ‘ we can never say enough for our God and for his December,
 ‘ Truth. What are our Estates, our Liberties,
 ‘ our Lives unto us, if the Ark of God be taken?
 ‘ If that be gone, the Glory, yea the Life, of our
 ‘ Lives is departed from *England*. We tremble to
 ‘ think, if a Remedy be not suddenly applied, what
 ‘ will be the Issue of these Things: Wherefore,
 ‘ our humble Desires are renewed to your Honours,
 ‘ That you would be pleased to give Authority to
 ‘ suppress all such from public Preaching as have
 ‘ not duly been ordained, whereby their Gifts for
 ‘ the Ministry, and their Soundness in the Faith,
 ‘ might be evinced; as also separate Congregations,
 ‘ the very Nurseries of all damnable Heresies:
 ‘ That an Ordinance be made for some exemplary
 ‘ Punishment to be inflicted upon Hereticks and
 ‘ Schismatics; that your utter Dislike of them
 ‘ and their Proceedings may be manifest to all the
 ‘ World, which had been made long since to ap-
 ‘ pear by a well-settled Reformation, had not his
 ‘ Majesty denied his Consent to the Bill for the
 ‘ Assembly, so often presented unto him by both
 ‘ Houses, according to your own Declaration, in
 ‘ answer to his Majesty, of the twenty-second of
 ‘ *October* 1642.

‘ And that all godly and orthodox Ministers, who
 ‘ labour in God’s Husbandry, may have Encou-
 ‘ ragement; and some Course be thought upon in
 ‘ your Wisdoms for their competent Maintenance,
 ‘ the Lord having so ordained, that they who
 ‘ preach the Gospel should live of the Gospel: So
 ‘ shall Religion flourish, the Wrath of God be
 ‘ averted, the Lips of the Just shall bless you, and
 ‘ a gracious Recompence of Reward from God’s
 ‘ most bounteous Hand shall surely wait upon you.

Thirdly, ‘ And forasmuch as the Welfare and
 ‘ Safety of this Kingdom doth, next under God,
 ‘ in the Preservation of true Religion, depend upon
 ‘ the fundamental Constitutions of the same, and

An. 22, Car. 1.

1646.

December.

‘ the Maintenance thereof; which fundamental
 ‘ Constitutions do most eminently appear in the
 ‘ Calling of that great Council the Parliament,
 ‘ and in electing Members for the same, wherein
 ‘ most conspicuously doth shine the Liberty and
 ‘ Property of the Subject: Here we can do no less
 ‘ than make it our hearty Prayer unto your Ho-
 ‘ nours, that you would be pleased to give strict
 ‘ Orders that Writs for a free Election, without
 ‘ Delay, be issued to all Places where Knights and
 ‘ Burgeffes for Parliament are yet to be chosen;
 ‘ and to provide that the People be not prejudiced
 ‘ in their free Choice, either by Force, Fear, Let-
 ‘ ters, Promises, or Solicitations of any; that the
 ‘ Subjects Liberties being defended and preserved,
 ‘ they may be encouraged and better enabled to
 ‘ serve your Honours and the Public.

Fourthly, ‘ And here we do not omit to hint
 ‘ unto your Honours the exorbitant Practices of
 ‘ many Committees and Committee-Men, who
 ‘ have such an Influence by means of their Autho-
 ‘ rity upon the People, they being at their Wills
 ‘ and in their Power to do them a Displeasure,
 ‘ that they dare not do otherwise than obey their
 ‘ unlawful Commands, without the inevitable Ha-
 ‘ zard of their Peace and Safety; through which
 ‘ Means Tyranny is exercised by one Fellow Sub-
 ‘ ject upon another, and Justice and Equity can-
 ‘ not enter. The Cries of all Sorts of People
 ‘ throughout the Land are grown so loud against
 ‘ the People of this Vocation and Profession, by
 ‘ reason of those grievous Oppressions that are con-
 ‘ tinually acted by them, that, in Tendernefs of
 ‘ Affection towards our Brethren, not being igno-
 ‘ rant or insensible of our own Sufferings in this
 ‘ Kind, and the great Dishonour accruing to the
 ‘ Parliament thereby, we cannot but be earn-
 ‘ est Suitors to your Mercy and Justice, that such
 ‘ may be dissolved.

Fifthly, ‘ The God of your Salvation, through
 ‘ the precious Help of his willing People, hath now
 ‘ expelled your Adversaries; and brought us safe
 ‘ through

' through the Red Sea of our Fears and Troubles, An. 12. Car. 2.
 ' to the Borders of that sweet *Canaan* of our desired 1646.
 ' Peace; and what now remains, most worthy
 ' Patriots, but that, in Thankfulness to God for his
 ' Mercy, and in grateful Acknowledgment of the
 ' loving Affections of his People in their so chear-
 ' ful Adventures in the Cause of God and the
 ' Kingdom, the heavy Yokes should be loosed
 ' to which they so readily did submit their Necks;
 ' nay, desired you to put upon them for your Secu-
 ' rity and the Kingdom's Weal: This there-
 ' fore is our humble Request that, the Enemy be-
 ' ing now subdued, the Armies may be disbanded;
 ' that the so much complained of Oppressions by
 ' their Means may be redressed; the Taxes for their
 ' Support may be released; and the Militia of the
 ' Kingdom settled: So shall you make it appear, to
 ' the Shame of slanderous Tongues, that this War
 ' hath not been intended as a Trade, but as a
 ' Means of regaining our lost Peace; and that you
 ' had no other Design in Prosecution of the same,
 ' than the securing of our Religion, Laws, and Li-
 ' berties, so desperately invaded by tyrannical Op-
 ' pressors; and shall endear the Affections of this
 ' People to you for your future Assistance, when,
 ' in a Time of Need, their Help shall be required,
 ' and they will become yours and the Kingdom's
 ' Servants for ever.

Sixthly, ' And now since God hath holpen us
 ' in our Distress, it will not be an unacceptable
 ' Service unto him, that we should put forth the
 ' Bowels of our Compassions to our distressed Bre-
 ' thren, as being the most kindly Fruits of God's
 ' merciful dealing with ourselves; and what an
 ' Object is *Ireland* for this Purpose? Most Noble
 ' Senators, since God hath shewn you his Mercy
 ' in subduing your Enemies here, let us be your
 ' earnest Petitioners for gasping dying *Ireland*, in
 ' this their great Extremity; for in Thoughts of
 ' their Calamities our Bowels are rolled within us;
 ' never did their Necessities call louder to your
 ' Mercy than now they do.

Seventh.

An. 22. Car. 1.

1646.

December.

‘ *Seventhly*, ‘ And certainly one singular Means
 ‘ to procure so great a Blessing, must needs be the
 ‘ firm and established Union of these Kingdoms
 ‘ according to our Covenant: In which Respect
 ‘ we cannot but, with sorrowful and perplexed
 ‘ Hearts, resent the hellish Devices of malignant,
 ‘ factious, and seditious Spirits, who make it their
 ‘ daily Practice, and surely would rejoice in it as
 ‘ their Master-piece, if they could once effect to
 ‘ divide these Kingdoms of *England* and *Scotland*,
 ‘ so firmly conjoined by a blessed, and, we hope,
 ‘ everlasting Union: Therefore we return again
 ‘ unto your Justice, that, according to our Cove-
 ‘ nant, condign Punishment may be inflicted upon
 ‘ such Firebrands, the greatest Enemies to Church
 ‘ and State; and that your Honours would readily
 ‘ apply all tenderest Care in your most faithful and
 ‘ diligent Endeavours for the Preservation of that
 ‘ happy Union by solemn League of these two
 ‘ Kingdoms, which is so much the Envy of our
 ‘ Enemies, the Strength and Glory of *Great Bri-*
 ‘ *tain*, and the greatest Security of our Religion,
 ‘ Peace, and Prosperity.

‘ *Eighthly*, ‘ And whereas the Hand of the Al-
 ‘ mighty hath so eminently appeared on your Side,
 ‘ that your Enemies are fallen under you, and hath
 ‘ given the Troublers of yours and the Kingdom’s
 ‘ Peace into your Hands; we do beseech that,
 ‘ according to the several Qualities of their Delin-
 ‘ quencies, your Justice may go forth against them
 ‘ with speedy Execution. And withall, that now
 ‘ you would be so mindful of your great Engage-
 ‘ ments, in the full and effectual Discharge of the
 ‘ Kingdom’s Debts, (who have shewed themselves
 ‘ such free Contributors, and also have been such
 ‘ extreme Sufferers for your Assistance in the King-
 ‘ dom’s Cause) as to provide that a faithful Im-
 ‘ provement of the Estates of these notorious Ene-
 ‘ mies of the Kingdom may be made, by a right
 ‘ Conversion of them unto public Use: And that
 ‘ those Streams of Wealth, which daily are flowing
 ‘ in by Compositions of Delinquents, may, accord-
 ‘ ing

ing to your solemn Promises, run in the right Channel; and return back into that Ocean whence, at your Desire, they did so freely issue forth. An. 22. Car. I.
1646.

December.

And whereas, in your Wisdoms, your Honours have made so good Provision that Men of Estates and Fortunes in the World may be repaid their Disbursements upon the Loan of so much more, as by your Ordinance for the Sale of Bishop's Lands doth more fully appear; we do intreat that you would please to take into your further Consideration those well-affected Persons, who have so freely and fully laid out themselves, as that they have not been able to make that Addition required in the aforesaid Ordinance; but must now be forced, for the Relief of their great Necessities, to sell, at great Loss, their very Principal lent upon the Public Faith, to their great Discouragement and Discontent; which we fear may prove no small Impediment to your future Assistance, if Need thereof be, unless Remedy herein, shall, by your Honours, be provided.

Ninthly, And for Protections, we need say little, so much having been said before in our Remonstrance, that we hope your Honours are sensible of the Sufferings of those Creditors who have great Sums of Money owing by some of your Members; and of the Injustice of those among them, that have Estates to satisfy their Engagements, yet will not, but stand upon their Privilege; as there needs no other Argument to move your Honours to do us Justice in this Behalf.

Tenthly, And because, also, we are obliged to endeavour the Preservation of the Liberties of the

All the latter End of this Year the Commons had spent many Days in settling Compositions, and granting Pardons to those unhappy Persons called *Delinquents*, the Amount of all which several Sums so raised, must have been very great: And against those who had no visible Estates, they passed a very severe Vote, 'That such Delinquents should be disabled from following any Practice in the Law, Common or Civil; or from holding or exercising any Office in the Church or Commonwealth, without the Consent of both Houses of Parliament.'

AN. 22. CAR. 1.

1646.

December.

‘ the Kingdom ; therefore, that we may perform
 ‘ our Engagements, as to God and you, so like-
 ‘ wise to the Subjects of the Kingdom, whose Suf-
 ‘ ferings in Matters that concern their Rights are
 ‘ our own ; we hold ourselves bound, in all Hu-
 ‘ militiy, to signify unto your Honours, that, con-
 ‘ trary to the Rights and Liberties of the Subjects,
 ‘ on *Friday* Evening, the fourth of this Month,
 ‘ there was an illegal Warrant signed by Sir *Wil-*
 ‘ *liam Strickland*, served upon three of our Fellow-
 ‘ Subjects, and Fellow-Citizens, by Name, *Pa-*
 ‘ *trick Bamford*, *Nicholas Widmerpoole*, *Valentine*
 ‘ *Fyge*, to be taken into Custody, and committed
 ‘ to a Serjeant of Arms ; which Thing was also
 ‘ done contrary to the Order of that Honourable
 ‘ House, as by some of the Committee themselves
 ‘ was acknowledged. Wherefore we do humbly
 ‘ pray, That the aforesaid Warrant, with the
 ‘ Manner of its issuing forth, may be taken into
 ‘ your serious Consideration, for the Vindication
 ‘ of the Honour of the Parliament, which is here-
 ‘ in so much concerned, and Maintenance of the
 ‘ Subjects Liberty ; and to make such Reparations
 ‘ to the Persons wronged, as may stand with Ju-
 ‘ stice, and in your Wisdoms shall seem fit.

‘ And now, renowned Worthies, we trust that,
 ‘ in your wonted Goodness, you will not entertain
 ‘ any Misconceptions of us for that we have en-
 ‘ deavoured to be a little more pathetick and pres-
 ‘ sing in our Phrase of Speech than heretofore :
 ‘ But that, in your Wisdoms, you will thoroughly
 ‘ weigh our Fears and Sorrows, with our pressing
 ‘ Burdens, which have even forced us, against
 ‘ our Wills, to these Expressions ; and that looking
 ‘ upon the sincere Affections of your Petitioners,
 ‘ you will please to make so benign an Interpreta-
 ‘ tion of what we have here represented, in the Ur-
 ‘ gency of our afflicted Spirits, as not to think we
 ‘ had the least Aim to reflect upon the Honour of
 ‘ this famous Parliament. But that the Sense of
 ‘ our Miseries, in our approaching Dangers, might
 ‘ stand more conspicuously before your Eyes ; and,

‘ as by the most forcible Argument we could think upon, effectually to move your Honours, the great Physicians of our Church and State, to apply your most seasonable and speedy Help. The Glory of God, the Safety of our Religion and Liberties, and the Kingdom’s Welfare, is that we level at in this our Undertaking. If through your favourable Acceptation of these our humble Addresses, we may obtain the Security of these, we have our utmost Aim ; and you shall be called the Repairers of the Breaches ; the Restorers of Paths to dwell in ; you shall raise Monuments of your eternal Praises ; the Churches of God shall call you blessed ; and you shall forever engage us not to think our Estates or Lives too dear to serve your Honours and the Public so long as we have Breath and Being.’

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.
December.

The Lords having read the foregoing Petition and Representation, ordered the Citizens to be call’d in again ; when the Earl of *Manchester* address’d himself to them in these Words :

Gentlemen,

‘ **T**HE Lords are so fully satisfied with the constant and real Expressions of the Fidelity and good Affections of the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, Common Council, and Citizens of the City of *London*, as they have commanded me to give hearty Thanks upon the whole Matter of the Petitions presented by you from the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, Common Council, and Citizens of the City of *London* ; and to let you know that they will take the Particulars of your Petitions into their speedy Consideration.’

After which their Lordships ordered the Petition and Representation, with their Answer, to be published by the City Printer. ^d

For which they receive the Thanks of both Houses.

The Speaker of the House of Commons also, by their Order, gave the Petitioners Thanks for their

^d Neither this Petition nor Representation being entered in the *Journals* they are copied from the Edition printed by Order of the House of Lords, by *Richard Cotes*,

236. *The Parliamentary HISTORY*

An. 22. Car. 1. their constant good Affections; and acquainted them, That having read their Petition and Representation annexed, they had appointed a very short Day to take them into Consideration. Accordingly,

1646.
December.

Dec. 22. A Motion being made, That this Petition from the City, and the Representation annex'd, should be taken into Consideration, in course as they lie, it was carried in the Affirmative by 156 Voices against 99: In pursuance of which we find that the Commons, afterwards, employ'd several Days upon this Subject; but nothing was done effectually therein; which was probably owing to the increasing Interest of the *Independent* Party in that House.

The Treaty concerning the Manner and Time of the Payment of the 400,000*l.* granted to the Scots Army.

The Treaty which had been long depending between the Commissioners of both Nations, about the Payment of the stipulated Sums of Money, to the Scots, for their Army's evacuating this Kingdom; and which had gone through great Alterations in both Houses, was at length fully settled, and signed by the *English* and *Scots* Commissioners: But, previously to the Execution thereof, the Commons had resolved, That after the Payment of the first 100,000*l.* to the Scots, their Army should not require or take any Money or Goods whatsoever from the Country; but pay for all such Provisions as they should receive.

These Articles, which are not printed in any of the *Collections* of the Times, stand thus in the *Journals* of both Houses.

ARTICLES of AGREEMENT *between Committees of Lords and Commons of the Parliament of England and Commissioners of the Parliament of Scotland, authorized thereunto by the Parliaments of each Kingdom respectively.*

I. ' **T**HAT 400,000*l.* be paid to the Kingdom of Scotland, in Manner hereafter express'd, ' for the Pay of their Army brought into the Kingdom of England for the Assistance of this Kingdom, ' and

and of their Forces that came into the Garrison of *Berwick*, by virtue of the Treaties between the two Kingdoms of the 29th of *November* 1643; and for due Recompence and full Satisfaction for all the Pains, Hazard, and Charges which they have undergone, and for whatsoever other Sums of Money or Recompence the Kingdom of *Scotland* can claim of the Kingdom of *England*, by virtue of the said Treaties.

An. 22. Car. 1.
1646.
December.

II. That the 200,000*l.* now ready, Part of the said 400,000*l.* shall be forthwith sent to the City of *York*, and shall there forthwith be told by the Treasurers in whose Custody the Money now is, or by such as they, or any two of them, shall appoint; and by such as shall be appointed by the Kingdom of *Scotland*, or by Sir *Adam Hepburn*, Treasurer of the *Scots* Army, or his Deputies, except 12,000*l.* Part thereof, which, at the Desire of the *Scots* Commissioners, is reserved to be paid here in *London*, and is accepted for so much of the first 100,000*l.* appointed to be paid at *Northallerton*; the which 12,000*l.* the said *Scots* Commissioners have Power to receive here in Manner as aforesaid, and to discharge the Kingdom of *England* thereof.

III. That the first 100,000*l.* except the Sum of 12,000*l.* before excepted, shall be told within six Days after the Arrival of the said Money at *York*, and the second 100,000*l.* within six Days after that.

IV. That the Money, so told as aforesaid, shall be sealed up in the several Bags, each to contain 100*l.* by the Seal of both Parties appointed as aforesaid to tell the same; and shall be forthwith put into Chests, 1000*l.* in each Chest; and the said Chests also sealed up by the aforesaid Persons appointed to tell the said Money.

V. That the said Persons appointed by the Kingdom of *Scotland* to tell the said Money shall continue with the same, to see that there shall be

238 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 22. Car. 1.
1646.

December.

‘ no Alteration made thereof after the Telling and
‘ Sealing the same as aforesaid.

VI. ‘ That within five Days after the 200,000*l.*
‘ is told at *York*, 100,000*l.* thereof shall be paid
‘ at *Northallerton* to Sir *Adam Hepburne* or his
‘ Deputies, or to such others as by the Kingdom
‘ of *Scotland* shall be appointed to receive the same,
‘ except only the 12,000*l.* reserved to be paid in
‘ *London* as aforesaid.

VII. ‘ That the Delivery of 100 Chests of Mo-
‘ ney, or of 1000 Bags, so as aforesaid sealed up,
‘ to the Persons mentioned in the foregoing Ar-
‘ ticle, except before excepted, shall be, and be
‘ accounted, the Payment of the said 100,000*l.*
‘ and Acquittances are thereupon to be given for
‘ the same to the said Treasurers for their Dis-
‘ charge, by Sir *Adam Hepburne*, or his Deputies,
‘ or any other authorized by the Kingdom of *Scot-*
‘ *land*.

VIII. ‘ That when the said 100,000*l.* except
‘ before excepted, is come to *Topcliffe* in the
‘ County of *York*, and before it pass any further
‘ towards *Northallerton* for the Payment of the
‘ same as aforesaid, the Kingdom of *Scotland* shall
‘ there deliver Hostages; Sir *Walter Riddell*, Knt.
‘ *George Hume*, of *Wedderburn*, Esq; Sir *Patrick*
‘ *Mackegie*, Knt. *Alexander Strachan*, of *Thorne-*
‘ *ton*, Esq; Sir *James Wood*, Knt. Sir *James Lumf-*
‘ *den*, younger, Knt. Sir *Arthur Forbes*, Knt.
‘ *Thomas Craig*, of *Rickarton*, Esq; Sir *William*
‘ *Ker*, Knt. *Robert Douglas*, of *Tilly-Whitley*, Esq;
‘ Col. *John Welden*; *John Lesley*, of *Pitcaple*, Esq;
‘ or any six of them, for Assurance that the *Scots*
‘ shall quit all their Quarters, Passes, and Garri-
‘ sons on the South Side *Tyne*; and shall deliver up
‘ to such Forces as both Houses of the Parliament
‘ of *England*, or such as shall be by them autho-
‘ rized, shall appoint, all the aforesaid Places, to-
‘ gether with all the Ordnance, Arms, and Am-
‘ munition belonging to the Kingdom of *England*,
‘ within ten Days after the first 100,000*l.* shall be
‘ paid

‘ paid as aforesaid; and for Assurance that they shall
 ‘ deliver up the Town of *Newcastle*, with the High
 ‘ Castle in the same; the Castle of *Tinmouth*, with
 ‘ all the Works belonging thereunto; the *Spanish*
 ‘ Works, the *Shields-Field* Fort, and all other
 ‘ Forts and Works on the North Side *Tyne*, together
 ‘ with all Ordnance, Arms, and Ammunition there-
 ‘ in, belonging to the Kingdom of *England*, unto
 ‘ such Forces or Persons as shall be appointed by
 ‘ both Houses of the Parliament of *England*, or by
 ‘ any by them thereunto authorized, to receive the
 ‘ same, when and at such Time as Notice is given
 ‘ that the second 100,000*l.* is come to the North
 ‘ of the River of *Tees*, as is hereafter expressed in
 ‘ the tenth Article.

An. 22. Car. I.
 1646.
 December.

IX. ‘ That within one Day after the Perform-
 ‘ ance of all the Particulars mentioned in the
 ‘ said former Article, the said Hostages of the
 ‘ Kingdom of *Scotland* shall be again re-delivered
 ‘ unto them, within half a Mile of the Works on
 ‘ the North Side of *Newcastle*.

X. ‘ That after the Garrisons of *Hartlepool*,
 ‘ *Stockton*, *Durham*, and all other Garrisons, Quar-
 ‘ ters, and Passes on the South Side of *Tyne*, are
 ‘ quitted by the *Scots* Army and Forces; and, af-
 ‘ ter that all the said Army and Forces are remo-
 ‘ ved to the North Side of *Tyne*, which is to be
 ‘ done in ten Days after the Payment of the first
 ‘ 100,000*l.* as aforesaid, that then the other
 ‘ 100,000*l.* shall be brought to the North Side of
 ‘ the River *Tees*.

XI. ‘ That the second 100,000*l.* being come
 ‘ to the North Side of the said River of *Tees*, upon
 ‘ Notice thereof given to the General or Com-
 ‘ mander in Chief of the *Scots* Army, in Writing,
 ‘ from him that commands the Convoy, they shall
 ‘ deliver up the Town of *Newcastle*, with the High
 ‘ Castle in the same; the Castle of *Tinmouth*, with
 ‘ all the Works belonging thereunto; the *Spanish*
 ‘ Works, the *Shields-Field* Fort, and all other Forts
 ‘ and Works on the North Side *Tyne*, other than
 ‘ is

240 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 22. Car. I. 1646.

December.

‘ is provided for in the 15th Article, together with
‘ all Ordnance, Arms, and Ammunition therein,
‘ belonging to the Kingdom of *England*, unto such
‘ Forces or Persons as shall be appointed by both
‘ Houses of the Parliament of *England*, or by any
‘ by them thereunto authorized to receive the same.

XII. ‘ That for the more speedy Delivery and
‘ Receiving the said Towns of *Newcastle* and Castle
‘ of *Tinmouth*, the said Forces that are to be put
‘ into those Garrisons are to march before the said
‘ Money and Convoy.

XIII. ‘ That when the *Scots* Army and Forces
‘ are marching out of, and the *English* Forces are
‘ entering into, *Newcastle* and *Tinmouth* Castle;
‘ and that there be 500 of the Garrison appointed
‘ by both Houses of Parliament entered into *New-*
‘ *castle*, and not above 500 of the *Scots* Forces re-
‘ maining therein; that then Sir *William Selby*, of
‘ *Berwick* in the County of *Northumberland*, Knt.
‘ *Ralph Delaval*, of *Seaton Delaval* in the County
‘ of *Northumberland*, Esq; Sir *Edward Loftus*, of
‘ *Middleham* in the County of *York*, Viscount *Ely*
‘ [in the Kingdom of *Ireland*]; Sir *Thomas Trollope*,
‘ in the County of *Lincoln*, Bart. *Henry Mildmay*,
‘ of *Graces* in the County of *Essex*, Esq; Sir *Rich-*
‘ *ard Erle*, of *Stragglethorpe* in the County of *Lin-*
‘ *coln*, Bart. Sir *Ralph Hare*, of the County of *Nor-*
‘ *folk*, Bart. and Sir *Lionel Tolmache*, of the Coun-
‘ of *Suffolk*, Bart. or any six of them, shall be given
‘ Hostages by the Kingdom of *England* to the
‘ Kingdom of *Scotland*, for Assurance that the latter
‘ 100,000*l.* of the 200,000*l.* shall be paid unto the
‘ Kingdom of *Scotland*, on the North Side of the
‘ Works of *Newcastle*, within a Mile of the said
‘ Works, within six Days after the Delivery of
‘ *Newcastle*, *Tinmouth* Castle, and Places aforesaid,
‘ in Manner aforesaid, to such Persons, and in such
‘ Manner, as is expressed in the sixth and seventh
‘ Articles for the Payment of the first 100,000*l.*
‘ And Acquittances are thereupon to be given, as
‘ in the said seventh Article is expressed.

XIV. ‘ That

XIV. ' That upon the Delivery of the said latter An. 22. Car. I.
 ' 100,000*l.* of the 200,000*l.* the Hostages of the 1646.
 ' Kingdom of *England* are forthwith to be re-delivered. December,

XV. ' That upon the Coming of the latter
 ' 100,000*l.* out of *Newcastle*, Hostages, as in the
 ' eighth Article, shall be delivered to the Kingdom
 ' of *England*, by the Kingdom of *Scotland*, for As-
 ' surance that all the *Scots* Armies and Forces shall
 ' march out of the Kingdom of *England* within ten
 ' Days after the Payment of the latter 100,000*l.*
 ' That they will permit and suffer that the Fortifica-
 ' tions of *Berwick* and *Carlisle* may be slighted, ac-
 ' cording to the Large Treaty and Treaty for *Ber-*
 ' *wick*, which shall accordingly be slighted within
 ' ten Days after Payment of the last 100,000*l.* And
 ' that the said Towns be quitted; and all Ord-
 ' nance, Arms and Ammunition therein, belonging
 ' to the Kingdom of *England* be, within the said ten
 ' Days, delivered unto such Persons as shall be ap-
 ' pointed by both Houses of the Parliament of *En-*
 ' *gland*, or such as shall be by them, or any autho-
 ' rized by them for that Purpose, appointed to re-
 ' ceive the same; who also are appointed to cause
 ' and see *Berwick* and *Carlisle* slighted in Manner as
 ' aforesaid; and are hereby authorized to call in
 ' the Aid of the Country for the doing thereof, as
 ' they shall see Cause; and likewise the Parliament
 ' of *Scotland*, or any by them authorized, are to
 ' appoint such Persons as they shall think fit to see
 ' this performed.

XVI. ' That within four Days after the *Scots*
 ' Army and Forces shall be marched out of the
 ' Kingdom of *England*, and the said Garrisons of
 ' *Berwick* and *Carlisle* quitted as aforesaid, the Ho-
 ' stages of the Kingdom of *Scotland* shall be re-delivered unto them.

XVII. ' That the Public Faith of the Kingdom
 ' of *England* is hereby given for the Payment of
 ' the latter 200,000*l.* as is hereafter expressed:
 ' That for the better Satisfaction and Security of
 ' some private Persons of the Kingdom of *Scotland*,

An. 22. Car. 1.
1646.

December.

‘ who have advanced great Sums of Money, Pro-
 ‘ visions, and other Necessaries during these Trou-
 ‘ bles, the Sum of 50,000*l.* shall be paid to the said
 ‘ Persons, whose Names are expressed in an Ordinance of both Houses for that Effect, at twelve
 ‘ Months after the Payment of the last 100,000*l.*
 ‘ of the first 200,000*l.* out of the Receipts of such
 ‘ Monies as shall come in and be received by Fines
 ‘ and Compositions made, and to be made, with
 ‘ Papists and Delinquents, or by Sale of Papists
 ‘ and Delinquents Estates, according to the said
 ‘ Ordinance for that Effect: And that other
 ‘ 50,000*l.* shall also be paid at the said twelve
 ‘ Months after the Payment of the last 100,000*l.*
 ‘ of the first 200,000*l.* That the last 100,000*l.* of
 ‘ the 400,000*l.* shall be paid within twelve Months
 ‘ after that, viz. two Years after the Payment of
 ‘ the last 100,000*l.* of the first 200,000*l.* and that
 ‘ out of such Ways and Means as both Houses of
 ‘ Parliament shall think fit.’

*Signed at Derby-House in Westminster, the 23^d
 Day of December 1646.*

NORTHUMBERLAND,	LOUDON,
WARWICK,	LAUDERDALE,
MANCHESTER,	CHARLES ERSKINE,
WILLIAM WALLER,	HUGH KENNEDY,
W. PIEREPOINT,	ROBERT BARCLAY.
GILBERT GERRARD,	
W. ARMYN,	
ARTHUR HESILRIG,	
OLIVER CROMWELL,	
PH. STAPYLTON,	
RO. WALLOPP,	
JOHN CREW,	
OL. ST. JOHN.	

The Reader may observe that there is not one Word about delivering up the Person of the King in all the foregoing Articles: But we find that, on the very same Day they were finally concluded, the Lords went into a Debate on the following Questions:

• Whether

1. 'Whether there shall be a Committee appointed to consider of some Declaration to be offered to the House, concerning the King's Coming to one of his Houses? An. 22. Car. 1.
1646.
December.

2. 'Whether they should peruse a former Vote made on the 21st of *October* last?'^b They were both carried in the Affirmative, and a Committee of seven Lords were ordered accordingly.

The same Day also the said Committee drew up the following Resolution, which, after reading, was agreed to:

'That the King, being now in *England*, it is resolved by the Lords in Parliament assembled, That he may come to *Newmarket*, there to remain with such Attendants about him as both Houses of Parliament shall appoint; with respect had to the Safety and Preservation of his Person in the Preservation and Defence of the true Religion and Liberties of the Kingdom: And then the two Kingdoms are mutually to consider and determine what is necessary to the common Peace; reserving to each their Rights of Exercise of their respective Interests in providing for their respective Securities.'

The Lords resolve that the King may come to Newmarket.

Mr. *Rushworth* writes, 'That the Parliament of *Scotland* had for some Time been sitting, and being, on the 16th of *December*, turned into a Grand Committee, to consider touching the Disposal of his Majesty's Person, it was resolved, That present Instructions should be sent to their Commissioners to press his Majesty's coming to *London* with Honour, Safety, and Freedom; and that they should declare their Resolutions to maintain Monarchical Government in his Majesty's Person and Posterity, and his just Title to the Crown of *England*.'—He adds, 'That these Resolutions gave the King's Friends there great Hopes, but the next Day all was dashed again; for then the following Warning was presented to the Parliament from the Commission of the Kirk.'

Q 2

A

^b See this Vote on the Day mentioned, p. 142.

An. 22. Car. 1. *A SOLEMN and SEASONABLE WARNING to all Estates and Degrees of Persons throughout the Land, by the Commissioners of the General Assembly.*
 1646.
 December.

Edinburgh, Dec. 17, 1646.

But the Commissioners of the General Assembly issuing out a Warning to that Nation,

THE Conscience of our Duty, and of the great Trust reposed in us, suffereth us not to be silent, nor to connive at the present Dangers which may justly be apprehended and expected from the Enemies of this Cause and Covenant; who although they cannot, in this Conjunction of Time, appear in the same Manner as formerly they have done, yet, having retained the same Principles, (while they seem to lay aside their former Practices) do in a more covert and dangerous Way still drive at their own Ends: And as Satan is neither sleeping nor idle, though he appear not always as a roaring Lion; so these who are inspired and acted by him, have their Wheels still moving, tho' some Times they make no great Noise. Wherefore, that we may truly and faithfully contribute what is incumbent on us, for preventing or removing any Occasions of new Troubles or Differences between the King and his People, in both or either of these united Kingdoms, or between the Kingdoms themselves; and lest the Church of Christ, and the true Reformed Religion be again tossed with another, and perhaps a greater, Tempest in the Depth, after we seemed to be near the Harbour, we have found it not only competent to our Place and Calling, but necessary for us (according to former laudable Precedents both old and late) to emit this new seasonable Warning to the People of God in this Land, and to all Estates and Degrees of Men therein; whom we exhort, That first, and above all Things, they apply their Thoughts to make Peace with God; to take Notice of the remaining and renewed Tokens of Divine Displeasure against the Land; to tremble at the Remembrance of former, and Appearances of future Judgments; to lament after the Lord

to

' to lye low before the Throne of Grace; to cry An. 22. Car. I.
 ' mightily to Heaven for dispelling that Cloud of 1646.
 ' Sin which separateth between our God and us; December.
 ' and for turning away that Cloud of Wrath which
 ' hangeth over our Heads. There is Cause to be
 ' humbled and to repent, as for all our Iniquities,
 ' so for the too little Assistance which hath been
 ' given to such as have borne the heaviest Burden,
 ' and suffered most in this Cause; and for the too
 ' much Compliance with, and Indulgence to many
 ' who have been active in, the late execrable Re-
 ' bellion. We know that none can reach the
 ' Perfection of their Duty, neither will the Lord
 ' reckon with his People according to his Justice,
 ' but spare them who walk in the Integrity of
 ' their Spirits, as a Man spareth his own Son; so
 ' that they may rejoice in his Mercy, notwith-
 ' standing of their Short-comings, wherein they do
 ' not allow themselves; but wilful Neglects are
 ' just Grounds of a great Controversy on the Lord's
 ' Part, and of deep Humiliation on ours: And we
 ' conceive the Failings of many are such, because
 ' the Word of the Lord is a Burden unto them;
 ' and though they walk in the Ways of their own
 ' Heart, yet they say they shall have Peace. We
 ' would have none that are thus guilty to count
 ' light of it, and say, *Is it not a little one?* Every
 ' Duty whereto we are obliged in the Covenant,
 ' is of great Consequence, and Breaches even in
 ' smaller Things prove Inlets unto more grievous
 ' Revoltings.

' When we consider how many, who were once
 ' open Opposers or secret Underminers, being re-
 ' ceived to the Covenant, yet remain disaffected
 ' to the Ends of the same, we cannot but think
 ' we walk in the Midst of Snares, and that Myste-
 ' ries of Iniquity work amongst us, which may
 ' produce most sad and lamentable Effects, unto
 ' the Prejudice of our Religion and Liberties.
 ' Therefore, because God hath no greater Quar-
 ' rel against a Nation than that of a broken Cove-
 ' nant; let all who fear an Oath remember the

An. 22. Car. 1.

1646.

December,

‘ Vows of God which are upon them, watch and
 ‘ pray, and take good heed that they be not cheat-
 ‘ ed nor charmed into a Violation of all, or any,
 ‘ of the Articles of that Sacred and Solemn League
 ‘ and Covenant: And let those especially be obser-
 ‘ ved and avoided, who do, or shall, endeavour a
 ‘ Division and Breach between the Kingdoms, or
 ‘ the making of any Factions or Parties, contrary
 ‘ to the Covenant, under pretence of preserving
 ‘ the King and his Authority whilst they do not
 ‘ constantly and sincerely prosecute and press our
 ‘ frequent Desires of his subscribing the League
 ‘ and Covenant, and giving Satisfaction in all
 ‘ Things to the just Desires of both Kingdoms;
 ‘ which underhand Dealing can prove nothing else
 ‘ but an abusing of his Majesty for Men’s own
 ‘ Designs. We wish that none suffer themselves
 ‘ to be deceived by any false Glosses of the Cove-
 ‘ nant, under which some may possibly urge the
 ‘ keeping of it, so as to draw us into a certain
 ‘ Breach thereof; and press the Defence of the
 ‘ King’s Authority and of Religion, to engage us in
 ‘ those Ways that would tend to the Ruin of both.
 ‘ We are not now to press the Want of full Satis-
 ‘ faction in the much-desired Work of Uniformity,
 ‘ as the Ground of a Breach between the two
 ‘ Nations; though we still conceive this Nation
 ‘ will never be wanting to prosecute that Work to
 ‘ the utmost of their Power in all lawful Ways,
 ‘ according to the League and Covenant.

‘ These Kingdoms, after many fervent Suppli-
 ‘ cations and faithful Endeavours of all the Lovers
 ‘ of Truth and Peace, have been happily united
 ‘ in a League and Covenant, which to this Day
 ‘ hath been kept inviolably, notwithstanding of all
 ‘ the Opposition of open Enemies, and plotting
 ‘ of secret Underminers; and we are confident that
 ‘ none but such as have Hearts full of Atheism and
 ‘ Treachery, will attempt the Violation thereof,
 ‘ in whole or in part; and that if any shall do the
 ‘ same, they shall expose themselves to the Curse of
 ‘ Almighty God; who will be avenged upon all
 ‘ that

‘ that swear falsely by his Name. We know that
 ‘ Men of perverse Minds, wanting the Fear of
 ‘ God, and measuring all Things by their own
 ‘ Ends, may conceive of it as alterable, or at least
 ‘ that all the Clauses and Heads thereof are not so
 ‘ to be stuck upon but that some one or more may
 ‘ be dispensed with upon Civil Advantages : But
 ‘ *we have not so learned Christ* or his Word : Both
 ‘ Nations have covenanted with God, and each of
 ‘ them with another, in Things most lawful and
 ‘ necessary for the Preservation and Good of both,
 ‘ without any Limitation of Time ; and therefore
 ‘ we and our Posterity are obliged, before God, un-
 ‘ to the Observation thereof as long as the Sun and
 ‘ Moon shall endure. The Sense of these Things
 ‘ ought to be so deeply engraven upon the Hearts
 ‘ of all that are in Trust, that as they should, from
 ‘ their Souls, abhor every Thought of a Breach
 ‘ with *England* ; so should they carefully and
 ‘ wisely study to avoid every Thing that may prove
 ‘ a Snare and Temptation unto the same. Amongst
 ‘ other Things, if his Majesty shall have Thoughts
 ‘ of coming to this Kingdom at this Time, he not
 ‘ having as yet subscribed the League and Cove-
 ‘ nant, nor satisfied the lawful Desires of his loyal
 ‘ Subjects in both Nations, we have just Cause to
 ‘ fear that the Consequences of it may be very
 ‘ dangerous, both to his Majesty and these King-
 ‘ doms ; which therefore we desire may be timely
 ‘ prevented.

An. 22. Car. I.
 1646.
 December.

‘ For so long as his Majesty doth not approve in
 ‘ his Heart, and seal with his Hand, the League
 ‘ and Covenant, we cannot but apprehend that, ac-
 ‘ cording to his former Principles, he will walk in
 ‘ Opposition to the same, and study to draw us into
 ‘ the Violation thereof, and the Dissolution of the
 ‘ Union so happily begun between us and our Bre-
 ‘ thren ; to weaken the Confidence and Trust,
 ‘ and to entertain Jealousies, and make Divisions
 ‘ amongst ourselves : Neither is it possible but that
 ‘ our receiving him in this present Posture of Af-
 ‘ fairs,

An. 22. Car. 1.
1646.

December,

‘fairs, will confirm the Suspicions of the *English*
 ‘Nation of our underhand Dealing with him be-
 ‘fore his Coming to our Army; and make them,
 ‘not without Cause, to think that we purpose to
 ‘dispose of him without their Consent, and to
 ‘their Prejudice; which is contrary to the Profes-
 ‘sion of those that were in Trust at his Majesty’s
 ‘first Coming to the *Scots* Quarters, and over-
 ‘throweth all the Arguments that have been used
 ‘by the Commissioners of our Parliament, in their
 ‘Papers concerning the disposing of his Majesty’s
 ‘Person by the joint Advice and common Consent
 ‘of both Kingdoms, given in to both Houses of
 ‘Parliament in *England*: Nor do we see how we
 ‘can vindicate such a Practice from a direct Breach
 ‘of our Engagements to them by Covenant and
 ‘Treaty; which were not only to expose us unto
 ‘the Hazard of a bloody War, but to involve us
 ‘in the Guilt of Perjury. And what greater Dis-
 ‘service could be done to his Majesty and his Po-
 ‘sterity, than to give way to a Course that might
 ‘prove prejudicial to their Interest in the Crown
 ‘and Kingdom of *England*?

‘Our Carriage now for many Years past, in
 ‘the Midst of many Temptations, hath put us be-
 ‘yond all Suspicion in the Point of our Loyalty;
 ‘nor have we the least Thoughts of deserting the
 ‘King’s Majesty in a just and good Cause, being
 ‘bound by our Covenant, in our several Vocations,
 ‘to endeavour, with our Estates and Lives, to pre-
 ‘serve and defend his Majesty’s Person and Au-
 ‘thority, in the Defence and Preservation of the
 ‘true Religion and Liberties of the Kingdoms:
 ‘And so far as his Majesty shall be for these, we
 ‘really are, and we trust the rest of his Kingdoms
 ‘will be, for him; yet we cannot deny, but open-
 ‘ly avouch it, that if his Majesty (which the Lord
 ‘forbid) shall not satisfy the just Desires of his
 ‘People, both Nations stand mutually obliged,
 ‘by that inviolable Covenant, to pursue the Ends
 ‘therein express’d (which cannot be divided) against
 ‘all

‘ all Lets and Impediments whatsoever. It is An. 22. Car. I.
 ‘ therefore our most earnest and longing Desire, 1646.
 ‘ That as those who are in Trust with the public
 ‘ Affairs of this Kingdom have heretofore, with
 ‘ all Earnestness and Care, in all their Addresses,
 ‘ dealt with his Majesty with much Strength of
 ‘ Reason and Vehemency of Affection, so they
 ‘ will still deal with him, to grant his Royal Con-
 ‘ sent to the Desires of both Kingdoms, for set-
 ‘ tling Religion according to the Covenant, and
 ‘ for securing a perfect and durable Peace; (which
 ‘ we look upon as the only hopeful Means of pre-
 ‘ serving himself, his Crown, and Posterity) that
 ‘ his Majesty may return to his Houses of Parlia-
 ‘ ment in *England*, as a reconciled Prince to satis-
 ‘ fied Subjects; and that Acclamations of Joy
 ‘ may be heard in all his Majesty’s Dominions,
 ‘ and no Sound of War heard therein any more,
 ‘ except against the bloody *Irish* Rebels, under
 ‘ whose barbarous and cruel Persecution our dis-
 ‘ tressed Brethren, both in this Kingdom and in
 ‘ *Ireland*, are still groaning and crying out to us,
 ‘ and to our Brethren in *England*, *Be at Peace*
 ‘ among yourselves, and come to help us.’

This Thunder of the *Scots Vatican* struck such The Parliament
 a Terror into their Parliament, that they resolv- of Scotland re-
 ed, The King should be desired to grant the solve to secure
 whole Propositions; and, in case of Refusal, the the Kingdom
 Certifications given to his Majesty should be put without the
 into Execution, viz. To secure the Kingdom King, unless he
 without him; To declare that the Kingdom of sign the Cove-
Scotland cannot lawfully engage themselves for his nant.
 Majesty, he not taking the Covenant, satisfying
 as to Religion, &c. And that they would not ad-
 mit him to come into *Scotland*, unless he gave a
 satisfactory Answer to the whole Propositions lately
 presented to him in the Name of both Kingdoms.

The Earl of *Lanerk*, then lately appointed Se-
 cretary of State for *Scotland*, immediately gave the
 King

An. 22. Car. I. King Notice of these Transactions : In Consequence whereof,
1646.

December,

Dec. 24. The Speaker of the House of Lords acquainted them, That last Night a Letter was delivered to him which came from the King at *Newcastle*; the Tenor of which was as follows :

To the SPEAKER of the House of PEERS pro Tempore, to be communicated to the two Houses of Parliament at Westminster, and to the Commissioners of the Parliament of Scotland.

CHARLES R. *Newcastle, Dec. 20, 1646.*

His Majesty's
Message there-
upon.

HIS Majesty's Thoughts being always sincerely bent to the Peace of his Kingdoms, he was and will be ever desirous to take all Ways which might the most clearly make appear the Candor of his Intentions to his People. And to this End, could find no better Way than to propose a Personal free Debate with his two Houses of Parliament upon all the present Differences : Yet finding, very much against his Expectations, that this Offer was laid aside, his Majesty bent all his Thoughts to make his Intentions fully known by a particular Answer to the Propositions delivered to him in the Name of both Kingdoms, the 24th of July last. But the more he endeavoured it, he more plainly saw that any Answer he could make would be subject to Misinformations and Misconstructions ; which, upon his own Paraphrases and Explanations, he is most confident will give so good Satisfaction, as would doubtless cause a happy and lasting Peace. Lest, therefore, that good Intentions may produce ill Effects, his Majesty again proposeth, and desires again, to come to London, or any of his Houses thereabouts, upon the Public Faith, and Security of his two Houses of Parliament and the Scots Commissioners, that he shall be there with Honour, Freedom, and Safety ; where, by his personal Presence, he may not only raise a mutual Confidence betwixt him and his People ; but also have those

these Doubts cleared, and those Difficulties explained to him, without which he cannot (but with the aforesaid mischievous Inconveniencies) give a particular Answer to the Propositions; and with which he doubts not but so to manifest his real Intentions for the settling of Religion, the just Privileges of Parliament, with the Freedom and Property of the Subject, that it shall not be in the Power of wicked and malicious Men to hinder the establishing of that firm Peace which all honest Men desire. Assuring them, that as he will make no other Demands but such as he believes confidently to be just, and much conducing to the Tranquility of the People: So he will be most willing to condescend to them in whatsoever shall be really for their Good and Happiness. Not doubting likewise but you will also have a due Regard to maintain the just Power of the Crown, according to your many Protestations and Professions. For certainly, except King and People have reciprocal Care each of other, neither can be happy.

To conclude; it is your King who desires to be heard, (the which, if refused to a Subject by a King, he would be thought a Tyrant for it) and for that End which all Men profess to desire; wherefore his Majesty conjures you, as you desire to shew yourselves really what you profess, even as you are good Christians and Subjects, that you will accept this his Offer, which he is confident God will so bless, that it will be the readiest Means by which these Kingdoms may again become a Comfort to their Friends, and a Terror to their Enemies.

All the Notice that the Lords took of this Letter from the King, at this Time, was, That it should be communicated to the Commons by a Message.

Dec. 25. Both the Houses were alarmed with a Plot to steal away the Duke of York from St. James's; and several Witnesses, as well as the Duke himself, were examined about it. And it was this Day ordered, That a Letter be written to the Scots Army, to acquaint them with this

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.
December.

A Rumour of the King and the Duke of York's intending to make their Escape.

De-

An. 22. Car. 1. Design of conveying hence the Duke of York into
 1646.
 December. to *France*: And likewise to let them know of a Rumour spread abroad, that there is an Intent of the King's escaping into *France*, and to desire them to take Care to prevent any such Attempt. They also ordered, That the *Scots* Commissioners then upon their Return to *Scotland*, should be acquainted with these Apprehensions; and be desired to write down to their Committee and General at *Newcastle*, to take all possible Care to prevent the same.

The said Commissioners were now making Preparations for their Departure homewards, after receiving 12,000 *l.* out of the Money stipulated for *Scotland*, signing the late Treaty, and all the necessary Receipts for the whole Sum; the Form of which are preserved in both the *Journals*, but are unnecessary here.

Before the Departure of these Commissioners, they had, it seems, a Meeting with the *English* Committee for Religion, with whom they left the following pious Exhortation, read this Day, December 26, in the House of Lords; of which, since it is no where else printed, and is not a little singular, we subjoin this Copy from the *Journals*.

Dec. 25, 1646.

A Memorial presented to the Lords, by the Scots Commissioners on their Return home.

AS the other Reformed Churches have been much comforted with the hopeful Beginning, and some happy Progress, of a glorious Reformation of Religion in this Kingdom, so especially the Church of *Scotland* (which is so nearly concerned, and must needs partake more than other Churches of the Good and Evil which shall here take Root) hath greatly rejoiced and given Thanks to God for so great a Mercy: Nevertheless they are mindful of the Vows of God which are upon all the three Kingdoms, and all Sorts and Degrees of Persons therein, according to their several Places and Callings, to endeavour such a Reformation in the Kingdoms of *England* and *Ireland*, in Doctrine, Worship, Discipline, and

and Government, as is according to the Word
of God, and the Example of the best Reformed
Churches, and the nearest Uniformity in all these
between the Churches of God in the three King-
doms, together with the Extirpation of Heresy
and Schism, (lest, partaking of other Men's Sins,
they be endangered to receive of their Plagues)
which they did not oblige themselves to endea-
vour for a Time only, but constantly, till at-
tained; wherefore, in Pursuance of the Ends in
the Covenant, and in the Discharge of that Trust
which is committed to us, as likewise that some
of our Number, who are now to return into *Scot-*
land, may be able to give a farther Account to
the Parliament of that Kingdom, and to the Com-
missioners of the General Assembly at *Edinburgh*,
(both being now assembled) we have taken this
Occasion (without the least presuming to pre-
scribe any Ways, or to impose any Conditions)
to renew our most earnest Desires to the Ho-
nourable Houses of Parliament, and to the Re-
verend Assembly of Divines on their Part, that
all possible Care be taken, and greater Diligence
used to expedite the begun Reformation and
Unity; to supply and make up those Parts that
are yet wanting, and to put on and make effec-
tual what is already agreed upon; more particu-
larly we do desire that some effectual Course may
be provided by an Ordinance of Parliament, for
the taking of the Solemn League and Covenant,
in all Places of this Kingdom, and some con-
siderable Penalty or Punishment, such as the Ho-
nourable Houses in their Wisdom shall think fit,
may be appointed for such as refuse to take it,
much more for such as reproach it, or speak or
write against it; and that, by Authority of both
Houses of the Parliament of *England*, the Cove-
nant, Confession of Faith, Directory of Wor-
ship, Form of Church-Government, and Cate-
chizing, may be settled in *Ireland* as well as in
England, according to the first Article of the So-
lemn League and Covenant.

An. 22. Car. I.

1646.

December.

“ We

An. 22. Car. I.

1646.

December.

‘ We also desire that the Catechism, now before the Assembly of Divines, may be perfected so soon as is possible; that the Confession of Faith may be established by Authority of Parliament, and immediately thereafter sent into *Scotland*, as the Directory of Worship was, to be agreed unto by that Church and Kingdom, it being the chiefest Part of that Uniformity in Religion, which both Kingdoms stand bound by Covenant to endeavour; that Course may be taken for the better observing of the Directory of Worship, which is, in many Places of this Kingdom, either wholly, or in divers material Points, neglected.

‘ And because the singing of Psalms in Churches is a Part of the public Worship of God, we desire that the Paraphrase of the Psalms in Metre, as it is now examined, corrected, and approved by the Assembly of Divines here, and by the Commissioners of the General Assembly, may be likewise authorized and established by Ordinance of Parliament.

‘ We further desire, that special Care and speedy Course may be taken for the chusing of Ruling Elders, and the erecting of Classical Presbyteries and Congregational Elderships, throughout the whole Kingdom, these Things not being yet done, except in some Places; and that the Censures of Excommunication, and some other Things belonging to the Meeting, Constitution, and Power of Synods, National and Provincial, and of the subordinate Ecclesiastical Assemblies, contained in the Advice of the Reverend and Learned Assembly of Divines to both Houses of Parliament, and in our Remonstrance, dated *March* the 26th, 1646, delivered also to both Houses, (which Things are not yet settled by Ordinance of Parliament) may be taken into Consideration by the Honourable Houses, and their Resolution known thereupon; and that in the mean while, as well before as after the full Settlement of Church-Government, the Civil Power may, (according to the Word of God,

‘ and

' and the Example of godly Magistrates both of
 ' old and of late) proceed to the suppressing of
 ' scandalous Doctrines or Practices, which are de-
 ' structive to the Christian Faith, and the Power
 ' of Godliness, for the Peace of the Church; there
 ' being nothing more pernicious, both to Church
 ' and State, than the leaving of all Men to an Au-
 ' tonomy in Religion; for although it be far from
 ' our Thought to be so rigid as to desire, or, by
 ' Intention, Council, or Suggestion, to be acces-
 ' sary to, the troubling of pious and peaceable Men,
 ' who, through Scruple of Conscience, cannot in
 ' all Things come up to the Rule of Church-Gov-
 ' ernment; and as it never was, so it is not our
 ' Purpose to make any Impediment to the forbear-
 ' ing of such, so far as may agree with the Word
 ' of God, stand with the public Peace, and not
 ' be destructive to the Order and Government of
 ' the Church; yet we cannot chuse but discharge
 ' our Consciences in respect to the extream Neces-
 ' sity that some speedy and effectual Remedy may
 ' be provided against the separating and withdraw-
 ' ing from, or gathering Churches out of, the true
 ' Reformed Churches of this Nation, as if Mem-
 ' bership therein were unlawful; as likewise against
 ' the Preaching of such as have neither received
 ' Ordination, nor have been offered unto any or-
 ' derly Trial, and approved as Candidates or Pro-
 ' bationers for the Ministry; and above all a-
 ' gainst the Infection of pernicious Heresies, which
 ' multiply, grow, and spread daily more and more,
 ' to the great Dishonour of God; to the shaking
 ' the very Foundation of the Christian Faith; to
 ' the seducing and destroying of many poor Souls;
 ' to the hardening and strengthening of the com-
 ' mon Enemy; to the renting and dividing of
 ' Church and State; to the scandalizing of the Re-
 ' formed Churches; and to the disappointing of
 ' the Ends of the Covenant; so that it is now high
 ' Time to purge out (we cannot say a little Leaven,
 ' but) that which hath already leaven'd the greatest
 ' Part of the Lump, and may, if connived at,
 ' quickly

An. 22. Car. 1.

1646.

December.

An. 22. Car. 1.

1646.

December.

quickly leaven the whole; for which Cause, the Danger being so great and imminent, we cannot forget to mention the pressing and urgent Necessity of restraining effectually the unparalleled scandalous licentious printing and publishing of Books, both against Magistracy and Ministry; and particularly against the Authority of Parliament; against the Reverend Assembly of Divines; against the Covenant and the public National Reformation; against the Union of the Kingdoms; against the Church and Kingdom of Scotland and all the Reformed Churches; yea, against Jesus Christ himself, and the Sacred Word of God: All these Things lie sad and heavy upon our Spirits, yet we do not only pray, but trust, that God will so direct the Councils, and prosper the Endeavours of the Honourable Houses of Parliament, for the Reformation of Religion and the Peace of the Church, that their Care and Zeal may appear to be greater for the Things of Christ, than for their own Things; to the Glory of God and of his Son Jesus Christ, the only Head and King of his Church; to the strengthening of the Hearts and Hands of our Friends, and to the stopping of the Mouths of Adversaries.

The Particulars above expressed we offer to the Honourable and Reverend Committee to be presented to the Houses of Parliament, whose Resolution and Answer we earnestly desire, not only for our own Exoneration, that we may seasonably give an Account of our Proceedings to those who have entrusted us, and do expect a further Account from us; but also for the Comfort and Encouragement of the Church and Kingdom of Scotland, who will wait for and look upon the Progress of the so much desired Reformation and Uniformity in Religion, as the chiefest and most comfortable Recompence of all their Pains, Hazards, and Sufferings, and as the strongest and surest Bond for-keeping fast and firm the happy Union and Conjunction of the Kingdoms against
the

‘ the common Enemies ; which hath been, and An. 22. Car. I.
 ‘ shall be, our earnest Prayer and faithful Endeavour, being confident of our Brethren’s reciprocal Affection for continuing and strengthening of this Union, and for transmitting it to the Generations following. 1646.
 December.

By Command of the Commissioners for the Parliament of Scotland.

JOHN DONNE.

After the hearing this Piece of religious Advice read, the Lords proceeded to take into Consideration the King’s last Letter to them ; and the Question being put, Whether to go upon it then ? it passed in the Affirmative. Then the Letter was again read, and the House went into a Committee of the whole House to debate the King’s Desire of *coming with Safety, Freedom, and Honour* ; and the House being resumed, the Vote of the twenty-second Inst. was read, and the Question put, Whether the Vote made by this House, and sent down to the House of Commons, concerning the King’s Coming to one of his Houses, without any further Addition or Explanation, be a fit Answer to that Particular in the King’s Letter ? This was also resolved in the Affirmative.

Resolutions of the Lords, on reading the King’s last Letter.

Next, the House considered of another Desire in the King’s Letter, and that was, *of his being heard* ; and a Question being proposed, Whether, in Answer to this Particular in the King’s Letter, this House should return, That they will have no Treaty upon the Propositions ? it was resolved in the Affirmative. But a Memorandum is entered in the *Journals*, ‘ That, before the putting this last Question, the following Lords desired Leave to enter their Dissents if it was carried against their Votes ; which being granted, they did accordingly enter their Dissents, by subscribing of their Names.’ — But the Earl of *Lincoln*’s is the only Name subscribed to it.

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.

December.

A Conference
with the Com-
mons thereupon.

Dec. 29. These Votes and Resolutions being sent down to the Commons, soon after a Message came up from them to desire a Conference about them ; which being held, the Speaker of the Lords House made a Report of it to the Effect following :

‘ That the Commons said they had received a Vote from their Lordships, concerning the Disposing of the Person of the King : That they agreed to it with some Alterations and Additions : As for the Place, they think it fittest to be at *Holdenby*, because that House is more capacious and better fitted to receive him and his Company ; and as it is in the Heart of the Kingdom, safer and fitter for Addresses to his Majesty. As to the latter Part, they said, They had made some Alterations in it, because they could not undertake for any, but for the Kingdom of *England*.’

Then the Vote was read, as given in by the Commons, but the Lords thought fit to make some farther Alterations in it, according to the Sense of their House ; which being put to the Question was assented to, and Messengers sent to desire another Conference with the Commons about it.

We are not told, at this Time, what were the Additions and Alterations which the Commons had made to the Vote ; but we find that two more Conferences were held, by the Houses, on this Business, before they both agreed to the following Resolution : *viz.*

Both Houses resolve that the King shall be brought to *Holdenby*.

Dec. 31. ‘ Resolved, by the Lords and Commons assembled in Parliament, That *Holdenby-House*, in the County of *Northampton*, be the Place which the Houses think fit for the King to come unto ; there to remain with such Attendants about him, as both Houses of Parliament shall appoint ; with Respect had to the Safety and Preservation of his Person in the Preservation and Defence of the true Religion and Liberties of the Kingdoms, according to the Covenant. And when the King shall be at *Holdenby* as aforesaid, and the *Scots* Forces gone out of this Kingdom, the two

two Houses of Parliament declare, That then they will be ready, according to their former Declarations for preserving the peculiar Rights of the Kingdom of *England*, to join with the Kingdom of *Scotland* in employing their best Endeavours to procure his Majesty's Assent to the Propositions agreed on by both Kingdoms, and presented to the King at *Newcastle*; and to the Disposing of the Bishops Lands, according to the Ordinances already passed both Houses in that Behalf: And, in case the King shall not give his Assent thereunto, the two Houses are resolved still to maintain the happy Union already settled between the two Kingdoms, according to Treaties and the Covenant.

An. 22. Car. 1.
1646.
January.

Thus ended the Kalendar Year 1646.—The King still with the *Scots* Army at *Newcastle*, but soon to be delivered up to the Parliament; the Prince of *Wales* gone to his Mother in *France*; the Duke of *York*, on whom the Houses had thought fit to settle a Pension of 7500 *l.* a Year for his Support, a Sort of Prisoner, with his Brother *Henry* Duke of *Gloucester* and the Princess *Elizabeth*, at *St. James's* House, under the Care of the Earl of *Northumberland*, deputed Guardian to them all by the Parliament; who were now so fully possessed of all they could wish for, to make their own Terms with the King, that many of them thought the Business now done, for settling the Peace and Liberty of the Subject on the most solid Basis. How much they were mistaken will shortly appear, in the new Scene which opens now to our View, and will be the Subject of our next Years Enquiries.—But to return,

January 1. The Lords took into Consideration the Vote of Dec. 31, concerning the King's coming to *Holdenby*; and agreed that the said Vote should have a short Preamble to it, then, first to send it to the *Scots* Commissioners, and afterwards to the King. The additional Preamble was this:

R 2

We

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.

January.

‘ We your Majesty’s loyal Subjects, the Lords
‘ and Commons assembled in the Parliament of
‘ *England*, having agreed upon this following Vote,
‘ do humbly present it to your Majesty.’

Sir *Peter Killigrew* was ordered by both Houses
to carry this Vote to the King.

Jan. 2. The Parliament having appointed one
Lord and two Commoners, as Commissioners to go
along with the Money to see it paid to the *Scots*,
and take Notice that they performed every Article
agreed on for evacuating this Kingdom: In-
structions for these Commissioners were, this Day,
read by the Lords, and passed as they came up from
the Commons, without any Amendment. A Co-
py of them, as entered in both *Journals*, we give
as follows; observing that still there is not one
Word in them relating to the King’s Person.

INSTRUCTIONS for HENRY *Earl of STAMFORD*,
ROBERT GOODWIN and WILLIAM ASHURST,
Esqrs.

Instructions for
the Commission-
ers appointed to
attend the Pay-
ment of the Scots
Army.

‘ **W** Hereas there are certain Articles of A-
greement agreed upon between Com-
mittees of Lords and Commons of the Parlia-
ment of *England*, and Commissioners of the Parlia-
ment of *Scotland*, authorized thereunto by the
Parliament of each Kingdom respectively, con-
cerning the Payment of 400,000 *l.* to the King-
dom of *Scotland* for the Pay of their Army, and
for the marching of their said Army and Forces
out of this Kingdom; as is more at large ex-
pressed in the said Articles, a Copy whereof,
bearing Date the 23d of this last *December*, you
have herewith delivered unto You:

‘ For the better Performace of all the said Ar-
ticles, we have appointed you the said *Henry Earl*
‘ of *Stamford*, *Robert Goodwyn*, and *William Ash-*
‘ *urst*, or any two of you, to be a Committee upon
‘ the Place, to take Care that the said Articles may
‘ be duly and punctually performed according to
‘ the said Agreement.

‘ In

‘ In the whole Transaction of which Affair you, or any two of you, are to take especial Care that all Matters may be so accommodated with our Brethren upon their departing, as may prevent all Unkindness that might happen by any Misconstructions or Misapprehensions.

An. 22. Car. 1.
1646.
January.

‘ In the Prosecution of which Service,

I. ‘ You, or any two of you, are to make your Repair to the City of *York*; wherein you shall so order your Journey, as to be there by the 15th Day of this Instant *January*, at the farthest.

II. ‘ Whereas you are to receive, for Hostages from the Kingdom of *Scotland*, the Persons as expressed in the 8th and 15th Articles, you, or any two of you, are safely to keep the said Persons, for the Assurances in the said Articles mentioned; and for that Purpose you, or any two of you, are to require of Major-General *Skippon* a sufficient Guard, which he is to furnish you with for that Service; to which Guard, you, or any two of you, are to give Order that the said Hostages be treated with Civility and Respect; and then again you, or any two of you, shall re-deliver according to the Direction of the said Articles; And you, or any two of you, are also to take Care that the Hostages, to be given by the 15th Article, be either the same or of like Quality, at the least, with those mentioned in the 8th Article, who are to be guarded, treated, and re-delivered as is directed for the former.

III. ‘ When the Convoy that guards the Money is come to *Northallerton*, and the *Scots* Convoy come thither to receive it, you, or any two of you, shall take Care that they may not so meet and mingle together as that any Quarrel for Quarters, or any other Unkindness, grow between them.

IV. ‘ Whereas the Kingdom of *England* is to give to the Kingdom of *Scotland* the Hostages nominated in the 13th Article, and the said Hostages are appointed to be at *Tork* the 15th of *January* Instant, except Sir *William Selby* and Mr. *De-*

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.
January.

laual, who are to be at *Durham* the 24th of *January*, there to receive your, or any two of your, Directions for the said Service; you, or any two of you, are therefore, according to the Directions of the said Articles, to give the said Persons that are nominated in Hostage; and, upon their Redelivery, you, or any two of you, are to dismiss them to return at their Pleasure.

V. ' You, or any two of you, are to take Care that, after the Payment of the first 100,000*l.* the *Scots Army* may not require or take any Money or Goods from the Country whatsoever; but that they pay for all such Provisions as they shall receive from the Country, according to the Resolution of both Houses, of the 18th of *December*; a Copy whereof, as also of the *Scots Paper* concerning the same, is herewith delivered unto you. And you, or any two of you, are also to use all good Means in your Power to prevent the Spoil and Plunder of the Country in the Marching away of the Soldiers; and if any Money shall be required or taken contrary to the abovesaid Resolution, or any Plunder made, that shall come to your Knowledge, you, or any two of you, are to represent the same to the General of the *Scots Army*, or to the Committees or Commissioners of *Scotland* upon the Place; and, by all the Ways you can, to endeavour a Redress of the same.

VI. ' You, or any two of you, are diligently to consider the said Articles of Agreement; and take Care that all Things, therein agreed, may be cleared and punctually performed according to the said Agreement.

VII. ' You, or any two of you, are, from Time to Time, to give Notice to both Houses of your Proceedings herein; and to observe such farther Directions as shall be given you, or any two of you, by them, for the Transaction and Execution of all Things to be done by Virtue of the said Articles, according to which you are, in all Things, to govern yourselves in this Affair.

VIII,

VIII. ' When all Things in the said Articles
' agreed upon are performed and finished, except
' only the Payment of the latter 200,000 *l.* you
' are then to return, and give an Account of this
' Service to both Houses.

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.
January.

IX. ' Whereas the Houses are informed that
' the Sum of 3000 *l.* or thereabouts, is borrowed of
' the Town of *Newcastle*, by the General and
' Officers of the *Scots* Army and Forces, or some of
' them, upon the Credit of the Monies to be now
' paid by the Kingdom of *England* to our Brethren
' of *Scotland*; you, or any two of you, are to use
' your best Endeavours that the said 3000 *l.* or
' other Sum so borrowed, may be repaid out of the
' Monies to be now paid to our Brethren.'

A Letter from the *Scots* General, the Earl of *Leven*, was this Day read in the House of Lords, addressed to the Commissioners for *Scotland* residing in *London*.

May it please your Lordships,

' I Received your Letter by Express (but now by
' the last Post) wherein your Lordships seri-
' ously recommend to me such Things as do very
' highly concern the Peace and Safety of the
' Kingdoms; which I shall ever regard with so
' much Fidelity and Zeal, as nothing in my Power
' shall be wanting, with all Care and exact Dili-
' gence, to prevent all new Disturbances and far-
' ther Evils that might ensue if there were any
' Miscarriage at this Time.

A Letter from
General Leven,
relating to the
King's Person.

' The Bearer has also brought me a Letter from
' the Parliament, desiring me to take special Care
' of his Majesty's Person, that he remain in and
' go not from our Army during our Abode here; and
' that my former Orders and Proclamations be put
' in Execution for debarring, from Access to his
' Majesty's Person and coming to *Newcastle*, all
' such *English* and *Scots* Malignants as served
' against the Parliament, and no Permission to be
' here,

264 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 22. Car. 1.
1646.

January.

here, which I will likewise faithfully perform:
And what farther may be propounded to me for
the Good of this Cause, the Advancement of the
Service, and Discouragement of disaffected Per-
sons, flattering themselves in the Hopes of our
Division, shall be followed and observed with
that same Constancy of Affection wherewith I
have always endeavoured to approve myself faith-
ful to the Public, and to

Newcastle Dec. 28. 1646. *Your Lordships*

A most humble Servant,

LEVEN.

The Sense of the Lords upon this Letter was,
That the General gave good Testimonies of his
Faithfulness and Care to answer the Desires of
the Parliament; and they ordered a Committee to
draw up an Answer to the same.

Some Days now passed without any remarkable
Occurrence, except we mention a Letter or two
which came from Major-General *Skippon* and
others, appointed to convey and pay the Money
to the *Scots* at *York*, and their Proceedings so far;
which are not material enough to transcribe: But

A Committee ap-
pointed to receive
him from the
Scots Army.

This Day, *Jan. 6*, it was that the House of
Commons sent up to the Lords some Votes and
Resolutions of their House, of great Significancy.
The Question was first proposed in that House,
Whether the King should be delivered over to
Major-General *Skippon* at *Newcastle*? on which
the House divided, when it appear'd there were
69 for, and 130 against it: The Tellers on this
remarkable Occasion were, against the Question,
Mr. Holles and *Sir Philip Stapylton*; for it, *Sir*
Arthur Hesilrig and *Mr. Alderman Hoyle* of *York*.
After which the following Resolution was made:

Resolved, &c. That a Committee be appoint-
ed, by both Houses, to go to *Newcastle* to receive
the

the Person of the King from the *Scots Army*; and that it shall consist of Members of both Houses.' This being agreed to by the Lords, they next read a Copy of Instructions, sent up at the same Time, with the Names of the Commissioners appointed for that Purpose.

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.
January.

INSTRUCTIONS for the Right Honourable Philip Earl of Pembroke and Montgomery, Basil, Earl of Denbigh, Edward Lord Mountague, Sir John Coke, Sir Walter Erle, Sir John Holland, Sir James Harrington, John Crew, Esq; and Major-General Brown, who are appointed to go to Newcastle, to receive the Person of the King from the *Scots Army*.

I. 'YOU are to make your Repair to *Newcastle*, and be there by the twenty-third of this Instant *January*, or sooner if it may be, there to receive the Person of the King from the *Scots Army*. Their Instructions.

II. 'You are, upon your Arrival there, to signify to his Majesty that you are come thither to receive his Person; and you are also to signify the same to the Committees or Commissioners of the Parliament of *Scotland* that shall be at *Newcastle*, and to the General of the *Scots Army*.

III. 'When you have received him as aforesaid, you are to signify the same to both Houses of Parliament.

IV. 'You are to take Care that the King's Person be, with convenient Speed, conducted in Safety to *Holdenby-House*, according to the Vote of both Houses of Parliament the first of this Instant *January*; and for that Purpose you are to give Directions to Major-General *Skippon* to furnish you with such Horse and Dragoons, of those under his Command, for the same Convoy, as you shall think fit, who is hereby required to appoint the same Convoy accordingly; which Convoy are, from Time to Time, to obey your Orders for

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.

January.

‘ for that Service; and if you find it necessary to
 ‘ have a greater Convoy than can be spared from
 ‘ those Parts, then you are to send to Sir *Thomas*
 ‘ *Fairfax* for such Addition of Force as shall be
 ‘ necessary.

V. ‘ After you have received the Person of the
 ‘ King, you are to take Care that no Person that
 ‘ has been in Arms, or assisted in this unnatural
 ‘ War against the Parliament, nor any other but
 ‘ such as you shall think fit and allow of, may
 ‘ come, or deliver, or send unto him, any Letters
 ‘ or Messages.

VI. ‘ When you are come to *Holdenby*, you are
 ‘ to give Notice thereof to both Houses, and receive
 ‘ their further Order; untill which Time such
 ‘ Horse and Dragoons as you shall think fit, are to
 ‘ remain with you and observe your Orders.

VII. ‘ You shall return to both Houses of Par-
 ‘ liament the Names of such Attendants as you
 ‘ shall appoint to come along with the King, and
 ‘ also of such as you shall permit to speak with
 ‘ him, or to deliver, or to send any Letters or Mes-
 ‘ sages unto him.’

The Lords having agreed to these Instructions, without any Alteration, they next proceeded to read the Copies of two Letters, to be sent to *Newcastle*, the first of which was

A LETTER from the Houses to the COMMISSIONERS or COMMITTEES of the Kingdom of Scotland.

My Lords,

Westminster, Jan. 6, 1646.

A Letter from
both Houses to
the Scots Com-
missioners at
Newcastle.

‘ **W**E are commanded, by the two Houses of
 ‘ the Parliament of *England*, to assure
 ‘ your Lordships, in their Names, of their constant
 ‘ good Affection and firm Resolution to maintain
 ‘ the happy Union and Agreement between the two
 ‘ Kingdoms in pursuance of the Covenant, and to
 ‘ perform all the Offices of Love and Amity which
 ‘ can

‘ can be expected from a Nation so nearly join’d
 ‘ to their Brethren of *Scotland*. They have sent
 ‘ unto your Lordships here inclosed their Vote, de-
 ‘ claring their Intention concerning the disposing
 ‘ of the King’s Person, and employing their best
 ‘ Endeavours to procure his Majesty’s Assent to
 ‘ the Propositions. They propose very speedily to
 ‘ depute some Persons to receive his Majesty and
 ‘ attend him to *Holdenby*, the Place appointed for
 ‘ his Residence. In the mean Time, till the Ar-
 ‘ rival of these Persons, they doubt not of your
 ‘ Lordships and the Earl of *Leven*’s Care to pre-
 ‘ vent all Inconveniences which would follow up-
 ‘ on the King’s Removing himself into other Parts;
 ‘ which Care they desire earnestly may be conti-
 ‘ nued for the short Time to come, as they give
 ‘ you many Thanks for that of the Time past, as
 ‘ express’d in a Letter of the Earl of *Leven*’s to
 ‘ your Commissioners here, and by them signified
 ‘ to the Houses. This being all we have in
 ‘ Charge, we take our Leave and rest,

An. 22. Car. I.

1646.

January.

Your Lordships

Most affectionate Friends to serve you,

MANCHESTER,
 Speaker of the House of Peers
pro Tempore.

WILLIAM LENTHALL,
 Speaker of the Commons House
 in Parliament.

The other was addressed to the Earl of *Leven*.

My Lord, *Westminster, Jan. 6, 1646.*

‘ THE two Houses of Parliament have com- Another Letter
 ‘ manded us to send this their Vote unto to the Earl of
 ‘ your Lordship, by which you will see their In- *Leven.*
 ‘ tentions concerning the disposing of the Person
 ‘ of the King. They have resolved very speedily
 ‘ to send down a Committee to receive him; and,
 ‘ in

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.

January.

in the mean Time, they desire you will be pleased to continue the same Care you have formerly had, that his Majesty withdraw not himself from you, to the great Hurt and Prejudice both of himself and the Kingdom. Your Lordship hath already in that Particular, as in many others, given a large Testimony of your Zeal to the Public; and we, in the Names of the Houses, are to present you with a most thankful Acknowledgment; which being done, we have no more to say but that we are

Your Lordship's

Most affectionate Friends to serve you.

[Signed as before.]

Nothing material happening (except some Letters from Major-General *Skippon*, and other of the Parliament's Officers, that they had safely conveyed the 200,000 *l.* to *York*, but had not yet begun to pay it to the *Scots*; and a very long Account, for some Months, of Affairs in *Ireland*, which is printed at large in *Rushworth's Collections*^b, and rather foreign to the Plan of these Inquiries) we pass on to

Jan. 9. When some small Addition was made to the Instructions for those who were to go to receive the King; viz. That, in the second Article, the Words may be thus express'd, *You are also, after your Arrival, as soon as you shall think convenient, to signify unto his Majesty, &c.* It was likewise ordered, That the House at *Holdenby* might be repaired, and Provision made for the King in his Journey, and when he is come to *Holdenby*; and that a Coach be sent to meet his Majesty.— The Sum of 2500 *l.* was allowed by the Commons to pay all the necessary Expences, &c. of this Journey: And all the Persons appointed to attend the Person of the King instead of his own Servants, were named by Parliament.

Jan.

^b Vol. VI. from p. 399 to 444.

Jan. 11. The Commons sent up a Letter from Major-General Skippon, with an Examination inclosed, directed to their Speaker, about an Attempt the King endeavoured to make for an Escape from Newcastle, and get on board a Ship in order to be conveyed into France; the whole of which deserves our Notice.

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.
January.

For the Hon. WILLIAM LENTHALL Esq; Speaker
of the Honourable House of Commons, these
humbly present.

Truly Honoured Sir,

I Hold it my obliged Duty, in Faithfulness to the great Trust reposed in me by the Honourable Houses, in this present Northern Employment, as in all other Services that I shall have to do withal in relation to the Public, to acquaint you with whatsoever Occurrences of Concernment that I do or shall meet withal; and have therefore thought fit to send you this inclosed Examination, leaving the same to your judicious Consideration; humbly desiring, as shall be conceived convenient, to receive from you, from Time to Time, such Commands as may make me to understand your Pleasure; and I assure you, Sir, (by the Help of God) I shall, with all Care and Fidelity, put them in Execution.

The Examinant himself will, I hope, be with you soon after this; for To-morrow I purpose to send him, accompanied with one that shall have an Eye upon him; altho' it is thought he hath dealt so ingenuously already, that there need not be any Doubt of his voluntarily appearing before you. It is not unlikely but that, if he be farther examined before a Committee, and friendly used, some more Matters of Consequence may be discovered by him. He hath promised me he will be very clear and full, to his uttermost Knowledge, in whatsoever shall be asked of him. May it please you, if he do as he hath said, not to let him want Encouragement and Reward; for I assured him he,

or

270 *The Parliamentary HISTORY*

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.

January.

or any Man, might expect the same from the
Parliament, that, in good earnest, manifested
himself faithful to them. I shall, by him, write
two or three Lines to advertise you he is the Man.
‘ This is all I have, at present, to trouble you
with now, only that the Money-telling on both
Parties goes on apace here, so that I hope it will
be dispatched within the Time limited; and we
shall, God willing, be gone from hence there-
with Northwards To-morrow Se’nnight at the
farthest; and that I am

York, Jan. 8,

Much Honoured Sir,

1646.

Friday, 11 at Night.

Your true-hearted Servant,

P. H. SKIPPON.

*The EXAMINATION of Mr. TOBIAS PEAKER^a,
one of the Grooms of the Privy-Chamber to the
King, taken at York, January, 7, 1646.*

Mr. Peaker’s
Examination,
charging the Earl
of Leven, &c.
with being privy
thereto.

‘ **T**HIS Examinant saith, That Mr. *William
Murray*, Groom of the Bed-Chamber to
the King, about a Fortnight since sent this Exa-
minant to the Captain of a *Dutch Ship* lying in
Newcastle, at the Sign of the *Peacock*, to desire
him to come to Mr. *Murray*’s Lodgings in *New-
castle*, which he did; and the *Dutch Captain*
went accordingly to Mr. *Murray*, and staid with
him a little while in private. When this Exa-
minant next saw Mr. *Murray*, he was desired by
him to go again to the *Dutch Captain*, and carry
him 100*l.* and accordingly Mr. *Levett*, one of
the Pages of the Back-Stairs to the King, was
appointed to deliver the said 100*l.* to this Exami-
nant; who, not finding him, left the Money at Mr.
Murray’s Lodgings under his Bed’s Head, where
the said Mr. *Levett* appointed this Examinant
afterwards to fetch it, which he did; and carried
it to the Captain according to Appointment.

‘ And

^a He had formerly been Servant to the Lord-Keeper *Littleton*,
See Vol. XI. p. 123.

‘ And, to this Examinant’s best Remembrance, An. 22. Car. I.
 ‘ the same Night, being the 24th of *December*, he 1646.
 ‘ was sent by Mr. *Murray* to the Ship then lying
 ‘ at *Shields*, to enquire of the Captain how the
 ‘ Wind served for his going out, and whether he
 ‘ could not go out in the Night, notwithstanding
 ‘ any Opposition from *Tinmouth* Castle. The Cap-
 ‘ tain answered, He had rather go out in a Day-
 ‘ Tide, but yet he could be ready at any Time if
 ‘ the Wind served; and that he would go, not-
 ‘ withstanding any Opposition. This Examinant
 ‘ lodged that Night aboard the Ship, and the next
 ‘ Morning went to Mr. *Murray*, and gave him an
 ‘ Account of the *Dutchman’s* Answer. The Day
 ‘ after, being the 26th of *December*, this Examinant
 ‘ was told by Mr. *Levett*, that the King was late
 ‘ up the Night before, and he expected that they
 ‘ should go away; but the Wind served not. And
 ‘ this Examinant had Conference with Mr. *Mur-*
 ‘ *ray*, the same Day, to this Purpose, viz. This Ex-
 ‘ aminant asked Mr. *Murray* about the King’s go-
 ‘ ing away, Whether he intended it or not, and
 ‘ whither he meant to go? Withall telling him,
 ‘ That he conceived it very much to the King’s
 ‘ Disadvantage to leave the Kingdom, and put
 ‘ himself upon a Foreign Power. Mr. *Murray*
 ‘ answered, That the King intended for *Dunkirk* in
 ‘ *France*; and, withall, that they had a good Game
 ‘ to play, in regard there was certain Intelligence
 ‘ that the Peace is concluded with *Ireland*; and
 ‘ that their General, *Monro*, who commands the
 ‘ *Scots* Army there, had so far considered the Bu-
 ‘ siness that he would be for the King. Where-
 ‘ upon this Examinant said, That he conceived
 ‘ the King’s taking Part with the *Irish*, against
 ‘ whom he had so much declared, would lose much
 ‘ of his Interest with his Protestant Subjects. To
 ‘ which Mr. *Murray* replied little, but said, With-
 ‘ in two or three Days we shall know more of that
 ‘ Business.

‘ Two Days, or thereabouts, after that, Mr.
 ‘ *William Murray* sent for this Examinant to the
 ‘ *Angel*

Noble Governor,

THis Bearer can acquaint you with a Journey I am commanded to undertake. Here is neither Ships nor Wind fitting; I desire therefore to begin my Voyage at Hartlepool, if there be any Accommodation where you are, &c.

AN. 22. Cal. I.
1646.
January.

This Examinant then propounded to Mr. Mayor, Whether he thought fit he should seal up the Letter again, and proceed according to Mr. Murray's Direction to go to Hartlepool, or whether he should away to York. Mr. Mayor and Alderman Bonner advised that the Examinant should go on to Hartlepool, and give an Account to Mr. Mayor of the Success of his Journey at his Return; which accordingly this Examinant intended to do, and to that Purpose took his Journey the same Day, and went as far as Durham on his Way to Hartlepool; but there hearing that the Governor was gone to a Horse Race near Newcastle, and was like to stay there two or three Nights, this Examinant, being certainly informed thereof, returned to Newcastle, and gave the Mayor an Account of his Journey. And this Examinant further saith, He was ready to have done all further Service for the Good of the Kingdom; but while he was gone towards Hartlepool, the Mayor sent Alderman Bonner and Mr. George Dawson to the Earl of Leven, to acquaint him with this Letter of Mr. Murray's and other Probabilities concerning the King's Escape; desiring him to make as private Use of it as possibly he could: But the Earl of Leven acquainting Mr. Murray with the Letter, this Examinant, the next Morning, being Saturday the second of January, coming into the Presence-Chamber where Mr. Murray then was, Mr. Murray came to him, and swore, That this Examinant had betrayed the King and him, for the General told him he had a Letter in an Ambush for him: And farther, the said Mr. Murray expostulated with his Examinant concerning his not going to

OL. XV.

S

Hartle-

An. 22. Car. 1.

1646.

January.

‘ *Hartlepool*, and charged him with Negligence in the Business, and inquired where his Letter was; whereupon this Examinant returned it to Mr. *Murray*, who desired him to come to him about an Hour after, which he accordingly did, to know his Pleasure: And then Mr. *Murray* told him, it was the King’s Pleasure that this Examinant should go to the Captain of the *Dutch Ship*, and bid him desire of the Train to victual his Ship; which, as this Examinant believes, was but a Pretence for his Stay. But this Examinant, fearing the Business was so much discovered as that his farther Employment might prove not only unserviceable to the Public, but dangerous to himself, durst not proceed any farther in it, but came back to Mr. Mayor, and desired his Advice, and likewise the Assistance of his Pass to get out of the Quarters of the *Scots Army*, in which he thought it not safe to stay; which the Examinant accordingly received from Mr. Mayor, and went towards *York*, where he was appointed to meet Mr. Alderman *Bonner* and Mr. *George Dawson*, who were sent by Mr. Mayor to Major-General *Skippon*, and to proceed farther in the Examination of this Business as Occasion should be.

‘ And this Examinant being farther asked, Whether, by Conference with Mr. *Murray* or any other, he knew any Thing concerning any Engagement or Resolution of the *Scots Army* now in *England*, or any Part of it, in Reference to the King, this Examinant saith, That Mr. *Murray* told him that several Regiments of Foot were sure for his Majesty, viz. The Earl of *Dumfermline*’s, the Lord *St. Clair*’s, the Regiment of *Durham*, the Regiment of *Stockton* in the Bishoprick of *Durham*, the Regiment of *Tinmouth Castle*; and that Mr. *Murray* also said that *David Lesley*, Lieutenant-General of the Horse, had given good Hopes.

TOBIAS PEAKER.

‘ The

The Lords having read the foregoing Letter and Examinations, ordered them to be communicated to the *Scots* Commissioners: That the Gentleman-Usher attending their House do attach the Body of Mr. *William Murray*, and bring him before the Lords in Parliament, to answer such Things as shall be charged against him: And that the said Commissioners be desired to write a Letter to the Governor of *Newcastle*, That Mr. *William Murray* and Sir *Robert Murray* may be kept in safe Custody for that Purpose.

An. 22. Car. 1.
1646.
January.

Next the Lords proceeded, at the Desire of the Commissioners that were to go to *Newcastle*, to name the Servants that were to be about the King, both on the Journey and when he came to *Holdenby*.

Jan. 12. A Letter from the *Scots* Commissioners in *London*, directed to the Speaker of the House of Lords, was read; wherein the Testimony of the aforesaid Evidence, concerning the King's Escape, is obviated.

For the Right Honourable the SPEAKER of the House of PEERS pro Tempore.

My Lord, Worcester-House, Jan. 12, 1646.

‘ Yesternight an Examination, with other Pa-
‘ pers, was delivered up to us by the Com-
‘ mittee of both Houses that are of the Committee
‘ of both Kingdoms. We do intreat your Lord-
‘ ships to communicate our Answer presently to
‘ the House, and remain

The *Scots* Com-
missioners Vindi-
cation against
that Charge.

Your Lordship's humble Servants,

LAUDERDALE, H. KENNEDY,
C. ERSKINE, R. BARCLAY.

Jan. 12, 1646.

‘ WE do observe and take special Notice of
‘ the Favour of the Honourable Houses
‘ of Parliament, in communicating to us the Ex-
‘ amination

An. 22. Car. 1.

1646.

January.

‘amination of *Tobias Peaker*, together with Major-General *Skippon*’s Letter and the Orders of the House of Peers; such Correspondence and making known of Informations of that Kind being a very good Way, and often desired by us, for preventing of Misunderstanding between the Kingdoms: And as to that particular Business we return this Answer, That if the Earl of *Leven* was acquainted therewith on the last of *December*, as is informed by that Examinant, it is most strange to us that, to this Day, we have not the least Hint given us from the North of any such Thing: Only we are informed, by two Letters, that *Tobias Peaker* had stolen away the Money, Cloaths, and some other Things belonging to Mr. *William Murray*, and so escaped; whereupon it is desired, in these Letters, that he may be apprehended, in case he comes to *London*. And altho’ no such Letters had come, yet there is such a Contradiction, to pass over the Improbability of some Circumstances in his own Information, as may make the Truth of the Business greatly suspected; for, in one Place, he saith, That Mr. *Murray* sent him to inquire of the Dutch Captain, whether he would go out with his Ship, notwithstanding any Opposition from *Tinmouth* Castle; yet, in another Place, he saith, Mr. *Murray* told him that the Regiment of *Tinmouth* Castle is sure for his Majesty.

‘However, for further manifesting the Truth, we have, without any Delay, sent the Examination, together with the Votes of the House, unto the Committee of the Parliament of *Scotland*, at *Newcastle*; and have desired their Lordships to make a perfect and exact Inquiry into the Truth or Falshood of the Business, and to return hither a true Information concerning their Proceedings therein, which we do not doubt will be such as the Houses will be satisfied with; trusting, in the mean Time, that the Informations of a Person accused of Theft cannot be of any such Value with the Honourable Houses, as to blast the Reputation

putation of those particular Persons, much less of the Regiments of the Scots Army mentioned in that Examination.

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.
January.

And as we shall never offer to justify any Delinquency or Unfaithfulness in any Person or Persons whatsoever in that Army, so we cannot but expect that no other but a charitable and good Opinion of them shall lodge with both the Houses of Parliament, untill there be a real Ground to think otherwise of them.

By Command of the Commissioners for the Parliament of Scotland.

JOHN CHIESLEY.

Several Letters from York were read in the House of Lords, at this Time, from the Parliament's Treasurers and the Major-General, concerning their Manner of paying the Money to the Scots, and conveying it away from thence, not much to the Purpose; and nothing else intervening worth Notice, we pass on to

Jan. 18. The House of Commons had appointed a Committee to consider of some proper Reparation to be made to the Members that were imprisoned *tertio Caroli*; and the Report being made thereof this Day, it was agreed to by the whole House.

The Commons grant Gratuities to several Members for their Sufferings, Anno 3tio. Car.

That Mr. Holles shall have 5000 *l.* for his Damages, Losses, Imprisonments, and Sufferings, sustained and undergone by him, for his Service done to the Commonwealth in the Parliament of *tertio Caroli*.

The like Resolution in favour of Mr. John Selden, Mr. Walter Long, and Mr. Benjamin Valentine;

S 3

In this Gentleman's *Memoirs* we find the following Remark: I myself, for my Suffering after the Parliament *tertio Caroli*, which continued many Years, cost me some Thousands of Pounds, and prejudiced me more, had 5000 *l.* given me by the House for my Reparation. I refused it, and said, I would not receive a Penny till the public Debts were paid. Let any of them say so much. I desire whoever shall chance to read this, to pardon me this Folly, I do not mean for not taking the Money, but seeming to boast of it. I must again repeat the Apostle's Words, *I am become a Fool*

in

278 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 22. Car. I. *lentine*; also to the Representatives of Sir *John Elliot*, Sir *Peter Heyman*, and Mr. *William Strode*.

1646.

January.

‘ That 500 *l.* be bestowed in erecting a Monument to Sir *Miles Hobart*, a Member of the Parliament of *tertio Caroli*, in Memory of his Sufferings for his Service to the Commonwealth.

‘ That Mr. *Samuel Vassal* shall have 10,445 *l.* 12 *s.* 2 *d.* paid him for his Losses and Damages, sustained in denying to pay Tonnage and Poundage not granted by Act of Parliament, in Pursuance of, and Obedience to, a Declaration and Vote of this House.

‘ That 5000 *l.* be assigned to the Representatives of Mr. *Hampden*, in respect of the Losses, Damages, and Sufferings sustained by him in opposing the illegal Tax of Ship-Money, and for his Service therein to the Commonwealth.

Jan. 20. The Speaker acquainted the House that Sir *Peter Killigrew* was return’d from *Newcastle*, and had brought three Letters, which were opened and read. And first a Letter from the King:

To the Speaker of the House of Peers *pro Tempore*, to be communicated to the Lords and Commons of the Parliament of *England*, assembled at *Westminster*, and to the Commissioners of the Kingdom of *Scotland*, at *London*.

Newcastle, Jan. 15, 1646.

CHARLES R.

A Letter from the King, at Newcastle.

HIS Majesty hath received, by Sir *Peter Killigrew*, the Vote of his two Houses of Parliament of the 31st of December 1646, about his coming to *Holdenby*; concerning which his Majesty will declare his Pleasure to the Commissioners which shall come hither for that Purpose.

Next

‘ in glorying, but they have compelled me. It is true I had paid ‘ for a Fine imposed in the King’s Bench, which I laid down in ‘ ready Money out of my Purse, a thousand Marks: This, in the ‘ Time of these Troubles, (when my whole Estate was kept from ‘ me in the West, that, for three Years or thereabouts, I received ‘ thence not one Farthing) was reimburs’d to me.’

Memoirs, p. 140.

Next a Letter from the Commissioners of Scotland was read : An. 22. Car. 1.
1646.

January.

For the Right Hon. the Earl of MANCHESTER, Speaker of the House of Peers, and to the Honourable WILLIAM LENTHALL, Esq; Speaker of the House of Commons, by them to be communicated to the Honourable Houses of Parliament assembled at Westminster.

Newcastle, Jan. 12, 1646.

May it please your Lordships,

WE came hither to *Newcastle*, expecting that some Commissioners should have been sent by the Honourable Houses, according to the Desires of the Parliament of *Scotland*, represented by their Commissioners; and having received Yesternight a Letter from your Lordships, in the Name of the Houses, by *Sir Peter Killigrew*, with the inclosed Vote therein concerning the King's Majesty's going to *Holdenby-House*, shewing that Commissioners are coming hither, but not importing any Treaty at all with us; we have sent the Letter and Vote to the Parliament of *Scotland*: And shall be ready, on all Occasions, to endeavour the Preservation of the Union betwixt the Kingdoms, with all that Affection and Reality which can be expected from

Your Lordships humble Servants,

LEVEN,	A. HEPBURNE,
LOUDON,	R. FREEBAIRN,
LOTHIAN,	W. GLENDINNING,
BALCARRAS,	

Then a Letter from General *Leven*, addressed in the same Manner as the foregoing :

Newcastle, Jan. 12, 1646.

May it please your Lordships,

I Received a Letter from your Lordships, in Name of the Honourable Houses, with the inclosed Vote concerning the Disposing of the And from the Earl of Leven, relating to the Vote for his Majesty's coming to Holdenby.

Per-

An. 22. Car. 1.

1646.

January.

Person of the King; wherein your Lordships
 shew me that a Committee is to be sent hither
 for that Effect; and, in the mean Time, desire
 the Continuance of my Care: In Answer where-
 unto I shall assure your Lordships, that as I have
 been hitherto, with all Faithfulness, willing to
 do whatsoever might witness my Zeal to the Pub-
 lic; so shall I, with the same Constancy, in the
 Particular concerning the Care of his Majesty's
 Person, use the best Means and Endeavours
 which may conduce most to the preserving a fair
 Correspondence, and maintaining the happy U-
 nion settled between the two Kingdoms; and so
 I remain

Your Lordships most humble Servant,

L E V E N.

These Letters were ordered to be presently com-
 municated to such of the *Scots Commissioners*, as
 were then residing in *London*, and also to the House
 of Commons.

Jan. 25. The Speaker acquainted the House,
 that this Morning he received a Letter from the
 Parliament of *Scotland*, which was opened and
 read. It was addressed to the Speakers of both
 Houses, in the usual Form.

Right Honourable, *Edinburgh, Jan. 16, 1647.*

A Letter from
 the Scots Parlia-
 ment on the
 same Occasion.

OUR Commissioners at *London* and *New-*
castle having received from the Honourable
 Houses the Vote of the first of *January*, and com-
 municated the same to us, we have considered of
 it as a Business of very great Concernment to both
 Nations, and therefore have concluded upon the
 inclosed Declaration and Desires; whereby it
 will appear how willing we are to comply with
 the Resolutions of both Houses; how desirous to
 remove all Jealousies, for strengthening the Peace
 and Union, and maintaining a good Understanding
 betwixt the Kingdoms, so firmly tied by Solemn
 League and Covenant; and how confident that
 they

‘ they will satisfy our reasonable Desires, and make
 ‘ the Integrity of our Proceedings and Resolutions,
 ‘ in all this Business touching his Majesty, appear,
 ‘ either by Declaration or otherwise, as in their
 ‘ Wisdom they shall think fit; whereby no Occa-
 ‘ sion of Calumny may be left to the wicked En-
 ‘ mies of either Nation; and as God has blessed the
 ‘ joint Endeavours of both during our Army’s Abode
 ‘ in that Kingdom, so it will be a great Encou-
 ‘ ragement for us to hope for the Continuance of
 ‘ the same Blessing for Times coming, that our
 ‘ Resolutions may be known to be one at our Re-
 ‘ moving, in relation to all the Ends contained in
 ‘ our mutual League and Covenant: And if any
 ‘ Difficulty occur there, for gaining of Time, we
 ‘ desire that the Honourable Houses may be pleased
 ‘ to send particular Instructions to their Commis-
 ‘ sioners at *Newcastle*, with whom we shall autho-
 ‘ rize ours to concur for the just Satisfaction of
 ‘ both Kingdoms. We rest

An. 22. Car. I.
 1646.
 January.

Your affectionate Friend and Servant,

CRAWFORD and LINDSAY,
Presid’ Parl’.

And likewise a Declaration of the Kingdom of
Scotland and another Paper was read, viz.

‘ **W**Hereas it pleased God to join the King- Also a Declarati-
 ‘ dom of *Scotland, England and Ireland*, on of that King-
 ‘ in a Solemn League and Covenant, for Reforma- dom, giving their
 ‘ tion and Defence of Religion, the Honour and Consent to the
 ‘ Happiness of their King, and their own Peace Delivering up of
 ‘ and Safety; and, in pursuance thereof, the Scots the King to the
 ‘ Army being in the Kingdom of *England*, the English Commis-
 ‘ King’s Majesty came to their Quarters before sioners;
 ‘ *Newark*, and professed he came there with a full
 ‘ and absolute Intention to give all just and absolute
 ‘ Satisfaction to the joint Desires of both King-
 ‘ doms; and with no Thought either to continue
 ‘ this unnatural War any longer, or to make Di-
 ‘ vision between the Kingdoms; but to comply
 ‘ with

An. 22. Car. I.

1646.

January.

' with his Parliaments, and those intrusted by them,
 ' in every Thing for settling Truth and Peace;
 ' and that he would apply himself totally to the
 ' Councils and Advices of his Parliaments; which
 ' he did not only profess verbally to the Commit-
 ' tee of Estates with the *Scots* Army, but also, in
 ' his several Letters and Declarations, under his
 ' own Hand, to the Committee of Estates in *Scot-*
 ' *land*, and unto the two Houses of Parliament of
 ' *England* respectively: In Consideration whereof,
 ' and of the Reality of his Intentions and Resolu-
 ' tions, which he declared did proceed from no
 ' other Ground than the deep Sense of the bleeding
 ' Condition of his Kingdoms, the Committee of
 ' the Kingdom of *Scotland*, and General Officers
 ' of the *Scots* Army, declared to himself and to the
 ' Kingdom of *England*, their receiving of his Royal
 ' Person to be in these Terms (which is the Truth,
 ' notwithstanding what may be suggested or al-
 ' leged by any to the contrary, within or without
 ' the Kingdom); and presented to him, that the
 ' only Way for his own Happiness and Peace of
 ' his Kingdoms, under God, was to make good
 ' his Professions so solemnly renewed to both King-
 ' doms: Thereafter Propositions of Peace were not
 ' only (which after serious and mature Deliberation
 ' were agreed upon) tendered to him in the Name
 ' of both Kingdoms for his Royal Assent thereun-
 ' to; but also the chief Judicatures of this King-
 ' dom, both Civil and Ecclesiastical, made their
 ' humble and earnest Addresses to his Majesty by
 ' Supplications, Letters, and Commissioners for
 ' that End; and fully represented all the Prejudices
 ' and Inconveniences of the Delay or Refusal of his
 ' Assent, and, in particular, that this Kingdom
 ' would be necessitated to join with the Kingdom
 ' of *England*, to conform to the League and Co-
 ' venant in providing for the present and future
 ' Security of both Kingdoms, and settling the Go-
 ' vernment of both, as might best conduce to the
 ' Good of both. And the Parliament of *Scot-*
 ' *land*, being now to retire their Army out of *Eng-*
 ' *land*,

' land, have again, for their farther Exoneration, An. 22. Car. 1.
 ' sent Commissioners to represent their renewed, 1646.
 ' Desires to his Majesty what Danger may ensue
 ' by his Delay or Refusal to grant the same; and
 ' that till then there was Danger to the Cause, to
 ' his Majesty, to this Kingdom, and to the Union
 ' betwixt the Kingdoms, by his coming into *Scot-*
 ' *land*; and that therefore there would be a joint
 ' Course taken by both Kingdoms, concerning the
 ' Disposal of his Person: And considering that his
 ' Majesty, by his Answer to the Propositions of
 ' Peace in *August* last, and also by his late Message
 ' sent to the two Houses, and by his Warrant com-
 ' municated to the Estates of this Kingdom, has
 ' expressed his Desires to be near to the two Houses
 ' of Parliament: And seeing also that the Parlia-
 ' ment of *England* have communicated to the *Scots*
 ' Commissioners at *Newcastle*, and by them to this
 ' Kingdom, the Resolution that *Holdenby-House*,
 ' in the County of *Northampton*, is the Place
 ' where the Houses think fit for the King to come
 ' unto, there to remain with such Attendants about
 ' him as both Houses of Parliament shall appoint,
 ' with Respect had to the Safety and Preservation
 ' of his Royal Person, in the Preservation and De-
 ' fence of the true Religion and Liberties of the
 ' Kingdoms according to the Covenant: There-
 ' fore, and in regard of his Majesty's not giving a
 ' satisfactory Answer to the Propositions as yet,
 ' and out of their earnest Desire to keep a right
 ' Understanding betwixt the two Kingdoms; to
 ' prevent new Troubles within the same; to testi-
 ' fy the Desire of the two Houses of Parliament of
 ' *England* and of this Kingdom, for his Majesty's
 ' Residence in some of his Houses near the Parlia-
 ' ment of *England*; to prevent Misinformation, and
 ' to give Satisfaction to all the Estates of the Parlia-
 ' ment of *Scotland*; they do declare their Concur-
 ' rence for the King's Majesty's going to *Holdenby-*
 ' *House*, or some other of his Houses in or about
 ' *London*, as shall be thought fit, there to remain
 ' untill he give Satisfaction to both Kingdoms in
 ' the

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.

January.

the Propositions of Peace; and that, in the Interim, there be no Harm, Prejudice, Injury, nor Violence done to his Royal Person; that there be no Change of Government other than has been for these three Years past; and that his Posses- sion be no ways prejudiced in their lawful Succession to the Crown and Government of these Kingdoms. And as this is the clear Intention and full Resolution of the Kingdom of Scotland, according to their Interest and Duty, in relation to the King's Majesty, so they are confident (from the same Grounds and manifold Declarations of the Parliament of *England*) that the same is the Resolution of their Brethren; and at such a Time they do expect a renewed Declaration thereof, and that they will give brotherly and just Satisfaction to the Desires herewith sent, like as the Kingdom of Scotland do hereby assure their Brethren of *England* that it shall be their constant Endeavour to keep, continue, and strengthen the Union and Peace betwixt the Kingdoms, according to the Covenant and Treaties.

Extracted from the Records of Parliament, subscribed by the Earl of Crawford and Lindsay, High Treasurer of Scotland and President to the Parliament; witnessing thereunto the Subscription and Sign Manual of me Sir Alexander Gibson, of Drury, Knight, Clerk of our Sovereign's Rolls, Register, and Council.

ALEX. GIBSON, *Cler. Reg.*

DESIRE'S of the Kingdom of Scotland.

Edinburgh, Jan. 16, 1647.

And their farther
Desires.

I. THAT a Committee of both Kingdoms be appointed to attend his Majesty, and press him farther for granting the Propositions of Peace; and, in case of his Refusal, to advise and determine what is further necessary for continuing and strengthening the Union betwixt the Kingdoms, according to the Covenant and Treaties

'ties; and that no Peace or Agreement be made by either Kingdom, with the King, without the other, according to the late Treaty betwixt the Kingdoms.

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.
January.

II. 'Next it is desired, That such of the *Scots* Nation as have Place or Charge about the King, (excepting such as stand excepted in the Propositions of Peace) may attend and exercise the same: And that none shall be debarred from having Access to attend his Majesty, who have Warrants from the Parliaments of either Kingdom respectively, or from the Committee of either Parliament thereunto authorized.

III. 'It is desired that the one Kingdom assist the other, in case they be troubled, from within or from without, for this Agreement.

IV. 'That the Kingdom of *England* would speedily condescend and agree upon some Competency of Entertainment for the Forces, which we are necessitated to keep up to suppress the *Irish* Rebels; whom, by the Large Treaty, they are bound to suppress.'

CRAWFORD and LINDSAY,
Presid' Parl'.

The Lords having taken these Desires of the *Scots* Parliament into Consideration, express'd their Sense upon them in the following Resolutions:

1. 'That there be no Harm, Prejudice, Injury, or Violence, done to the King's Royal Person. Votes of the
Lords thereupon.

2. 'That there be no Change of Government other than has been these three Years past.

3. 'That the King's Posterity be in no ways prejudiced in their lawful Succession to the Crown and Government of these Kingdoms.'

The Question being put, That these Votes, now express'd, be sent in a Letter to the Kingdom of *Scotland*, it was resolved in the Affirmative.

Then the Desires of the *Scots* Parliament being read a second Time, they were agreed to with the following Additions, viz.

To

286 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 22. Car. 1.
1646.

January.

To the first Clause of the second Desire, 'That when the King's House comes to be settled, their Lordships will do that which shall be thought fit, Regard being had to this Desire of the Parliament of *Scotland*.'

To the second Clause of the second Desire, 'That when any Committees or Commissioners from the Kingdom of *Scotland* have Occasion to address themselves to the King, they do first give Notice thereof to the Committee or Commissioners of the Parliament of *England*.'

To the fourth Desire, 'That the Lords had been, and will be, ready to make good the Treaty between the two Kingdoms, and to confer with any Committee that the *Scots* Parliament shall authorize concerning the Particulars.'

Then it was resolved, 'That the Papers read this Day, with the Votes of this House thereupon, be communicated to the Commons at a Conference, and their Concurrence desired therein;' which being done accordingly,

Jan. 26. The Earl of *Manchester* reported, That the Committee were of Opinion, That the Expressions in the Letter, Declaration and Desires of the Parliament of *Scotland*, was such a Testimony of the Fidelity of that Kingdom to this, that the like was never given by any Kingdom to another; and that they had framed the following Letter to be sent to the Parliament of *Scotland*: This being read, was agreed to, ordered to be sign'd by the Speakers of both Houses, and sent forthwith to *Edinburgh* by Sir *Peter Killegrew*.

To the Right Honourable the LORDS and to the COMMISSIONERS for SHIRES and BOROUGHES, assembled in the Parliament of *Scotland*.

Right Honourable,

Jan. 27, 1646.

And an Answer sent to the Scots Parliament by both Houses.

A Letter from your Lordships, dated at *Edinburgh* the 16th Instant, and the Papers therewith sent having been communicated to both Houses

‘ Houses of the Parliament of *England*, we are An. 22. Car. I.
1646.
‘ commanded to return this Answer :

‘ They do assure their Brethren of *Scotland*,
‘ that nothing needs to be said unto them for re-
‘ moving any Jealousies out of their Hearts, or
‘ for strengthening that Confidence which they
‘ have in the Affections of that Nation : And they
‘ do presume that the Proceedings of the Houses
‘ of the Parliament of *England*, from the very Be-
‘ ginning of these Troubles, are a sufficient Decla-
‘ ration of their Integrity, and of their constant Af-
‘ fection to their Brethren of *Scotland*. And to
‘ the Desires of the Kingdom of *Scotland* they do
‘ return these Answers :

January.

‘ To the first, That when the King shall be at
‘ *Holdenby*, and the *Scots* Forces gone out of this
‘ Kingdom, both Houses of Parliament (saving,
‘ according to their former Declarations, the pe-
‘ culiar Rights of the Kingdom of *England*) will
‘ then appoint a Committee of theirs, to join with
‘ a Committee of the Kingdom of *Scotland*, to em-
‘ ploy their best Endeavours to procure his Ma-
‘ jesty’s Assent to the Propositions agreed on by
‘ both Kingdoms and presented to his Majesty at
‘ *Newcastle*, and to the disposing of the Bishops
‘ Lands, according to the Ordinance already pas-
‘ sed both Houses in that Behalf. And in case the
‘ King shall not give his Assent thereunto, the
‘ Houses however are still resolved firmly to con-
‘ tinue and maintain the happy Union between the
‘ two Kingdoms according to the Treaties and
‘ Covenant; and that according to the late Treaty
‘ between the Kingdoms, no Cessation, nor any
‘ Pacification or Agreement for Peace whatsoever,
‘ shall be made by either Kingdom, or the Armies
‘ of either Kingdom, without the mutual Advice
‘ and Consent of both Kingdoms.

‘ To the second Desire, both Houses do declare
‘ That it is not their Intention, by their appointing
‘ of Persons to wait upon the King in his Journey
‘ to *Holdenby*, to make a Settlement of any Persons
‘ in

An. 22. Car. I.

1646.

January.

‘ in any particular Places, nor to be any Prejudice
 ‘ to any of the King’s Servants that are of either
 ‘ Nation, who have adhered to the Parliaments;
 ‘ and that none shall be debarred from having Access
 ‘ to his Majesty who have Warrant from the
 ‘ Parliament of *Scotland*, or from the Committee
 ‘ of that Parliament thereunto authorized, except
 ‘ such as are disabled by the Propositions agreed
 ‘ on by both Kingdoms.

‘ To the third Desire, The Coming of the
 ‘ King, according to the Votes of both Houses
 ‘ of the Parliament of *England*, being agreeable
 ‘ to the Covenant and Treaties; they do declare
 ‘ that, upon any Troubles that shall arise to the
 ‘ Kingdom of *Scotland* for the same, they will assist
 ‘ them according to the said Covenant and
 ‘ Treaties.

‘ To the fourth and last Desire, both Houses
 ‘ return Answer, That their Garrisons being delivered
 ‘ up, and the *Scots* Army and Forces being
 ‘ marched out of this Kingdom, they will take
 ‘ this their Desire into speedy Consideration.

‘ This being all we have in Command, from
 ‘ the Houses, we rest

Your affectionate Friends and Servants, &c.

The same Day the Commons sent up a Message
 to the Lords to let them know that, in regard of
 the many urgent Occasions of the Kingdom, they
 intended to sit the next Day, though it was the Fast
 Day; and to desire their Lordships would be pleased
 to sit if they thought fit. Accordingly,

Jan. 27. Both Houses met, and, after ordering
 Thanks to be given to their several Preachers for
 the great Pains they had taken, the Earl of *Manchester*
 presented the following Letters to the
 Lords, all of them directed to him as Speaker
 of that House; which were read. And first

A

OF ENGLAND 259

A Letter from the Earl of PEMBROKE, Earl of DENBIGH, and Lord MONTAGUE, Commissioners appointed to receive the Ransom of the King from the Scots Army.

My Lord, DUBLIN, Jan. 22. 1650.

WE are now all together at DUBLIN, where of us got hither on FRIDAY last Night; others, by reason of the Length of the Journey and Foulness of the Ways, not until this Day. At Northallerton, where we all arrived on the 20th of this Instant January, we understood by the Earl of Stamford, Mr. GOMERY, and Mr. ASBURST, that, by reason of some Difference in reckoning the Days, wherof we agreed they have given you a full Account, the first Sum appointed to be paid by the Treaty, was not then received, but was delivered at the City the next Morning, which was done in our Presence; whereupon we computed that the Scots had till ten Days to remove their Quarters from this Side the Tyne, and to quit the Garrisons of Newcastle and Tynemouth; and that privately they would not remove out of their Quarters, which they possess all over the Bishoprick of Durham and the confining Parts of Yorkshire, before the full Time assigned by the Treaty, according to their Computation, be expired; which will be able to involve the Service wherein you have engaged us, concerning the Reception of the King's Person, in greater Difficulties and more Inconveniences than were expected; whilst, upon the account of the Houses, we hoped the Scots Army should have removed on the North Side Tyne, and the Garrison of Newcastle have been delivered by the 15th of this Instant January: But we shall faithfully endeavour to discharge the Trust you have reposed in us in this weighty Affair, according to our Instructions, intending to be at Newcastle To-morrow Morning; and so we remain.

Your Lordship's humble Servants,

PEMBROKE and MONT- B. DENBIGH,

GOMERY,

ED. MONTAGUE

VOL. XV.

T

A

AN. 22. CAR. I. A Letter from the Earl of STAMFORD, one of
 1646.
 the Commissioners appointed to attend the Pay-
 ment and March of the Scots Army.

January.

Northallerton, Jan. 21, 1646.

May it please your Lordship,

‘ I Came to York the 13th Day of January, where
 ‘ I found the Money in Telling, and did en-
 ‘ deavour to hasten that Work; but could not pre-
 ‘ vail to get it told before Saturday Morning the
 ‘ 16th, (the Scots Deputy-Treasurers not account-
 ‘ ing Sunday one of the twelve) although I did insist
 ‘ upon it, that, according to the Articles of Agree-
 ‘ ment, it should have been dispatched the Night
 ‘ before.

‘ The Money and Convoy did march upon Sa-
 ‘ turday, and I was with it at Topcliffe on Monday
 ‘ by Twelve of the Clock, expecting the Scots
 ‘ Hostages. At Night they came, their Names
 ‘ are Sir William Ker, Sir Arthur Forbes, Sir James
 ‘ Wood, Robert Douglas, Esq; Alexander Stra-
 ‘ chan, Esq; and Col. Welden. They had in their
 ‘ Company twenty-one Persons and twenty-seven
 ‘ Horses, to whom we do give the best Entertain-
 ‘ ment this Country will afford; it being resolved,
 ‘ by Major-General Skippon and the rest of the
 ‘ Officers, that it was very fit they should be en-
 ‘ tertained upon the Charge of this Kingdom.

‘ We had certain Intelligence the Scots would
 ‘ fetch their Money but with a small Convoy; and
 ‘ we agreeing that they should be no nearer than
 ‘ within two Miles of this Place, did come with
 ‘ the Money and Hostages to this Town upon
 ‘ Tuesday Night; expecting, according to our for-
 ‘ mer Signification to the Scots General, it should
 ‘ have been received upon Wednesday, which we
 ‘ affirmed was the last Day limited by the Articles
 ‘ for the first Payment; but the Deputy-Treasurers
 ‘ of the Scots Army, building upon their former
 ‘ Mistake, would not receive their Money till
 ‘ Thursday Morning; when it was received by
 ‘ Mr.

‘ Mr. *John Drummond*, one of the Deputy-Tre-
 ‘ surers to Sir *Alexander Hepburne*. Major-Ge-
 ‘ neral *Skippon* did convoy it with two Troops of
 ‘ Horse and 300 Foot two Miles beyond this Town,
 ‘ where a slight Guard of about 14 *Scots* Horse met
 ‘ it, and our General return’d back to our Quar-
 ‘ ters.

An. 22. Car. 1.
 1646.
 January,

‘ We have also, according to our Instructions,
 ‘ made two Dispatches to the *Scots* General, de-
 ‘ siring him to give Order to the Army not to levy
 ‘ any Money, or take any Thing from the Coun-
 ‘ try but what they pay for; and that they would
 ‘ hasten the drawing their Forces Northward, and
 ‘ appoint a set Time for the marching of their
 ‘ Forces over *Tyne*, and surrendering of the Gar-
 ‘ risons on this Side the River. We daily expect
 ‘ his Answer, wherewith, as there shall be Occa-
 ‘ sion, I shall acquaint your Lordship, and to all
 ‘ your Commands yield ready Obedience as be-
 ‘ cometh

Your Lordship's most humble Servant,

STAMFORD.

P. S. ‘ I cannot omit to let your Lordship know
 ‘ the Care and Diligence of Major-General *Skip-
 ‘ pon* and Colonel-General *Pointz*, in all Things
 ‘ that concern the Military Part.’

*A Letter from Alderman GIBBS of Newcastle,
 and Mr. NOEL, Treasurers for the Scots Money.*

Northallerton, Jan. 21, 1646.

Right Honourable,

‘ WE being hindered from telling any Money
 ‘ on *Friday* last, through the constant re-
 ‘ fusing of Mr. *Aikman*, the *Scots* Agent, to tell
 ‘ any from us that Day, did, on *Saturday* in the
 ‘ Forenoon, finish that Work, and march’d the
 ‘ Carriages about eight Miles; and the next Day
 ‘ they attained *Topcliffe*, where they rested all

T 2

‘ *Mon-*

292 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 22. Car. 1.

1646.

January.

Monday, staying for the *Scots* Hostages, who did not come till that Night. The next Day we came to *Northallerton*, having wrote to Lieutenant-General *David Lesley*, and signified our Desire to have *Sir Adam Hepburne*, or one of his Deputies, as mentioned in the Articles, to meet us there to receive the Money, and give us an Acquittance. On *Tuesday* Night late *Mr. John Drummond* came to Town, and on *Wednesday* Morning, so soon as we heard of him, we wrote a Letter to acquaint him with our Readiness to pay the Money that Day, and shewed him the Acquittance that we had prepared. The Honourable Commissioners of Parliament likewise wrote to him to that Purpose; and he being come to them, both they and we offered our Readiness to pay the Money, and take the Acquittance that Day; but nothing we could say could persuade him to receive it till the next Morning, being this present Day, in which we have paid to him the first Payment mentioned in the said Articles; and have received his Acquittance in the Presence of the Right Honourable the Earl of *Pembroke* and others of the Honourable Commissioners of Parliament, and it is marched towards *Newcastle*. We have the other 100,000*l.* safe here, and wait for the coming on of the other Days, expressed in the Agreement, for perfecting the Work; wherein, by God's Assistance, there shall be all Diligence and Faithfulness used according to the best Abilities of

Your Honour's humble Servants,

WILLIAM GIBBS,
THOMAS NOELL.

February. This Month begins with another Series of Letters from the North, addressed to the Speaker of the House of Peers, which we give from their *Journals*. And first

A

A Letter from the COMMITTEE appointed to receive the Person of the King from the Scots Army. An. 22. Car. I.
1646.

My Lord,

February.

WE came to *Newcastle* on *Saturday*, and on *Monday* we sent to the King, that he would be pleased to appoint when we should wait on him, who assigned us this Day between nine and ten in the Morning; at which Time my Lord of *Pembroke* signified to his Majesty what we had in Command from the Parliament; whereupon the King said, *It was a Business of great Concernment, and that it would take some Time to give us an Answer, for he had Quæries to make*; and, a little before we took our Leave, he said, *He would send for us To-morrow or on Thursday*.

We likewise, this Morning, according to our Instructions, signified our Arrival to the *Scots Commissioners and General*, who have as yet given us no Answer. We shall speedily give your Lordships a farther Account, and, upon all Occasions, endeavour to approve ourselves,

My Lord,

Your Lordship's humble Servants,

Newcastle, Jan. 26,
1646.

PEMBROKE and
MONTGOMERY,
B. DENBIGH,
ED. MONTAGUE.

Another Letter from the same.

My Lord,

WE have already given an Account, that upon *Tuesday* last we signified to the King, the *Scots Commissioners and the General*, that we were come, by Command of both Houses of Parliament, to receive his Majesty's Person. Yesterday we kept the Fast, and his Majesty sent to let us know, that in that Regard to defer his

An. 22. Car. 1.
1646.
February.

Answer untill *Thursday*. This Morning we received Commands to attend him at four o'Clock in the Afternoon, which we did accordingly : And, after some general Conferences, the King was pleased to propound some Questions, the Substance whereof, and of our Answers, which were both by Word of Mouth, are as follow :

First, 'His Majesty asked, *Whether we had Power to place or displace his Servants; and what Servants he was to have placed about him?*

'We answer'd, "The Houses had appointed some to attend him in his Journey to *Holdenby*, a List of whose Names we should present unto him."

Secondly ' *Whether those which are now Servants, might not go with him, altho' not wait upon him?*

'We answered, "That if his Majesty would give us the Names of such as he desired should go with him in that Condition, we would then acquaint his Majesty whether they might or not, according to our Instructions."

Thirdly, ' *Whether he might not speak to us severally?*

'We answered, "That if his Majesty spake any Thing of Moment, we were to acquaint the Committee with it, without which we could not discharge our Trust."

Fourthly, ' *Whether he was to appoint the Time of his going?*

'We answered, "That we desired his Majesty would appoint a Time; but unless it were a short Time it would not consist with our Instructions, by which we were commanded to attend him with all convenient Speed to *Holdenby*."

'Whereupon his Majesty did declare, *That he would go with us to Holdenby*, and nominated *Monday* or *Tuesday* to begin his Journey; but being told by some of his Servants, that he could not be accommodated with Necessaries by that Time, he appointed *Wednesday*, whereunto we agreed; and shall at that Time be ready to wait upon him according unto our Instructions.

'We

‘ We desire that the Committee of the Revenue An. 22. Car. I.
 ‘ do take Care and give Order that *Holdenby-House* 1646.
 ‘ be repaired and fitted for the Reception of the February,
 ‘ King, and Provision made of all Necessaries fit-
 ‘ ting for the King in his Journey, and when he
 ‘ is come to *Holdenby*, according to your own Or-
 ‘ der; so we remain,

My Lord,

Your Lordship's humble Servants,

Newcastle, Jan. 28,
 1646.

PEMBROKE and
 MONTGOMERY,
 B. DENBIGH,
 ED. MONTAGUE.

A Letter from Major-General SKIPPON.

My Lord,

‘ **O**N *Tuesday* last *Hartlepool* and *Stockton* were
 ‘ quitted by the *Scots*, and possessed by our
 ‘ Forces. The Remainder of the second 100,000*l.*
 ‘ lieth this Night at *Yarm*; and my Regiment, with
 ‘ Sir *Robert Pye's*, are to guard the same. Colo-
 ‘ nel *Lilburn's* and Colonel *Hardress Waller's* Re-
 ‘ giments quarter here this Night; and the rest
 ‘ of our Forces are as near about us as they
 ‘ can be, without mixing with the *Scots* Horse,
 ‘ which are not as yet on the North Side *Tyne*,
 ‘ but will be To-morrow; and on *Saturday* (as
 ‘ General *Lefley*, who is here, told me this Even-
 ‘ ing) they will be all on the North Side *Tyne*. We
 ‘ had hoped, as their General sent us Word, they
 ‘ would have been this Night so far Northward of
 ‘ *Durham*, that we should, on *Saturday* next have
 ‘ received *Newcastle* and *Tinmouth* Castle from
 ‘ them, for which we are in as much Readiness as
 ‘ possible can be; but I doubt it will be so late on
 ‘ *Saturday* before they all pass *Tyne*, that it will
 ‘ be *Sunday*, e'er we can receive those Garrisons.

‘ This I thought fit, as in Duty I am bound, to
 ‘ acquaint this Honourable House with; and to
 ‘ assure

296 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 22. Car. 1.
1646.

February.

‘ assure your Lordships, that, by the Help of God,
‘ nothing shall be wanting in me for the Further-
‘ ance of this great Public Service in hand; and
‘ that I am in this, and upon all other Occasions,
‘ to the utmost of my Power, by the same Assist-
‘ ance, most ready to manifest myself

Your Lordship's most humble

Durham, Jan. 28,
1646,
11 at Night.

and faithful Servant,

PH. SKIPPON.

*Another Letter from the last mentioned COMMIS-
SIONERS.*

My Lord, Newcastle, Jan. 30, 1646.

‘ **WE** have already given your Lordships an
‘ Account of what the Earl of *Pembroke*
‘ said to the King at our first waiting on him; and
‘ in our last, of the 28th Instant, of the King's
‘ Questions and our Answers, which were deli-
‘ vered by the Earl of *Denbigh* this Day.

‘ As soon as the *Scots* Horse, under the Com-
‘ mand of Lieutenant-General *Lefley*, had march-
‘ ed through this Town, there came to us the
‘ *Scots* Commissioners and the General. The
‘ Earl of *Lothian* then acquainted us, that they
‘ had taken their Leave of his Majesty, and had
‘ delivered to him a Declaration from the Kingdom
‘ of *Scotland*, a Copy whereof was also delivered
‘ to us by his Lordship, which we send you here
‘ enclosed^d; whereupon we immediately attended
‘ the King; and presently after the *Scots* Guard
‘ about the Court were relieved by the *English*,
‘ without Noise or Disturbance; and about the
‘ same Time the Keys of *Newcastle* were deli-
‘ vered to Major-General *Skippon*. The Com-
‘ missioners of *Scotland* and the General have pro-
‘ ceeded with that Honour and Candour in the
‘ managing of this Affair, that we should neither
‘ do

^d The Declaration of the *Scots* Parliament, giving their Consent
to the King's being removed to *Holdenby*, which see at large p. 281.

do them nor ourselves Right, if we did not represent it unto you. We are,

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.

My Lord,

February.

Your Lordship's humble Servants,

PEMBROKE and
MONTGOMERY,
B. DENBIGH,
ED. MONTAGUE.

From Major-General SKIPPON,

Newcastle, Jan. 30, 1646,
Six at Night.

My Lord,

THIS Day, thro' God's Goodness, about Three of the Clock in the Afternoon, Newcastle and all the Works belonging thereto, were, by our Brethren the Scots, delivered into our Hands, and all their Forces marched out, and we are in full Possession thereof; and I hope, by God's further Blessing, all Things will proceed fairly on to a happy Conclusion in this great Business. I only thought it my Duty at present, with all Speed, to advertise your Right Honourable House of this, as I shall, God willing, in any Thing worthy the writing of; and in all Things else I shall endeavour to manifest myself

Your Lordship's most faithful Servant,

PH. SKIPPON.

P. S. I hear, by others, that the Scots have quitted the Castle of Tinnmouth also; but as yet I have received no Express thereof from him I appointed to receive the same. The Commissioners of Parliament have also received the Person of the King, who is To-day carefully attended.

This Bearer, General-Adjutant Fleming, is a very well-deserving Man; testified by your Lordship's true-hearted Servant, PH. SKIPPON.

Another

An. 22. Car. I. The Letters, &c. mentioned to be inclosed in
1646. the foregoing.

February,

And first that from the Commissioners to the
Earl of *Leven*.

York, Jan. 17, 1646.

May it please your Excellency,

WE lately received the inclosed Petition
from the Hands of Major-General *Skip-
pon*, who had it from the Justices of the Peace
of this Country; and having in Charge from
both Houses of Parliament, to see that no Mo-
ney nor Provision should be taken by any of your
Army after the Payment of the first 100,000*l.*
as was resolved on by both Houses; and being
assured that your Lordships did permit it to your
Soldiers only in case of Necessity, which we hope
will be supplied by their Receipt of the first Pay-
ment; we do therefore earnestly press that your
Excellency would take the Petition into Con-
sideration, so that no Money or Provision may
be taken by way of Anticipation; wherein we
doubt not but your Excellency will give present
Order, which will tend much to a friendly and
brotherly Parting, and will be a great Satisfac-
tion to both Houses of Parliament, and to

Your Excellency's humble Servants,

STAMFORD,
ROB^t. GOODWIN,
W^m. ASHURST.

The Petition mentioned in the above Letter.

*To the Worshipful his MAJESTY'S JUSTICES
assembled in Session for the North-Riding.*

The HUMBLE PETITION of the distressed In-
habitants of Cleveland, in Yorkshire,

Sheweth,

THAT a Part of the said Wapontake hath,
for these eight Months last past, or there-
abouts, paid to the Scots Army 4000*l.* per Mens-
sem

‘ *sem* and upwards, in Money and Provisions; *An. 22. Car. 1.*
 ‘ whereby they are so extremely impoverished, that *1646.*
 ‘ some of them have neither Oxen left to till their
 ‘ Ground, nor Seed to sow the same withall; that
 ‘ yet notwithstanding the said Army shew them-
 ‘ selves so uncompassionate of their said Misery,
 ‘ that they, or most of them, do demand, upon
 ‘ Penalty of our Lives, a Month’s Pay before hand
 ‘ towards their Advance; which is a Thing alto-
 ‘ gether impossible for your Petitioners to perform,
 ‘ though it lie upon their Lives.

February.

‘ The former Premises considered, their hum-
 ‘ ble Desire therefore is, That you will be pleased,
 ‘ in consideration of their deplorable Estate and
 ‘ wasted Condition, to mediate with some Persons
 ‘ of Honour, that the *Scots* Army may not levy any
 ‘ more Advance-Money; but to give such strict
 ‘ Order as that the poor Country be not further
 ‘ charged than it hath been formerly.

And your Petitioners shall ever pray, &c.

The ORDER of Sessions thereupon.

Ad General. Session. Pacis tent. apud Helmsley, duo-
decimo Die Januarii, Anno Regni Caroli, &c. 22,
coram Roberto Berwick, Milit. Georgio Mar-
wood, Richardo Errington, Isaaco Norton, Arm.
Justic. dist. Domini Regis ad Pacem, &c.

‘ **GEORGE MARWOOD**, Esq; one of his
 ‘ Majesty’s Justices of the Peace of the said
 ‘ *North-Riding*, is desired by the Court to repre-
 ‘ sent to Major-General *Skippon* the humble De-
 ‘ sire of the Inhabitants of *Cleveland*; and to be an
 ‘ humble Suitor to him on Behalf of this Court,
 ‘ that he will be pleased to afford them his Assist-
 ‘ ance and Mediation, as he shall conceive most
 ‘ conducing to the Relief of this poor exhausted
 ‘ Country.

HOLBORNE.

Another

An. 22. Car. 1. *Another from the last-mentioned COMMISSIONERS
1646. to the Earl of LEVEN.*

February.

Northallerton, Jan. 21, 1646.

May it please your Excellency,

WE came to *Northallerton* with the Money upon *Tuesday* Night last, and were ready to make the first Payment upon *Wednesday*, according to our former Letter unto your Lordship, being the last Day limited by the Articles of Agreement, at which Time we did make Tender of it to your Deputy-Treasurers here; but they would not receive it untill this Day. And now the Money being paid, we must acquaint your Lordship that we have in Charge from both Houses of Parliament to take Care that, after the Payment of the first 100,000*l.* your Army may not require or take any Money or Goods from the Country whatsoever; but that they shall pay for all such Provisions or other Things as they shall receive: Therefore we do desire your Lordship to give present and strict Orders to all the Officers and Soldiers under your Excellency's Command, that they do not levy any more Money, or take any Provisions from the Country, but such as they shall pay for; which we the more earnestly press, because the Complaints that came to us are many and loud; a true Copy of some of them we have here inclosed sent your Lordship, wherein we are confident you will give speedy Relief.

We further desire the Favour of your Lordship to appoint us a Day when we shall receive the Garrisons of *Stockton* and *Hartlepool*, and when your Forces shall be drawn to the North Side and Northward of the River *Tyne*; because we cannot, by the Articles of Agreement, march with the second 100,000*l.* over the *Tees* till that Time; and so consequently not stir with it from hence, there being no Place able to receive the Monies

‘ Monies and Convoy nearer than *Darlington*, An. 22. Car. I.
‘ which is on the North of *Tees*. 1646.

‘ We have formerly made known to your Lord-
‘ ship, that we have it in Charge that there be no
‘ mixing of Quarters, to avoid all Unkindness be-
‘ twixt the Forces of both Kingdoms: Therefore
‘ we doubt not but your Lordship will order the
‘ timely drawing off your Forces, that the Garri-
‘ sons may be received, our Forces march on, and
‘ the Monies come to *Newcastle* in due Time.
‘ We have had so much Experience of your Lord-
‘ ship’s great Affection to the Good and Peace of
‘ both Kingdoms, that we are confident a satisfac-
‘ tory Answer in all these Particulars shall be gi-
‘ ven to

February.

Your Excellency’s humble Servants,

STAMFORD,
ROB^t. GOODWIN,
W^m. ASHURST.

The Earl of LEVEN’s Answer.

*For the Right Hon. the Earl of STAMFORD, and the
remanent COMMISSIONERS at Northallerton,*

Right Honourable, Newcastle, Jan. 23, 1646.

‘ Y^Ours of the 21st came to my Hands this
‘ Afternoon. I have given strict Orders to
‘ all those under my Command, that they shall take
‘ no Money, by Advance, after their Removal from
‘ their Quarters, the Copy whereof was sent to you.
‘ The Complaint, mentioned to be inclosed in your
‘ Letter, did not come to my Hands; and when
‘ any shall come worthy of Censure, it shall be ex-
‘ amined into, and the Persons punished according
‘ to their Fault. I have already given Orders to
‘ the Governors of *Stockton* and *Hartlepool*, to quit
‘ those Garrisons on *Monday* or *Tuesday* next; so
‘ that those Governors will be either ready to
‘ deliver the Garrisons, or you will find them emp-
‘ ty of our Soldiers.

An. 22. Car. 1.

1646.

February.

‘ I gave Order to the Lieutenant-General of
 ‘ Horse to march to this Side of *Tees*, conform to
 ‘ the Treaty. This Garrison of *Newcastle*, and the
 ‘ Garrison of *Tinmouth* Castle, will remove on *Sa-*
 ‘ *turday* next the penult of this Month, and all the
 ‘ Forces under my Command will be on the North
 ‘ Side *Tyne* that Day. And howbeit there be six
 ‘ Days allowed, after the rendering the Garrisons,
 ‘ for the Delivery of the second 100,000 *l.* yet the
 ‘ Committee here, as well as myself, conceive it
 ‘ will be a great Burden to the County of *Northum-*
 ‘ *berland*, that our whole Army should be in these
 ‘ Parts untill the six Days be past; and therefore
 ‘ we are content that you make all the Haste you
 ‘ can to deliver the second 100,000 *l.* and, if you
 ‘ please, we shall receive it upon the first, second,
 ‘ or third Day of *February*, at the Place appoint-
 ‘ ed. This is all I can say for the present, and
 ‘ remain

Your Lordship's humble Servant,

LEVEN.

The COMMISSIONERS Reply.

May it please your Excellency,

‘ **W**E have received yours of the 23d Instant,
 ‘ and cannot but approve, and thankfully
 ‘ acknowledge, your Readiness therein expressed
 ‘ to deliver up *Newcastle* and the Castle of *Tin-*
 ‘ *mouth* on *Saturday* next; as also your Desire to
 ‘ receive the Money the first, second, or third Day
 ‘ of *February*, that so you may not burden the
 ‘ Country, by lying any longer in it than is of Ne-
 ‘ cessity: All which we have considered, and ac-
 ‘ quainted Major-General *Skippon* therewith; and
 ‘ we, together with him, are very ready to an-
 ‘ swer your Propositions in both; but unless their
 ‘ Quarters be removed, wherewith we have in
 ‘ charge not to mingle, that we may march with
 ‘ our Forces, and quarter near *Newcastle* on *Fri-*
 ‘ *day* Night, it will not be possible for us to observe
 ‘ our

our Instructions and the Articles of Agreement, An. 22. Car. I. 1646.
 and receive the Town of *Newcastle* as is proposed by your Lordship; therefore we make it our earnest Request to your Excellency to remove your Forces out of *Durham*, Northward, on *Thursday*, that we may quarter there; and on *Friday* to draw off all your Forces to the North of *Tyne*, that our Forces may quarter near *Newcastle* on *Friday*; and that we have Notice of your being on the North Side of *Tyne* accordingly, so that our Forces may quarter near to *Newcastle*. We shall then draw the Money to the North of *Tees* and march it forward to *Newcastle*, while our Forces are receiving the Town and Garrisons, according to the Articles; which Rendition we desire may be done timely on *Saturday*, and so the Expedition express'd by your Excellency, and willingly embraced by us, may be accomplished; and then we doubt not but to pay the Money on the first, second, or third of *February*, that the Country may be eased; which, together with yours, is our most earnest Desire.

And further we beseech your Excellency to give us Leave (as we have in Charge) to renew our Desires, that your Lordship would give present Order that your Army, having now received the first 100,000 *l.* may pay for whatsoever they take of the Country. By all which we hope there will be a happy Conclusion, to the Glory of God and the Peace and Tranquility of these Kingdoms, answerable to the Desires of,

My Lord,

Northallerton,
Jan. 25, 1646.

Your Lordship's humble Servants,

STAMFORD.

ROB^t. GOODWYN.

W^m. ASHURST.

P. S. We send your Excellency the Complaints we mentioned in our Letter, which were omitted by our Secretary.

An. 22. Car. 1. *The Earl of LEVEN's Answer to the foregoing.*
1646.

February.

Right Honourable, *Newcastle, Jan. 26, 1646.*

I Received your Lordship's Letter, desiring our Quarters to be removed, that you may march with your Forces near *Newcastle* on *Friday*, wherein I shall be most willing and ready to give your Lordship all the Satisfaction which can be expected from one who wisheth an happy and speedy Close of the Business; having accordingly given Orders to the Forces on South Side *Tyne*, so to order and hasten their March, that those Parts being cleared of them, your Forces may repair to *Durham* and *Gate-side* against the Time desired; and that the Garrisons of *Newcastle* and *Tynmouth* Castle may be delivered against the Time limited by the Articles of Agreement. There shall be no Loss of Time on our Part, but all Care and Diligence used to prevent the Time, if it could be possible, in the Rendition of your Garrisons and marching of our Forces, which shall be all, both Horse and Foot, on this Side *Tyne* on *Friday* next, the 19th Instant.

And whereas your Lordship renews your Desires that the Army may pay for whatsoever they take in the Country; as I did, by former Orders, strictly prohibit the levying any Cesses after the Removal of the Army from the general Quarters, and the demanding of Money by way of Advance, so shall special Care be had that nothing be taken but necessary Entertainment for subsisting on the March untill the Money be distributed; and no Cause of Offence be given, but a fair and friendly Part observed, to the maintaining and strengthening of the happy Union between the Kingdoms, which is the constant Desire of

Your humble Servant,

LEVEN.

Feb.

Feb. 2. This Day was read a Letter from the Scots Commissioners residing in London, relating to the Report of the King's intended Escape, and the Charge against the Scots General, &c. of being privy thereto.

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.
February.

For the Right Hon. the SPEAKER of the House of PEERS pro Tempore, to be communicated to both Houses of Parliament.

Worcester-House, Feb. 1, 1646.

Right Honourable,

WE having received from the Committee of both Houses the Examination of Tobias Peaker, with some other Papers, forthwith sent the same to the Committee of the Parliament of Scotland at Newcastle; who, having taken the Business into their serious Consideration, as highly reflecting upon our Armies in the North of this Kingdom and Ireland, and upon some Persons of known Integrity; having also spent two Days in the Examination thereof, and of such Persons as they had the Conveniency to examine upon the Place, have returned unto us the inclosed Papers to be communicated to the Honourable Houses with their own Letter. By all which it may appear how little Credit is to be given to the Informations of Tobias Peaker, who is also contradicted by the Earl of Leven in that Particular which concern'd his Excellency; whose Declaration, we trust, will weigh very much with the Honourable Houses, and that no Jealousies shall be entertained after such real Testimonies of our Army's Faithfulness to the Nation, and their friendly Parting. We are

Your Lordship's most humble Servants,

CHA. ERSKINE.
HUGH KENNEDY.
RO. BARCLAY.

308 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 22. Car. 1. *The Letter from the SCOTS COMMISSIONERS at Newcastle, address'd to both Houses, with the Papers referred to in the foregoing.*

1646.

February.

Right Honourable,

Jan. 22, 1645.

‘ **H**AVING seen the Examination of one *Tobias Peaker*, which, by your Order, was communicated to our Commissioners at *London*, and their Paper of the 12th of this Month, given in to both Houses, we found it necessary, for the clearing of a Business of so great Consequence, which reflected so much upon this Army, the Scots Army in *Ireland*, and some Chief Officers of known Integrity, to make as exact a Trial of the Business as we could; which we have done, and sent up the Examinations to our Commissioners, to be communicated to your Lordships. The Lord-General doth also declare to us, that he never did communicate any such Letter to Mr. *Murray* as is mentioned in the said *Peaker's* Examination; nor ever did tell Mr. *Murray* that he had any Letter in Ambush for him.

‘ This Army hath given so many undeniable Testimonies of their Fidelity to this Cause, and constant Affection to the Parliament of *England*; and we find the Persons, mentioned in the said *Peaker's* Examination, so innocent of the Things laid to their Charge, that we confidently expect that the Honourable Houses will not give such Countenance to the Information of a Fellow, who, upon Examination, appears to be infamous, and a Thief; as, by proceeding in this Business, to seem to give Credit to his Information, which so much asperses this Army, whose Integrity hath ever appeared, notwithstanding of any such false Informations; especially at such a Time as this, when, after all their Actions and Sufferings, they are now in marching home according to the Treaty; which, God willing, shall be, on our Part, punctually perform'd: And

‘ And as we have been careful in every Thing to An. 22. Car. I.
 ‘ give all just Satisfaction to the Honourable Houses, 1646.
 ‘ so shall we continue constantly to shew our De-
 ‘ fires to keep and strengthen a good Correspon-
 ‘ dency betwixt the Kingdoms, and to witness
 ‘ that we are *Your Lordships humble Servants,*

LEVEN,	R. FREEBAIRN,
LAUDERDALE,	A. HEPBURN,
LOTHIAN,	G. FAIRLAND,
BALCARRAS,	M. GLENDINNING.

EXAMINATION of Mr. LEVIT before the Right
 Honourable the COMMITTEE residing with the
 Scots Army at Newcastle.

Newcastle, Jan. 21, 1649.

‘ THIS Examinant saith, That he never deli-
 ‘ vered 100 l. to *Tobias Peaker*, nor any o-
 ‘ ther Sum of Money; nor ever put any Money
 ‘ under Mr. *Murray*’s Bed. He adds, That he
 ‘ never spoke with the *Dutch* Captain: That ne-
 ‘ ver any Discourse past betwixt him and *Peaker*
 ‘ concerning the King’s Intention to go away, or
 ‘ his sitting up late the 25th of *December*: But af-
 ‘ firms, That the King went to Bed that Night at
 ‘ his ordinary Hour; and that he never knew or
 ‘ heard any Thing of the King’s Intention to
 ‘ escape: That he knew nothing of *Peaker*’s go-
 ‘ ing out of Town; but certainly understood him
 ‘ to be discontented; and that *Peaker* had said to
 ‘ him, *Was ever Man so abused as to be put out*
 ‘ *of his Place?*”

WILL. LEVIT.

EXAMINATION of Sir ROBERT MURRAY.

Newcastle, Jan. 21, 1649.

‘ THIS Examinant saith, He never knew any
 ‘ Letter sent by Mr. *Murray* to the Gover-
 ‘ nor at *Hartlepool*; more than by the Report of
 ‘ *Tobias Peaker*’s Information: That he sent

310 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.

February.

Peaker not long ago a Horse, as, upon divers Occasions, to others of Mr. *Murray's* Servants; but he neither asked him, nor knew whither he was going: And that he had been with Mr. *Murray* at the Gate oftner than once; but neither remembered the Time, nor that they ever had any particular Discourse. That he never spoke with the *Dutch* Captain.

R. MURRAY.

EXAMINATION of CORNELIUS THECY, Captain of the *Dutch Ship* lying in the River Tyne.

Newcastle, Jan. 21, 1648.

THIS Examinant says, That he knows Mr. *William Murray*; but that he knows no Body by the Name of *Tobias Peaker*: That he never received any Message from Mr. *Murray*; but that one Mr. *Murray* asked him, If he would carry a Gentleman to *Holland* that the King meant to send; and that his Answer was, He would willingly do so, when his Ship was ready, and the Wind served; but that Mr. *Murray* did never insinuate to him any Thing of the King's going beyond Seas no more than the Child that was born Yesterday.

That he further saith, He never received any Money from Mr. *Murray*, nor from any other in his Name: That on the 25th of *December* no Creature laid on board of his Ship, as sent from Mr. *Murray*, as he had formerly avouched to the Mayor of *Newcastle*: And that no Man nor Woman in *England* ever ask'd him if he might go to Sea, Night or Day, notwithstanding any Opposition from *Tynmouth* Castle; nor did any Body else offer to speak to him such a Thing.

CORNELIUS THECY.

EXAMINATION of Mr. WILLIAM MURRAY.

Newcastle, Jan. 21, 1648.

THIS Examinant says, That he knows *Tobias Peaker*: He never sent him, nor any other, to bid the Captain of the *Dutch Ship*

to

' to come to his Lodgings: That he never
 ' sent *Tobias Peaker*, nor any other, to deliver
 ' 100 *l.* or any other Sum of Money, to the
 ' *Dutch Captain*; and that he never gave him
 ' any himself; nor Mr. *Levit*, nor no other by
 ' his Order: That he never heard any Discourse
 ' betwixt *Tobias Peaker* and Mr. *Levit*, concern-
 ' ing the King's sitting up late on the 25th of
 ' *December*: That he once asked the *Dutch Cap-*
 ' tain, if he would transport a Gentleman whom
 ' the King intended to send into *Holland*; and
 ' that the Captain's Answer was, He would, when
 ' he was ready and Wind served: That he never
 ' spoke any Thing to *Peaker* of the King's Inten-
 ' tion to go beyond Seas: That he never spoke to
 ' him of *Ireland*, or *Montrose* siding with the King:
 ' That he never told *Toby*, Because the Wind was
 ' out of the Way they must seek another Course:
 ' That upon the King's Desire to know if there
 ' might be a Ship had to send one beyond Seas, he
 ' had sent *Toby* to *Hartlepoole*, with a Letter to the
 ' Governor, to inquire for one; but that he knows
 ' not whom the King meant to send in her: That
 ' the Earl of *Leven* never spoke to him any Thing
 ' of that Letter: That he never rebuked *Toby* for
 ' betraying the King or discovering his Intentions,
 ' or any such Purpose; but once in the Presence-
 ' Chamber he chid him for not giving him an Ac-
 ' count of his Money, and not paying, according
 ' to his Directions, several Persons considerable
 ' Sums of Money delivered to him for that Effect:
 ' That he never sent *Toby* to the *Dutch Ship*; nor
 ' ever desired the Captain, by him or any other, to
 ' victual his Ship: That he never spoke to *Toby* one
 ' Word concerning any Regiments, Troops, or
 ' Persons of the *Scots Army* standing for the King:
 ' And that he never mentioned to him the Name of
 ' *David Lesley*, whom he had not seen for divers
 ' Years, till after *Toby* was gone away from *New-*
 ' castle: That he had seen Sir *Robert Murray* di-
 ' vers Times at the Sign of the *Angel*; but never
 ' had

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.

February.

Ans. 22. Car. 1. ' had any Discourse with him there to his Re-
 1646. ' membrance.'

WILLIAM MURRAY.

February.

Feb. 3. The Lords took into Consideration the Examination of *Tobias Peaker*, and the Papers read Yesterday from the *Scots* Commissioners concerning him. They were ordered to be referred to a Committee of that House, who were to send for the said *Peaker* and examine him, and report the same to the Lords: In the mean Time he was to lie in Custody. Ordered also that these Papers be communicated to the House of Commons at a Conference.

Feb. 8. This Day came more News from *Newcastle*, by Letters, &c. read in the House of Peers, and were in *hæc Verba*:

To the Right Hon. the Earl of MANCHESTER,
 Speaker to the House of Peers pro Tempore.

My Lord,

Durham, Feb. 3, 1646.

A Letter from the Commissioners attending the King, concerning his Majesty's writing in Cyphers to the French Agent.

' UPON Monday last there fell out an Accident, whereof we think it very fit to give you this Account: One Mr. *Mungo Murray*, formerly his Majesty's Servant, but never in Arms, was permitted by us to take his Leave of the King in the Presence-Chamber; and, being called aside, had a Paper put into his Hand by his Majesty; which being observed, upon Examination he denied it not, but willingly suffered the said Paper to be taken out of his Pocket, wherein were written some Lines all in Cyphers, and directed to be by him delivered to the French Agent. Hereupon, tho' by his own earnest Protestation, and by his Ingenuity in not denying it, we had Reason to believe he was surprized by the King; and altho' we had no express Power of imprisoning contained in our Instructions, yet for deterring others from the like Boldness, and
 ' for

‘ for preventing of Inconveniences, we thought
 ‘ fit to take upon us to commit him ; but the Earl
 ‘ of *Lothian* giving a very good Testimony of him,
 ‘ and undertaking for his Appearance at the Com-
 ‘ mand of the Parliament ; and considering in all
 ‘ likelihood he had no Foreknowledge of his Ma-
 ‘ jesty’s Intentions, or any other Design therein,
 ‘ we thought fit, after two Days Imprisonment, to
 ‘ releafe him, upon Condition to render himself
 ‘ when and where you shall appoint.

AN. 22. CAR. 1
 1646.
 February.

‘ The King came this Day from *Newcastle* to
 ‘ *Durham*, where he arrived by two of the Clock
 ‘ in the Afternoon ; and the Reason why we take
 ‘ no long Journeys is to avoid such Inconveniences
 ‘ as possibly might befall us in travelling late in the
 ‘ Evening.

‘ Some of the *Muscovia* Company have impor-
 ‘ tuned us for Leave to move his Majesty for a
 ‘ Letter, in his Name, to the Emperor of *Russia*,
 ‘ the Effect whereof is as follows :

1. ‘ *An Excuse for his Imperial Majesty’s Mes-
 ‘ sengers not having Access to the King, by reason of
 ‘ the Hostilities in this Kingdom.*

2. ‘ *To condole the Death of the late Emperor.*

3. ‘ *To congratulate the happy Enthronement of
 ‘ his Son the present Emperor.*

4. ‘ *To desire a Continuation of the antient League
 ‘ and Amity betwixt the two Crowns.*

5. ‘ *To desire the Resettlement of the antient Pri-
 ‘ vileges formerly enjoyed by the English Nation.*

6. ‘ *To recommend the Person of Spencer Bret-
 ‘ ton, now resident at the Emperor’s Court, to be
 ‘ Agent there, untill his Majesty shall send his Am-
 ‘ bassador.*

‘ The Letter proposed, being the same in Sub-
 ‘ stance which the Parliament have expressed by
 ‘ two severall Letters to his Imperial Majesty, the
 ‘ Company desires that the King’s Majesty will be
 ‘ graciously pleased to sign the same : And they
 ‘ alledge it to concern the Trade very much, and
 ‘ to be no other than what hath been permitted
 ‘ in

An. 22. Car. I.

1645.

February.

‘ in like Case to the *Turky Company*; but we have
 ‘ referred them to your further Directions; which
 ‘ shall be also observed by,

My Lord,

Your Lordships humble Servants,

PEMBROKE and
 MONTGOMERY,
 B. DENBIGH,
 E. MONTAGUE.

P. S. ‘ We send your Lordships here inclosed
 ‘ the Copy of the Cypher we took from Mr. *Murray*.
 ‘ ray.’

Orders thereupon.

The Lords ordered that it be referred to the
 Earls of *Lincoln* and *Warwick*, and the Lord *Whar-*
ton, to discover the above-mentioned Cypher; and
 that the Letter from the Commissioners be commu-
 nicated to the House of Commons: Which being
 done accordingly,

Feb. 9. The Commons sent up a Draught of an
 additional Instruction for *Philip* Earl of *Pembroke*,
 and the rest of the Commissioners that had the
 King in Custody; which was to this Effect:

‘ You are to take special Care to prevent the
 ‘ secret conveying of any Letters, Papers, or Mes-
 ‘ sages, to or from the King; and for that Purpose
 ‘ you, or any three of you, have hereby Power to
 ‘ examine and search all or any such Persons or
 ‘ Packets as you shall think fit. And also to se-
 ‘ cure and restrain the Persons of such as you shall
 ‘ thereupon see Cause, untill the Pleasure of both
 ‘ Houses of Parliament be known; and you are
 ‘ also, from Time to Time, to give Notice to
 ‘ both Houses of your Proceedings therein.’

The Lords agreed to this Instruction, and de-
 clared their Approbation of *Mungo Murray*’s Com-
 mitment by the Commissioners.

Two

Two more Letters from *Newcastle* were read this Day; one from the Earl of *Stamford*, the other from the Parliament's Treasurers; but contain nothing, save informing the Houses that the other 100,000*l.* was paid to the *Scots*, that they were all marched homewards, and had returned back the *English* Hostages who were treated nobly by them.

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.
February.

Feb. 12. Further Intelligence from the North was communicated to the Lords in the following Letters:

To the Right Honourable the SPEAKERS of both Houses of the Parliament of England.

Edinburgh, February 5, 1647.

Right Honourable,

WE have received your Lordships Letter, dated at *Westminster* the 27th of *January* last. As this Kingdom hath, by their Engagement in this Cause, and their faithful Prosecution of it, manifested their Affection to their Brethren of *England*, having had many Experiences of the brotherly Kindnesses of the Parliament of *England*, we hope your Lordships will fully agree with what has been declared and desired by us in our late Address.

Our Army is now on their March homeward, many of the Garrisons are already delivered, and what remains on our Part shall punctually be performed; and, as soon as we have disbanded our Forces, excepting such as we are necessitated to keep up for suppressing these fresh Rebels and their Adherents, who have for a long Time infected this Kingdom, we intend to authorize Commissioners to join with those that shall be sent by both Houses of the Parliament of *England*, for obtaining his Majesty's Assent to the Propositions, and for agreeing to what shall be further propounded or thought necessary for preserving and strengthening the happy Union of these

A Letter from the
Scots Parliament
to both Houses.

316 The Parliamentary History

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.
February.

these Kingdoms; the perpetuating whereof shall
ever be the earnest Desires and constant Endeavours of

Your affectionate Friend and Servant,

CRAWFORD and LINDSAY.
Presid^r Parl.

Feb. 13. A Letter from the Earl of *Pembroke*, with a Declaration inclosed, was read, viz.

For the Right Hon. the Earl of MANCHESTER, Speaker of the House of PEERS pro Tempore.

Leeds, Feb. 9, 1646.

My Lord,

Another from
the Commission-
ers with the
King.

BY your Lordship's Letter you have been pleased to give us Notice of their Lordships Approbation and Acceptance of our Endeavours to serve them: We desire that, by the same Hand, our humble Thanks may be returned to their Lordships, with this Assurance, that from so great a Favour we cannot but receive Encouragement to improve our Services to the best Advantage.

The King came to *Ripon* on *Saturday Night* last, where he rested upon the Lord's Day. A little before Dinner many diseased Persons came, bringing with them Ribbons and Gold, and were only touched, without any other Ceremony. We are now at *Leeds*, where Hundreds attend in the same Manner; and for that it may be of very dangerous Consequence to his Majesty's Person and Safety, and otherwise inconvenient, we have agreed to publish a Declaration, the Copy of which we here inclosed send you; and if you shall think fit of any other Way to prevent this Inconveniency, none shall be more ready to obey your Commands than

Your Lordship's faithful Servants,

PEMBROKE and B. DENBIGH,
MONTGOMERY, ED. MONTAGUE.

The

The DECLARATION referred to in the foregoing An. 22. Car. I.
Letter. 1646.

‘ **W** Hereas divers People do daily resort unto the Court, under Pretence of having the Evil; and whereas many of them are in Truth infected with other dangerous Diseases, and are therefore altogether unfit to come into the Presence of his Majesty: These are therefore strictly to require and charge all Persons whatsoever, which are diseased, not to presume hereafter to repair unto the Court, wheresoever it be, upon Pain of being severely punished for such their Intrusion; and we do further require all Sheriffs, Mayors, Bailiffs, Constables, and other Officers to see this our Order published.

February.
Their Declaration against Persons coming to be touched by his Majesty for the Evil.

Dated at Leeds the 9th Day of February, 1646.
By Command of the Commissioners appointed by both Houses of Parliament to attend the King's Person at Holdenby. DANIEL ERLE,
Secretary to the Commissioners.

Feb. 15. About this Time the Populace began to shew a Dislike against the Excise, which they had long groaned under: And this Day a great Tumult happened in London, the Mob rising in Smithfield, pulled down the Excise-Office, and did more Mischief; but, by the Vigilance of the City Magistrates, they were suppressed, many of them taken and sent to Prison: However, on this Warning, the Commons thought proper to frame a Declaration of the Grounds for laying and continuing the Excise, which will fall better in the Sequel.

Feb. 18. A Letter was read from the Earl of Pembroke, and the other Commissioners, with Advice that the King was come to Holdenby; address'd to the Speaker of the House of Peers.

My Lord, Holdenby, Feb. 16, 1646.

‘ **B**Y the Providence of God, which hath gone along with us from the first Step to the last Advice of his be-
‘ in this Journey, the King is come well to Hol-
‘ denby.

318 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 22. Car. I.

1646.

February.

denby. Col. Greaves, who commanded the Con-
voy, has managed his Trust with great Care and
Vigilancy, and hath performed extraordinary Du-
ty in his own Person, which we hold ourselves
obliged to represent unto you.

We have here 900 Horfe and Dragoons, which,
quartering within a little Compafs, cannot but
be very burthensome to the Country; and there-
fore intreat your Lordship to move the Houses to
give special Directions for their Pay. We are
here now, after five Weeks spent in that Service,
attending their further Orders, according to the
Commands laid upon us in our first Instructions.

Our Hope and earnest Desire is, that our Em-
ployment being come to this Period, you will
please to move their Lordships to enjoin us to
wait upon them at *London*; which we shall ac-
knowledge a very great Favour done to,

My Lord,

Your Lordship's faithful Servants,

PEMBROKE and
MONTGOMERY,
B. DENBIGH.
ED. MONTAGUE.

The Sentiments
of the Contem-
porary Writers
upon the Charge
against the Scots
of selling the
King.

We have now gone through our Account of
the King's throwing himself into the Hands of the
Scots Army, and their delivering up his Majesty's
Person to the Parliament's Commissioners, as it
stands in the *Journals* of both Houses. A Crisis
of *English* History much canvassed, but, in our O-
pinion, hitherto not well understood. Every one
knows that the *Scots* Nation have been, and are
still, blamed for giving up their natural-born King,
who had fled to them for Protection, into the
Hands of his Enemies. Nay some do not stick to
say that he was actually sold by them. *English*
Historians, as well as *English* Tradition, are not
wanting to stigmatize the *Scots* Nation with this
Piece of Merchandize. Therefore, before we enter
upon

upon other Matters, we shall exhibit the Sentiments of the several Contemporary Writers relating to this Transaction.

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.

February.

Mr. *Whitlocke*^b tells us, ' That on the 24th of September, a new Committee was appointed of both Houses, to treat with the *Scots* Commissioners about disposing of the King's Person ; which was purposely named to carry on the Design intended : That the latter End of December there began to be an Understanding between some here and the *Scots*, for their delivering up of the King's Person to the Parliament : That the King was much displeased with that Nation for delivering him up ; and that he also disliked going to *Holdenby* on account of the Air : But that the *Scots* laid hold of his Majesty's refusing to take the Covenant and to sign the Propositions, for their Excuse. He adds, That the Parliament at *Edinburgh* had voted, ' If ' his Majesty should have Thoughts of coming thither at that Time, he having not subscribed the Covenant, nor satisfied the lawful Desires of his Subjects in both Nations, they had just Cause to fear the Consequences of it might be very dangerous, both to him and to these Kingdoms ; which they desired might be timely prevented.' And ' that if they should now receive his Majesty, it would be contrary to their Engagements with *England* and the Treaties.' And that a *Scots* Lord told the King, If he did not sign the Covenant, they must give him up to the Parliament of *England*, and it would fall heavy upon him and his Posterity.'

In another Place this Memorialist informs us, ' That the aforesaid Vote was carried, in the *Scots* Parliament, but by two Voices. That the King asked the *Scots* Commissioners, *Why he might not go into Scotland, when he came to their Army for Protection?* And they answered him, ' Because he refused to sign the Covenant and Propositions ; therefore they were to deliver him to the Commissioners of the Parliament of *England*, who

were

^b *Memorials*, p. 227, 235, 238, 240.

An. 22. Car. 1. ^c were come to attend him to *Holdenby-House*.¹—
1646.

February.

That the King desired the *English* Commissioners, who had then received him from the *Scots*, to send to the Parliament, that he might have two Chaplains, who had not taken the Covenant, to go with him to *Holdenby*. And, on their Refusal, amongst some other Discourse, the King, as was reported by some, said, *That he was bought and sold.*

Lord *Clarendon* begins with telling us ^c, ‘ That when the *Scots* had secured the Peace and Quiet of their own Country, by getting the King to send positive Orders to the Marquis of *Montrose* for disbanding of his Forces, and transporting himself beyond Sea, which he obeyed: And when they had, with such Solemnity and Resolution, made it plain and evident that they could not, without the most barefaced Violation of their Faith and Allegiance, and of the fundamental Principles of the Christian Religion, ever deliver up their native King, who had put himself into their Hands, into those of the Parliament, against his own Will and Consent: And when afterwards they began to talk sturdily, and denied that the Parliament of *England* had Power, absolutely, to dispose of the Person of the King without their Approbation; to which the Parliament as loudly replied, That they had nothing to do in *England* but to observe their Orders; and added such Threats to their Reasons, as plainly shewed they had a Contempt of their Power, and would exact Obedience from them, if they refused to yield it. Yet, adds our Author, these Discourses were only kept up till they could adjust all Accounts between them, and agree what Price should be paid for the Delivery of his Person, whom one Side was resolved to have, and the other as resolved not to keep. Thus, says he, they agreed; and, upon the Payment of 200,000 *l.* in Hand, and Security for as much more, upon Days agreed on, the *Scots* delivered the King up into such Hands as the Parliament

ap-

^c *Clarendon's History of the Rebellion*, Vol. V. p. 34. 8vo Edit.

appointed to receive him. In this infamous Manner that excellent Prince was, in the End of *January*, given up by his *Scots* Subjects.

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.

February.

Sir *Philip Warwick*, a Member of this Parliament, but who had been expelled for taking part with the King, expresses himself thus.—

“d Whilst his Majesty was employed in Conferences with *Henderson* about the Order of Episcopacy, [a Circumstance we have already taken Notice of] the *Scots* knew so well how to value him, that if it be not admitted they sold him, it must be confessed, they parted with him for a good Price; for they were paid 200,000 *l.* upon their marching from *Newcastle*, and delivering up of that Town, as likewise *Berwick* and *Carlisle*; and were promised 200,000 *l.* more to be secured upon the Public Faith. But if the *English* Army had been left to themselves, and the *Presbyters* had not then been prevalent in Parliament, the *Independent* Party would soon have shortned the *Taylor's* Bill. And thus were extinguished, or thus vanished, those loud and public Assertions the *Scots* had made, That they would not do so base an Act, as to render up their Prince's Person, who was come to them for Safety in so great a Danger; and that this Act could not consist with their Duty or Allegiance, or Covenant, or with the Honour of their Army; it being contrary to the Law and common Practice of all Nations, in the case even of private Men; which *Loudon*, their Chancellor, publickly made Profession of at a Conference of the two Houses at *Westminster*. But at last Silver outweighed all these Considerations, and the King was delivered up into the Hands of the two Houses Commissioners, and brought to *Holdenby-House* in *Northamptonshire*, and denied his own Chaplains and Servants to be about him: A true *Presbyterian* Spirit.—If it be objected that the two last Historians express themselves with much Acrimony

VOL. XV.

X

on

d Memoirs of the Reign of King *Charles I.* London 1701,
p. 295.

322 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 22. Car. I. on the Subject, it must be remembered that they had both been great Sufferers.

1646.

February.

Another Writer, who lived in these unhappy Times, remarks ^d ‘ That the Propositions, sent to the King by the Parliament, were the same dethroning ones which they used to send, and therefore he would not assent to them. Nor did the *Scots* swallow them at first, but made some Exceptions against them, only, it seems, to make the Parliament perceive they meant not to put the King into their Hands *gratis*; so at last the Bargain was made between them, and upon Payment of 200,000 *l.* the King was put into the Hands of the Commissioners which the *English* Parliament sent down to receive him.’ He adds; ‘ That this Action bore the vile Complection of feigned Religion, very Covetousness, Cowardice, Perjury and Treachery.’

On the other Side, Mr. *Holles*, who appears, by the *Journals*, to have been a Teller almost in every Division of the House relating to the *Scots*, intirely acquits them from this infamous Charge. His Account of this Affair runs thus ^e:

‘ The *Scots* had Cause enough to have their Jealousy prompt them that it was not safe for them to depart with their Army, lay by their Swords, and leave standing in this Kingdom so great a Force, which they knew to be so ill affected to them, and might act to their Prejudice; and, the King being in their Power, perhaps force both him and the Parliament to a Peace disadvantageous to *Scotland*, and differing from those Grounds upon which, by the Kingdom of *England*, they were engaged in this Quarrel; or else make no Peace at all, but interpose (as *Cromwell* to the Earl of *Manchester*) to hinder it; and themselves govern by the Sword, not only to the Prejudice

^d The History of the Civil Wars of *England*, from the Year 1640 to 1660, by *Thomas Hobbes* of *Malmsbury*.

^e *Memoirs*, p. 63 to 69.

Of ENGLAND. 333

judice of Scotland, but ~~the King of England~~ — ~~as in the~~
The Scots had no Thoughts but of ~~laying down of Arms,~~ ~~calling the People, and all~~
Things, to revert into their old Country. ~~there-~~
fore they were willing to be gone and return into
their own Country, in Confidence that, after their
Departure, the Army under Sir Thomas Fairfax
should likewise presently be disbanded, since there
was no more need of any Army in the North. They
were willing to go. But then the Question was
If they would go or not, and how the Indians
would be disposed to march on, who had not been
paid for so many Months, ~~as the late~~
Commissioners gave in an Account of ~~their~~
Arrears. Here our Generals ~~the Independents~~
hoped they had them upon the Edge, and should
surely give them a Fall. Then they went in
some of their little Northern Brigades, as Mr. Bar-
ton, and others, to inform what they found they
had raised upon the Country, upon which they
conclude the Scots Army was in their Debt, and
therefore they would come to an Account with
them, which had been a sure Way to have kept
them in the Kingdom five or six Months longer.
But to help that, our great Pay-Masters said, The
Army should march away, and some Persons be
left behind to see all Accounts adjusted, which
had required very good Reasoning to have made a
Justice, especially to have appeared so to the late
Soldiers: For to have sent them away without
Money, and then asked the Country Man what
the Soldiers had taken, when he might say
what he thought good, the Soldier nor there to
answer for himself, and yet his Pay to be certainly
determined, would have been such a Measure.
But the Rhetorick had been, for Sir Thomas Fairfax
to have gone down with his Army, which should
have made it just, and easy, and every Thing,
for this was it they ~~the Independents~~ desired to
bring it to, as it was often moved and pressed on
them.

An. 22. Car. I.

1646.

February.

‘ At last the Well-wishers to Peace, with much ado, prevailed in the House, and it was carried to offer the *Scots* a gross Sum for all; so to part fair, and avoid the Delay and Disputes of an Account; to which they presently agreed. Then the Question was what Sum. Here again we had a strong Debate; for our Incendiaries hung by every Twig, sticking fast to their Principles to dissatisfy the *Scots*, and break with them, if possible, upon any Point; pretending the Poverty of the Kingdom and the great Sums the *Scots* had raised; and therefore they would give but 100,000 *l.* which they knew was all one with a hundred Shillings, as to the satisfying of the Soldiers for marching away. In the End, after many Debates in the House, and Passages to and again with the *Scots* Commissioners, the lowest Sum that could be agreed unto by the Commissioners was 400,000 *l.* two in hand, and the other two after some Time; with a Protestation of theirs, that the Army would not be satisfied with less, nor enabled to march, which was Motive enough for these Men to deny it; for if they could have wrought the Dissatisfaction of the Army, so as to have refused to go, it was where they would have it. Whereupon it was opposed by them with all the Power they had; but in the End the better Part, that is the moderate Party, who were the Peace-makers, those that laboured to keep Things even and fair between the two Kingdoms, carried it; and the Sum was voted, and all Things agreed upon, tho’ with Difficulty; (for they fought it out and lost it by Inches) then the *Scots* declared they would march out by such a Day.

‘ Yet had our *Bouteefeus* one Hope left, which was to quarrel at last about the Person of the King; believing the *Scots* would certainly have taken his Majesty with them into *Scotland*. This they knew had been Ground sufficient, and would have engaged all *England* against them, giving a Confirmation to all the Jealousies formerly raised, and occasioned

occasioned a Thousand more; and had certainly more advantaged the Designs of those who thirsted after the Destruction of the King first, the *Scots* next, and then all such as desired Peace within this Kingdom; and have made them a smooother Way to their damnable Ends, the altering of the Government, and bringing in a Confusion both in Church and State, than any Thing that could have happened; and the two Kingdoms had been together in Blood, the Author of the Mischief undiscovered, masked over with the glorious Pretences of zealously vindicating the Honesty and Interest of *England*, and every Breach of Covenant and Treaty in this Cause; which made them with so much Peremptoriness and Incivility, and in Truth Injustice, demand that the *Scots* would deliver up his Majesty, who had an equal Interest in his Royal Person with the Kingdom of *England*, he being equally King of both; and an equal Interest in the closing and binding up the unhappy Differences which were between him and both his Kingdoms, they having been engaged in that Quarrel at the Entreaty of *England*; and made up together an intire Body with *England*, as is before shewed, for the Prosecution of it: Therefore they had no more Reason to trust us with the King than we had them, and as much were they concerned in all that related to his Majesty's Person; so as they had Ground enough to have disputed it, and out of that Hope was it pressed by the others. But the Wisdom of the *Scots* Nation foresaw the Inconveniences which must have necessarily followed, had they been positive at that Time, how they had played their Enemies Game to their own Ruin, and even Ruin to his Majesty: Therefore they made for him the best Conditions they could, that is for the Safety and Honour of his Person; and, to avoid greater Mischiefs, were necessitated to leave him in *England*; and so marched away, which they did in *February* 1646.

Here then the very Mouth of Iniquity was stopped, Malice itself had nothing to say to give

An. 22. Car. 1. the least Blemish to the Faithfulness and Reality
 1646. of the Kingdom of *Scotland*, and the Clearness of
 February. their Proceedings; their Zeal for Peace, without
 Self-seeking and Self-ends, to make Advantage of
 the Miseries and Misfortunes of *England*.'

Mr. *Rushworth* acts in this Affair as a Collector only, making few or no Reflections on the Conduct of the *English* and *Scots* at this particular Crisis; for, after giving a Copy of a Letter from the Parliament of *Scotland* to that at *Westminster*, to which a Declaration from that Kingdom was subjoined^a, containing, as he remarks, their full Consent to the delivering up the King, this Historian proceeds to tell us^b, 'That the Commissioners who were to receive the King came to *Newcastle*, on the 23d of *January*, to whom his Majesty gave the Honour of kissing his Hand; and the Earl of *Pembroke* told his Majesty, They were commanded by both Houses of Parliament to attend him to *Holdenby*; at which his Majesty did not seem at all surprized, but inquired how the Ways were.

'On the 28th of *January* the *Scots* Lords being all with his Majesty, he told them, He had often desired to go into *Scotland*; that he came into their Army for Protection, and had it, but now perceived they were not willing he should go to *Edinburgh*; and they being to deliver up the Garrisons, he desired to know how they would dispose of him; and for that End required them to withdraw, and consider to whom they would deliver him, which they did; and coming in again, they told his Majesty, That they had considered of his Speech; and that since his Majesty had refused to take the Covenant and sign the Propositions, they were to deliver him to the Commissioners of both Houses of Parliament of *England*, who were come to attend him to *Holdenby*.

'On *Saturday* the 30th of *January* the *Scots* marched out of *Newcastle*, *Skippon* took Possession
 of

^a These Papers are already given at p. 280, & seq.

^b *Collections*, Vol. VI. p. 398.

of it, and the Parliament's Commissioners received the King into their Charge; soon after they set forwards with him to *Durham*, and so on to *Holdenby*, being met by the Way by Sir *Thomas Fairfax*, who kissed his Majesty's Hand, and, having conducted his Majesty through *Nottingham*, took his Leave very respectfully; and so his Majesty was brought to *Holdenby*, where he arrived on *Tuesday* the 16th of *February*.

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.
February.

And now, leaving it to the Reader's Judgment to determine, from the foregoing Extracts of the *Journals* of both Houses, how far these Writers have been led by Truth or Prejudice, we proceed to the subsequent Transactions of Parliament.

Feb. 19. Another Letter came from the Commissioners at *Holdenby*, with one inclosed in it from the King, which were both read in these Words:

*To the Right Hon. the Earl of MANCHESTER,
Speaker of the House of PEERS pro Tempore.*

My Lord, Holdenby, Feb. 17, 1646.

‘ **T**His Day the King delivered us a Letter to
‘ be sent from himself to both Houses, with
‘ Leave to read it, which we thought fit to excuse;
‘ and have here sent it inclosed, without Know-
‘ ledge of the Contents, holding it our Duty not
‘ to hinder any Intercourse betwixt his Majesty and
‘ the Houses.

‘ We earnestly desire their Lordships Directions
‘ for the future, which shall be carefully observed
‘ untill they shall be pleased to recall us from this
‘ Service; which we are bold to entreat as a spe-
‘ cial Favour from their Lordships, after so long
‘ a Journey and Attendance in the Service; where-
‘ in we have enjoyed ourselves only in our faithful
‘ En-

A Letter from
the Commission-
ers at Holdenby.

328 *The Parliamentary History*

AN. 22. CAR. 1. ^c Endeavours to give a good Account of the Trust
1646. ^c they repofed in,

February.

My Lord,

Your Lordship's moft faithful Servants,

PEMBROKE and
MONTGOMERY,
B. DENBIGH,
ED. MONTAGUE.

The Letter from the King, referred to in the foregoing, was as follows :

To the SPEAKER of the Houfe of PEERS *pro Tempore*, to be communicated to the Lords and Commons in Parliament affembled at *Westminster*.

Holdenby, Feb. 17, 1646.

The King defires
that fome of his
Chaplains may
attend him there,

Since I have never difsembled nor hid my Conscience, and that I am not yet fatisfied with those Alterations in Religion to which you desire my Consent, I will not lose Time in giving Reasons, which are obvious to every Body, why it is fit for me to be attended by some of my Chaplains, whose Opinions, as Clergymen, I esteem and reverence; not only for the Exercise of my Conscience, but also even for clearing my Judgment concerning the present Differences in Religion, as I have more fully declared to Mr. Marshall and his Fellow Minister; having shewed them that this is the best and likeliest Means of giving me Satisfaction; which, without it, I cannot have in these Things, whereby the Distractions of this Church may be the better settled; wherefore I desire that at least two of those Reverend Divines, whose Names I have here set down, may have free Liberty to wait upon me, for the discharging of their Duty to me according to their Function, viz. The Bishop of London ^a, the Bishop of Salisbury ^b, the Bishop of Peterborough ^c, Dr. Sheldon, Clerk of my Closet,
Dr.

^a Dr. William Juxon.—^b Dr. Brian Duppa.—^c Dr. John Towers,

Dr. Marfhe, *Dean of York*, Dr. Saunderson, Dr. An. 22. Car. I.
Bailey, Dr. Fuller, Dr. Hammond, Dr. Hey- 1646.
wood, Dr. Beal, Dr. Taylor.

CHARLES R.

February.

The Lords resolved to take this Letter of the King's into Consideration the next Morning. Notwithstanding which we do not find that they took any further Notice of it this Month; and though there were two or three Letters more sent to the Parliament, from their Commissioners at *Holdenby*, during that Time, yet they are not significant enough to be copied here. We shall therefore proceed with the Observations made, and delivered in to the House of Lords, by the Committee appointed to examine the Testimony of *Tobias Peaker*, the Witness who swore to the King's intended Escape in a *Dutch Ship* from *Newcastle*, viz.

To which the
Lords give no
Answer.

' That the Committee of Estates in the Kingdom of *Scotland*, in their Letter to the Houses, say, ' They had made as exact a Trial of the Business as they could, and that they find the Persons mentioned in *Peaker's* Examination to be innocent; and that he is an infamous Person, and a Thief.

Report from the
Committee relating to Tobias
Peaker's Information of the
King's intended
to escape.

' That not only Mr. *Murray* and Sir *Robert Murray*, but the *Dutch* Captain and Mr. *Levitt* do contradict all that is informed by *Peaker*.

' That General *Lesley* doth also contradict his Information: That *Peaker* doth directly contradict himself; for, in answer to the seventh Interrogatory, propounded to him by the Committee of this House, he saith, ' That he did not return to ' Mr. *Murray*, after Mr. *Murray* had told him ' that he had been examined by General *Lesley* ' about the Business.' And, in his Examination before, he said, ' That after Mr. *Murray* had ' charged him with divulging the Letter, and after ' he was acquainted that General *Lesley* had told ' Mr. *Murray* he had a Letter in Ambush for him,

' that

An. 23. Car. I.

1646.

March.

‘ that Mr. *Murray* dismissed him and appointed him to return within an Hour; and that accordingly he did return to Mr. *Murray*, and received further Directions from him.’

‘ That there is a clear Contradiction in his former Examination, where he saith, ‘ That the Regiment of the *Scots Army* which was at *Tinmouth* was sure for the King;’ and yet that Mr. *Murray* sent him to the *Dutch Captain*, to enquire whether he could go out in the Night, notwithstanding any Opposition from *Tinmouth Castle*. ’

‘ In Answer to the eighth Interrogatory, propounded by the Committee of this House, he cannot shew about what Time Mr. *Murray* told him that several Regiments of Foot of the *Scots Army* were for the King, and that there were good Hopes of Lieutenant-General *Lesley*. ’

‘ In Answer to the ninth Interrogatory, he confesseth that he brought away 40*l.* of Mr. *Murray*’s, and he gave an Account of it to the Mayor of the Town. ’

‘ In Answer to the tenth Interrogatory he confesseth, That he brought a Watch with him, which was Mr. *Murray*’s; but saith He gave it him a Quarter of a Year before.’

The Lords ordered that this Report should be taken into Consideration at their next Meeting; but we do not find any more Notice taken of it during the Remainder of this Month.

Proceedings in
relation to re-
ducing the Ar-
my.

March 4. An Ordinance for continuing the Payment of the Assessment for the Army under the Command of Sir *Thomas Fairfax*, was read a third Time, and debated in the House of Lords. And the Question being put, Whether to agree to this Ordinance as it was then read? it passed in the Negative. But the following Protest from some dissenting Lords is entered against this Vote:

‘ Their Lordships being sensible of the great Service done by the Army, and holding it just
‘ and

‘and honourable that the Officers and Soldiers
 ‘there should have Satisfaction before their Dis-
 ‘banding; and being very desirous the Country
 ‘should have Allowance for their free Quarter,
 ‘which the Army was necessitated to take for want
 ‘of their Pay; as also that the Kingdom might
 ‘be eased as much as may be by the discharging
 ‘of all unnecessary Forces, did, for these Ends,
 ‘desire that the said Ordinance might have been
 ‘passed, not knowing any other or better Means
 ‘of raising Money speedily for the said Purposes:
 ‘Therefore to clear themselves from the Inconve-
 ‘nieny which may arise by the not passing there-
 ‘of, their Lordships have entered this their Pro-
 ‘testation.’

An. 22. Car. I.
 1646.
 March.

NORTHUMBERLAND,	P. WHARTON,
SALISBURY,	NORTH,
KENT,	GREY of WARK,
NOTTINGHAM,	GREY,
HOWARD,	DE LA WAR.
SAY and SELE,	

March 5. A long Debate happened in the House of Commons on the Question, Whether the Forces to be kept up in the Kingdom of *England* should be commanded by Sir *Thomas Fairfax*? and, on a Division, 159 against 147, it was carried in the Affirmative. Mr. *Whitlocke* observes here, ‘That it was wondered at by some, this should admit of a Debate or Question at all.’

March 8. The Commons voted, That no Member of that House should have any Command in the Garrisons or Forces under Sir *Thomas Fairfax*: That there be no Officer above a Colonel: That they should all take the Covenant: That none who had borne Arms against the Parliament should be in Command: That they should all conform to the established Church. This last occasioned a Debate and a Division of the House, but was carried for it by 136 against 108.

Then

An. 22. Car. I.

1646.

March,

Then it was *resolved*, ‘That no profane Curser or Swearer, Drunkard or Whoremaster, or otherwise scandalous in Life or Conversation, shall be employed as an Officer in any of the Garrisons or Forces that are to be kept up in the Kingdom of *England*.’

The Business of reducing the Army had been debated, on the 19th *ult.* in the House of Commons; and the Question being put, Whether there should be a Number of Foot kept up, at the Pay of the Kingdom, more than what would be sufficient for the keeping of such Garrisons as should be continued? The House divided, and it passed in the Negative, 158 against 148. After which Vote the House proceeded to order the dismantling and slighting the Works and Garrisons of several Cities and Towns, many Castles and Forts, in *England, Wales, &c.* amounting, in all, to a very great Number.

March 8. The Reader must remember the King’s last Message to the Lords, from *Holdenby*, desiring he might have some of his Chaplains appointed to attend him; which the Lords hitherto had taken no Notice of: But this Day their Speaker presented to the House some Letters he had received from the Earl of *Denbigh*, &c. with another Letter inclosed from the King; which were read:

My Lord,

Holdenby, March 6, 1646.

‘WE received the Letter inclosed from the King, this Morning, which we thought fit to send, having heard nothing of your Dislike upon our sending the last; nor received any Directions, which were then, and are still, earnestly desired by

Your Lordship’s most humble Servants,

B. DENBIGH,
ED. MONTAGUE.

To

To the SPEAKER of the House of PEERS *pro* An. 22. Car. I.
Tempore, to be communicated to the Lords and
 Commons in the Parliament of England assembled at Westminster. 1646.
 March.

IT being now seventeen Days since I wrote unto you from hence, and not receiving any Answer from the King, to what I then desired, I cannot but now again renew the same unto you: And indeed concerning any Thing but the necessary Duty of a Christian I would not thus, at this Time, trouble you with any of my Desires; but my being attended with some of my Chaplains, whom I esteem and reverence, is that which is so necessary for me, even considering my present Condition, whether it be in relation to my Conscience, or a happy Settlement of the present Distractions in Religion, that I will slight divers Kinds of Censures rather than not obtain what I demand; nor shall I do you the Wrong as in this to doubt the obtaining of my Wish, it being totally grounded upon Reason; for desiring you to consider, not thinking it needful to mention, the divers Reasons, which no Christian can be ignorant of, for Point of Conscience, I must assure you that I cannot, as I ought, take into Consideration those Alterations in Religion, which have been, and will be offered unto me, without such Help as I desire; because I can never judge rightly of, or be altered in, any Thing of my Opinion, so long as any ordinary Way of finding out the Truth is denied me: But when this is granted me, I promise you faithfully not to strive for Victory in Argument, but to seek and to submit to Truth, according to that Judgment which God hath given me; always holding it my best and greatest Conquest to give Contentment to my two Houses of Parliament in all Things which I conceive not to be against my Conscience or Honour; not doubting likewise but that you will be ready to satisfy me in reasonable Things, as I hope to find in this Particular, concerning the Attendance of my Chaplains upon me.

Holdenby March 6,
 1646.

CHARLES R.

The

An. 22. Car. I.

1646.

March.

The Question being put, Whether their Lordships will allow any of that Number which the King desires; in his List, to go down to him to *Holdenby*, to reside there for twenty Days : It was resolved in the Affirmative. And the King's Letter was ordered to be sent down to the House of Commons.

Which is denied him.

The Lords also appointed a Committee of their House to draw up an Answer to his Majesty's Letter, according to the Sense of that House, That if the King thought fit to admit such of his Chaplains, as had taken the Covenant, they were inclined to give them Leave. But the Commons were more explicate than the Lords in this Affair; and absolutely voted, ' That no Persons should be employed about the Person of the King, in any Capacity, or be admitted to have Access to him, but such only as have continued with the Parliament and adhered thereto; and had testified their good Affections to the Parliament and their Cause, and had taken the National League and Covenant.

March 9. The Commons resolved that an Order formerly passed, giving Authority to Mr. *Rushworth* to license the Printing of Books be revoked. The Reason of this Resolution does not appear; but the House had the same Day given Orders to inquire out the Authors, Printers, and Publishers of some Pamphlets which had given Offence : And it is probable that these had been licensed by Mr. *Rushworth*, because the Order for this Inquiry immediately precedes the Order of Revocation.

March 12. The Commissioners of the Admiralty presented to the House of Lords, for their Approbation, a List of the Navy Royal, if it may be so called when under the sole Power of the Parliament, with the Names of the several Commanders to be employed as a Summer's Fleet, for the Safeguard of the Narrow Seas : But this being
very

very little different from what we gave in the Pro-An. 22. Car. I.
ceedings of the last Year^a, we pass it over.

1646.

March.

March 24. About this Time a Dispute arose between the two Houses, concerning the Quartering of Sir Thomas Fairfax's Army in the Eastern associated Counties. And a Conference being desired by the Lords on that Head, the Reasons following were drawn up by a Committee to be offered to the Commons, which being this Day reported and agreed to by the Lords, was delivered in Writing by the Earl of Manchester.

Gentlemen,

THE Lords have received a Petition from the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and Commons of the City of London; wherein as they do seasonably and fully declare their good Affections to the Parliament, together with their fixed Resolutions carefully to intend the Honour, Security, and Advantage thereof; so they do likewise express a great Sense of their present Pressures, by reason of the quartering of the Forces commanded by Sir Thomas Fairfax in those Parts adjoining near to the City: Neither is this resenting by them alone, but the County of Essex did some Days since, by Petition, make known unto their Lordships the Burthens and other Mischiefs that were likely to fall upon that County by the quartering of great Numbers of the Army upon them and the rest of the associated Counties.

The Lords having seriously considered these Petitions, do find it to be of very ill Consequence to have the Army quartered either in the associated Counties, or any Parts adjacent to the City of London.

First, 'Because the City of London, being the Place where the Parliament and all the Courts of Justice are kept, must of Necessity have a very great Concourse of People as an Addition to that numerous Body of their own settled Inhabitants: If, therefore, this City shall, by the near quarter-

ing

^a In our Fourteenth Volume, p. 23.

An. 22. Car. I.

1646.

March.

ing of the Army, be deprived of their usual Provisions and necessary Accommodations, it may give an Occasion to some to break that good Order, and interrupt that Government, which, in all these Times of great Distractions, hath been kept in a settled Quietness; which hath not only been a Security but an Advantage to the Parliament.

Next, ' In this Conjunction of Time, it may probably increase such Jealousies and Suspicions as may not suddenly be removed; most Men looking upon such Actions as these, which prove inconvenient to them, as Design rather than Matters of Necessity; and their Lordships express their Fears in this Particular, the rather, because they have received divers Informations that some Persons of the Army, in all Places where they come, do endeavour to disaffect the People to the present established Resolutions of the Parliament.

' They do likewise consider the great Assistance and Advantage that the Parliament hath had from the Eastern Associations, they having been faithful unto the Parliament from the first to the last; when divers others, either in whole or in part, have deserted and opposed the Parliament in this Cause. These Counties having been, during these Troubles, the Magazine of Provisions for the City and other Parts of the Kingdom, do now expect to be furnished from them with those Necessaries which are not to be had in that Plenty in other Counties, they being much wasted in their Stores of Corn and Cattle. It will therefore prove a Mischief in general to the whole Kingdom, if these Counties shall have their Stores exhausted by the quartering of an Army; which, by a provident and orderly Management and Use, might support themselves, and furnish others.

' Upon the whole Matter thus before them, their Lordships do think it necessary that the Forces commanded by Sir *Thomas Fairfax* should not quarter within the associated Counties, or any Parts near adjoining to the City of *London*: And seeing likewise that, by the great Blessing of God upon the

the Endeavours of the Parliament, and the Successes of their Armies, they now enjoy a Freedom from any Force maintained against them, they do hold it their Duty to do what in them lies towards the freeing the Kingdom from these Burthens that lye upon them; and therefore they press this as the most necessary Means tending to the Ease and Satisfaction of the Kingdom, That a Provision of Money may be made for the speedy paying and disbanding of our Armies (the Way of raising this they leave to you to consider); that so we may give a real and speedy Relief to the distressed Kingdom of *Ireland*, and keep such a competent Force within ourselves as may secure our Garrisons, and prevent the Designs of such, as, out of their ill Affections, should, at any Time, attempt to disturb the Peace and Happiness of the Parliament and Kingdom.

An. 22. Car. I.
1646.
March.

‘ Their Lordships do also take Notice of another Thing, which doth much obstruct the Proceedings of their House; which is, That their Messengers, whom they send upon Messages to the House of Commons, are made to attend so long, sometimes Days, before they can be admitted; which doth very much hinder Business, and seems to be some kind of Reflection upon the House of Peers: Their Lordships always have been careful to maintain all good Correspondency with the House of Commons; and not to do any Thing which might look like a Disrespect towards them: And they do desire and hope to find the same Care and Readiness in the House of Commons, in what concerns their Lordships.

March 25. The next remarkable Transaction of this Month is a Petition from some Officers of the Army to the Lords, which is the first we have met with presented from that Quarter. The Substance of it is modest enough; tho’, after they had once learned the Way, we shall find them petitioning in a quite different Strain very shortly.

AN. 23. CAR. I. *To the Right Honourable the LORDS in Parliament assembled,*

1647.

March.

The HUMBLE PETITION of COLONELS, LIEUTENANT-COLONELS, MAJORS, and other OFFICERS that have faithfully served the great Cause of the Kingdom, under the Authority of the Parliament,

Sheweth,

A Petition from
several Officers
of the Army to
the House of
Lords,

THAT your Petitioners having faithfully served you in the Maintenance and Settlement of Religion, according to the Tenor of the National Covenant taken by them, of the Liberty of the Subject, and of the Privileges of Parliament, in the Times of the Kingdom's greatest Exigence, which were the principal Ends for which they were at first engaged; they cannot but hold themselves bound in Honour and Conscience, in Concurrence with many others, to tender to your Honours Consideration such Things as they, in all Submission, conceive exceedingly conducing to the speedy effecting of the said Ends, together with their own sad and neglected Condition; humbly desiring your Honours favourable Construction of their good Intentions therein, with an opportune and timely Answer unto these ensuing Particulars, viz.

1. That the public Worship of God may speedily be settled according to the Word of God, and the Example of the best Reformed Churches.

2. That the Subject may have the Benefit of *Magna Charta*, and the *Petition of Right*, so far forth as may comport with the Necessities of the Kingdom.

3. That all Committees in the several Counties may be removed; and that the Treasurers and Sequestrators of the said Counties may be called to a speedy and strict Account, for the better Satisfaction and Ease of the Kingdom.

4. That such Officers as have served under any general Command, may have the Accounts of their

their Arrears speedily audited in *London*; and that a special Order may be issued to the several Committees of Accounts residing in other Counties, forthwith to audit the Accounts of such Officers as have been subservient to the Orders of the Committees of the said Counties.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
March.

5. That such Pay as shall appear due unto the said Officers, under the Hands of Committees of Accounts, according to the Establishment, may be forthwith paid unto them, with Interest; that the Ordinance upon the Bishops Lands, with the Security of the Excise, may be revived for the Discharge thereof; and that such Part as is respite on the Public Faith, may be discharged, with Interest, at the End of six Months, deducting the Surcharges of the several Counties; and that an Order may be issued to the said several Counties to bring in their Surcharge within the Time of three Months, or otherwise that they shall not be charged to our Accounts; that so all of us may not be utterly ruined, as some of us already are, by tedious and long Solicitations, nor your Justice blemished thro' our Necessities and Sufferings.

6. That all such Officers and Soldiers as have contracted any Debts since this War begun, in order to the carrying on of the Public Service, either by want of the Payment of their due Salary, or by reason of their own Disbursements, may have their Persons freed from all Process, Arrests, or Molestation untill their Arrears shall be discharged; and that then their Creditors shall be proportionably satisfied, and the said Officers left to the usual Course and full Power of the Law as formerly.

7. That an Act of Indemnity may be passed for all Officers and Soldiers, for such Actions as have been done by them in Reference to the Public Service since the Beginning of this War.

8. That all such Officers as have lost the Benefit of their Estates, and have disbursed divers Sums of Money for raising Men, Horses, Arms,

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.

March.

or Ammunition, or in the managing their public Trust, shall be considered for their said Losses, and allowed for the said Disbursements, upon just Proof thereof made before the Committees of Accounts; and that the said Committees shall have special Order given them to audit such Disbursements when they shall be brought unto them.

9. That not forgetting your Honours tender Care of the sad Condition of bleeding *Ireland*, and that nothing may be wanting on our Parts towards the promoting of so honourable and pious a Work, some of us have engaged ourselves already, and the rest are most ready to contribute their best Assistance thereunto, even as your Honours shall be pleased to command us.

And, in pursuance of a full Establishment of the Particulars aforesaid, as in your great Wisdoms shall be thought most convenient, your Petitioners do offer their utmost Service and Assistance, with their Lives and Fortunes,

And shall ever pray, &c.

T. ESSEX, Col.

RICHARD SANDYS, Col.

MAT. ALURED, Col.

FRANCIS GOFFE, Col.

NICH. DEVEREUX, Col.

JAMES MIDHOPE, Col.

THOMAS CARYL, Col.

THOMAS COVELL, Col.

JOHN BUTLER, Col.

JEREMIAH BAINES,

*Lieutenant-Colonel.*JAMES BAKER, *Lieu-**tenant-Colonel.*

ROBERT WILTSHIRE,

Lieutenant-Colonel,

WILLIAM FORCY,

W^m. WARNEFORD,*Lieutenant-Colonel.*

The Officers who subscribed this Petition were all called in again, and had for Answer, 'That the House gave them Thanks for their good Affections to them, and their Services to the Kingdom and Parliament; and they take it well concerning their Offer for *Ireland*: And as to their Arrears, their Lordships will do their Parts, and will take their Petition into Consideration.'

The

The same Day a Copy of this Petition was presented to the House of Commons by the same Officers, to whom the House sent out four of their Members with the following Answer: 'That, as to their Arrears, the House had and would take them into Consideration, with others, in such Manner as they should think fit, as well as their Desires of Employment. That as to the rest of the Petition, about the Management of public Affairs, it did not concern any Persons to give Instructions to the Houses therein; yet, in Consideration the Petitioners were Men that had done Service to the Parliament, and, in regard of their Professions, and that they might have done this merely out of Inadvertency, they were willing to pass it by.'—But we shall soon find that these sturdy Beggars, as they may very well be called who petitioned Sword in Hand, were not to be put by so easily.

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.

March.

And to the Commons.

The Proceedings and Motions in the Army about this Time, which gave so great an Alarm to the Parliament, were set on foot by the *Independents*, of which *Cromwell* was the Chief; and were a main Engine by which he afterwards attained to a higher Degree of Power in this Nation than any of her Kings. In order to illustrate this Matter, it will be necessary to observe that this General had a Son-in-Law, Commissary *Ireton*, as good at contriving as himself; and, at speaking and writing, much better: These two took Care to spread a Whisper through the Army, that the Parliament intended to disband them; to cheat them of their Arrears; and to send them into *Ireland*, to be destroyed by the Rebels in that Kingdom.

Both Houses greatly alarmed at the Proceedings of the Army.

This Report was easily credited by the Soldiery; some Regiments they knew were already sent over; and others invited and pressed by the Parliament to do the same: And, being enraged at this Usage, they were easily taught, by *Ireton*, to erect a Council amongst themselves, of two Soldiers out of every Troop and every Company, to consult for

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

March.

the Good of them all; to assist at a Council of War, and advise for the Peace and Safety of the Kingdom. These Men were stiled *Agitators*; and whatever Project *Cromwell* had a Mind to bring about, he had no more to do than put it into their Heads. The Effect of their first Consultation was, the taking the King from *Holdenby* and bringing him to the Army, as will be seen in the Sequel.—Thus much premised, we return to our *Journals*.

March 30. The House of Lords were informed, by some Officers who came to offer themselves Volunteers for the *Irish* Service, of a Petition handed about in the Army, to be signed and delivered to Sir *Thomas Fairfax*, their General; a Copy of which was shewn and read to the Lords in these Words:

*To his Excellency Sir THOMAS FAIRFAX, Knt.
General of the Parliament's Forces.*

*The HUMBLE PETITION of the OFFICERS and
SOLDIERS of the Army under your Command,*

Sheweth,

Who present a
Petition and Re-
presentation to
Sir Thomas Fair-
fax,

‘ **T**HAT, ever since our first engaging in this
‘ Service, for preserving the Power of the
‘ Kingdom in the Hands of the Parliament, we
‘ have, in our several Places, served them with all
‘ Faithfulness; and although we have lain under
‘ many Discouragements for want of Pay and other
‘ Necessaries, yet have we not disputed their Com-
‘ mands, disobeyed their Orders, nor disturbed
‘ them with Petitions; nor have there any visible
‘ Discontents appeared amongst us, to the Encou-
‘ ragement of their Enemies, and the Impediment
‘ of their Affairs; but have, with all Cheartfulness,
‘ done Summer Service in Winter Seasons, im-
‘ proving the utmost of our Abilities in the Ad-
‘ vancement of their Service: And seeing God
‘ hath now crowned our Endeavours with the End
‘ of our Desires, viz. the dispersing of their pub-
‘ lic

lic Enemies, and reducing them to their Obedience, the King being now brought in; our Brethren the *Scots* satisfied and departed the Kingdom; all Dangers seemingly blown over, and Peace in all their Quarters; we, emboldened by their manifold Promises and Declarations to defend and protect those that appeared and acted in their Service, do herewith humbly present to your Excellency the humble Representation of our Desires annexed; which we humbly beseech your Excellency to recommend, or represent, in our Behalf to the Parliament.

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

March,

And your Petitioners shall honour and pray for your Excellency.

The HUMBLE REPRESENTATION of the DESIRES of the OFFICERS and SOLDIERS of the Army under the Command of his Excellency Sir THOMAS FAIRFAX, presented first to his Excellency, to be, by him, represented to the Parliament.

I. **W**Hereas the Necessity and Emergency of the War hath put us upon many Actions which the Law could not warrant, nor we have acted, in a Time of settled Peace; we humbly desire that, before the Time of our Disbanding, a full and sufficient Provision may be made by Ordinance of Parliament, (to which the Royal Assent may be procured) for our Indemnity and Security in all such Services.

II. That Auditors, or Commissioners, may be speedily appointed and authorized to repair to the Head Quarters of this Army, to audit and state our Accounts, as well as our former Services in this Army; and that, before the Disbanding of the Army, Satisfaction may be given to the Petitioners for their Arrears; that so the Charge, Trouble, and Loss of Time, which we must necessarily undergo in Attendance for attaining of them, may be prevented (we having had Experience that many have been reduced to miserable Extremity, even almost starved for want

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

March,

‘ want of Relief, by their tedious Attendance);
 ‘ and that no Officer may be charged with any
 ‘ Thing in his Account that doth not particularly
 ‘ concern himself.

III. ‘ That those who have voluntarily served
 ‘ the Parliament in the late Wars, may not here-
 ‘ after be compelled, by Prefs or otherwise, to
 ‘ serve as Soldiers out of this Kingdom; nor those
 ‘ that have served as Horsemen may be compelled,
 ‘ by Prefs or otherwise, to serve on Foot in any
 ‘ future Case.

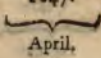
IV. That such in this Army as have lost their
 ‘ Limbs, and the Wives and Children of such as
 ‘ have been slain in the Service, and such Officers
 ‘ and Soldiers as have sustained Losses, or have been
 ‘ prejudiced in their Estates, by adhering to the
 ‘ Parliament, or in their Persons, by Sicknefs or
 ‘ Imprisonment under the Enemy, may have such
 ‘ Allowance and Satisfaction as may be agreeable
 ‘ to Justice and Equity.

V. ‘ That, till the Army be disbanded as afore-
 ‘ said, some Course may be taken for the Supply
 ‘ thereof with Monies, whereby we may be enabled
 ‘ to discharge our Quarters; that so we may not,
 ‘ for necessary Food, be beholden to the Parlia-
 ‘ ment’s Enemies, burthensome to their Friends,
 ‘ or oppressive to their Countries, whose Preserva-
 ‘ tion we always have endeavoured, and in whose
 ‘ Happiness we do still rejoice.’

Some other Evidences being also read, to prove
 that this Affair was warmly carrying on in the
 Army, the Parliament thought proper to be before-
 hand with them; and thereupon ordered the fol-
 lowing Declaration to be printed and published;
 and a Number of Copies thereof sent down in a
 Letter to Sir *Thomas Fairfax*.

Against which
 the Parliament
 issue a Declara-
 tion, and send it
 to that General.

‘ **T**HE two Houses of Parliament having re-
 ‘ ceived Information of a dangerous Peti-
 ‘ tion, with a Representation annexed, tending to
 ‘ put the Army into a Distemper and Mutiny, to
 ‘ put Conditions upon the Parliament, and obstruct
 ‘ the

the Relief of *Ireland*, which hath been contrived An. 23. Car. 1.
and promoted by some Persons in the Army; 1647.
they do declare their high Dislike of that Petition, 
their Approbation and Esteem of their good Ser-
vice who first discovered it, and of such Officers
and Soldiers as have refused to join in it; and that
for such as have been abused, and, by the Per-
suasions of others, drawn to subscribe it, if they
shall, for the future, manifest their Dislike of
what they have done, by forbearing to proceed
any further therein, it shall not be look'd on as
any Cause to take away the Remembrance and
Sense the Houses have of the good Services they
have formerly done; but they shall be still re-
tained in their good Opinion, and shall be cared
for with the rest of the Army, in all Things ne-
cessary and fitting for the Satisfaction of Persons
that have done so good and faithful Service; and
as may be expected from a Parliament so careful
to perform all Things appertaining to Honour
and Justice: And, on the other Side, it is de-
clared, That all those who shall continue in their
distempered Condition, and go on in advancing
and promoting that Petition, shall be look'd up-
on, and proceeded against, as Enemies to the
State, and Disturbers of the Public Peace.

This Declaration is expunged in the *Commons Journals*, and this Note put in the Margin, *Deletur per Ordinem tertii Junii, 1647. sedente Curia, H. E.*
The Reasons for which will appear in the Sequel.

April 2. The Lords received an Answer, from the General, to their Letter and the foregoing Declaration, which was also read as follows: ^a

For the Right Hon. the Earl of MANCHESTER.

My Lord, Walden, March 30, 1647.

I Received your Lordship's Letter, with the His Letter there-
Declaration of both Houses of Parliament, upon.
and

^a An Answer, much to the same Purpose, was wrote to the Speaker of the House of Commons, and is in *Rusworth*, Vol. VI. p. 445.

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.

April.

and shall take Care for sending Copies thereof
 into the several Regiments of the Army, for the
 speedy suppressing of the Petition; notwithstanding
 I had before commanded the Recall thereof,
 and given Orders for stopping any further Pro-
 ceedings in the same; assuring your Lordship, by
 the good Assistance of God, neither that Petition,
 nor any other Thing, should have come through
 my Hands to the Parliament, which should have
 the least Countenance of Disobedience, or appear
 in such a Dress as might not be fit for the Justice
 and Honour of that eminent Judicature to look
 upon: But not to trouble your Lordship any
 longer, I take Leave to rest

Your Lordship's most humble Servant,

THO. FAIRFAX.

Nothing material happening, we pass on to

April 9. When we find an Entry in the *Journals*
 of the following Letter and Examination, which
 shews what State the King was then in at *Holden-*
by, and how narrowly watched by his new Guar-
 dians.

A Letter from the Commissioners with the King
 at *Holdenby*.

For the Right Hon. the Earl of MANCHESTER,
Speaker of the House of Peers pro Tempore.

My Lord, *Holdenby, April 6, 1647.*

The Commis-
 sioners attending
 the King com-
 plain of Letters
 being privately
 given to him.

THIS Afternoon, as the King was riding
 from *Holdenby* to go to Bowls at *Boughton*,
 he alighted, as usually he hath done, at a narrow
 Bridge in the Way; at the End of which Bridge
 there stood one *Humphry Bosville*, who had serv'd
 formerly as a Major in his Majesty's Army, dis-
 guised in a Country Man's Habit, with an Angle
 in his Hand, as if he had been fishing; and pri-
 vately conveyed into the King's Hand Letters
 from

“ from the Queen and Prince, as more particularly
 “ appears in the Examination, which we send your
 “ Lordship here inclosed. We have committed
 “ him to the High Sheriff of this County, where
 “ he is to remain untill your Lordship’s Pleasure be
 “ known. In Discharge of our Duty we thought
 “ fit to do this, and to give your Lordship a speedy
 “ Account thereof, remaining

An. 23. Car. 1.
 1647.
 April.

Your Lordship’s most humble Servants,

B. DENBIGH,
 ED. MONTAGUE.

*The EXAMINATION of HUMPHRY BOSVILLE,
 some Time of Enford in Kent, and late Major in
 Col. Colepeper’s Regiment, in Lord Cleveland’s
 Brigade, taken before the Commissioners at Hol-
 denby, April 6, 1647.*

“ **T**HIS Examinant saith, That this present
 “ Day he did deliver to the King, as he was
 “ going to Bowls at Boughton, a Packet of Letters
 “ which he lately brought out of France from the
 “ Queen, with some inclosed from the Prince, as
 “ the King was walking over a narrow Bridge near
 “ a Mill:

“ That he heard it discoursed before he came
 “ over, that the Prince having a Desire, from a
 “ Sense he had of his Honour, to accompany the
 “ Duke of Orleans in his Wars, hath, in one of
 “ the Letters, wrote to the King for Leave so to
 “ do, the Queen Regent of France being otherwise
 “ unwilling to give her Consent:

“ That the Lord Colepeper did assure him, the
 “ said Major Bosville, before he came out of France,
 “ that the Letters he brought tended much to
 “ Peace; and which he is confident is true:

“ That he was at Newcastle the same Day the
 “ King was delivered into the English Commis-
 “ sioners Hands; and that he went thence into France,
 “ and carried with him a Letter from the King to
 “ the

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.

April.

‘ the Queen, which Letter he received from his Majesty in the Morning of the said Day;

‘ That it is about a Fortnight since he, the said *Bosville*, came into *England*; and that he hath lodged two Nights in a Fir Bush, and three Nights in a Country Man’s House near the Place, waiting for an Opportunity to deliver the said Letters:

‘ That he borrowed the said Country Man’s Cloaths for a Disguise, (but his Name or Dwelling he refused to tell) in which he delivered the said Letters, with an Angle in his Hand, as if he were fishing:

‘ That he was commanded to deliver the said Letters to the King’s own Hands, which he had undertook to do: And saith, That if he could not have found an Opportunity otherwise, he was resolved to deliver them to the King before the Commissioners, although he had died for it; conceiving the Letters conduced to Peace as aforesaid.

‘ This Examination being read unto him the said *Humphry Bosville*, he acknowledged the same to be true, but refused to set his Hand to it.’

By Order of the Commissioners,

J. BURROUGHS,
In the Absence of the Secretary.

The Messenger
of which is com-
mitted to New-
gate.

The Lords ordered the foregoing Letter and Examination to be communicated to the Commons, and that the said *Bosville* be sent for: He was afterwards committed to *Newgate*.

The Parliament were now busy for several Days, in stating the Accounts of their Army, fixing Rewards and more Pay on those Officers and Soldiers that would go into the Service of *Ireland*, &c. For which, and other Disbursements, they were forced to apply to the City for another Loan of 200,000*l.* at 8*l.* per Cent, and which they did

did not find the Citizens so ready to comply with, notwithstanding the great Credit the Parliament was then arrived at. The Security proposed was, the Remainder of the Bishops Lands, the Excise, Delinquents Estates, a new Ordinance for raising 60,000*l. per Mensen*, for the Service of England and Ireland, or any other Way the City could propose and they could grant. The Common Council referred this to a Committee of their own Members, to consider of it and draw up an Answer.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
April.

We find nothing else memorable about this Time in either House, except the following Letter of Thanks from Archbishop *Williams* for the Favour he had lately received from the Parliament, and which concludes that Prelate's Character.

April 20. A Letter from Dr. *Williams*, late Archbishop of York, was read.

To the Right Honourable, my very Noble Lord, EDWARD Earl of MANCHESTER, Speaker of the Most Honourable House of Peers.

Right Honourable,

‘ HAVING understood of an Ordinance passed your most Honourable House, for the pardoning of such Delinquencies^a as some Mistakes about the King's over-powering Parties in this Country had drawn me into, I humbly beseech your Lordship to present my most thankful Acknowledgement for their great Favour therein; as also of all other their gracious Respects which I have, without the least Merit of my own, extraordinarily enjoyed these Twenty-five Years; and may the great God of Heaven, speedily and plentifully, return them all into their noble Bosoms.

Archbishop Williams's Letter of Thanks to the Lords, for pardoning his Delinquency.

‘ And because I am now to live, or rather to die, dejected of all Power or Deference which might vindicate me from Contempt amongst a third Generation of Men from those I first conversed with-

^a See before in this Volume, p. 2, and 172.

An. 23. Car. 1. 1647. April. ' withall, and some *Pharaohs* peradventure which
' knew not *Joseph*; if their Lordships shall extend
' their Goodness so far, as to protect me in a just
' and fair Way, in relation to any Service I have
' heretofore endeavoured to perform to that most
' Honourable House, it would make me, as most
' careful not to profane so sacred a Favour, so to
' live and die their most obliged Servant and Vas-
' sal. Right Honourable Lord, I humbly take my
' Leave, and am

Your Lordship's

Most obliged Servant,

JOHN late Archbishop of York.

April 26. The Scots Commissioners, some of whom were still residing in London, sent a Letter to the Lords, to desire their Lordships to appoint a Committee to meet them, having something of Importance to communicate, which they had received from the Parliament of Scotland. A Committee of both Houses were ordered to meet them that Afternoon; and the next Day the following Papers were read in the House of Lords.

And first, the Letter from the Commissioners themselves.

Right Honourable,

April 26, 1647.

Letters from the Scots Commissioners, desiring a farther Application to the King for Peace, &c.

IN pursuance of the Commands of the Parliament of Scotland, we do herewith deliver their Letter to both Houses of Parliament, and are further to let your Lordships know, that they look upon it as a special Blessing from Heaven, that God hath been pleased so strictly to unite these Kingdoms for so good Ends by solemn League and Covenant; and as it hath been their constant Care, by all good Endeavours, inviolably to preserve that happy Union according to the Covenant and Treaties; and is their firm Resolution to cherish and entertain every Mean which may continue a good Correspondency, and promote a
' fur-

further Union; so the Experience they have of
 Love and Kindness for their Brethren of *England*,
 gives them Confidence that they will also con-
 tinue to lay hold on all Opportunities which may
 further and improve it; that so, by joint Con-
 sultations and Resolutions in what may concern
 mutual Interest and Safety, both may be strength-
 ened against the common Enemy, a happy Peace
 may be settled upon a sure Foundation, and a
 nearer Union attained and transmitted to Poste-
 rity; in all which we are ready, according to the
 Direction of the Parliament of *Scotland*, to con-
 tribute our best Endeavours.

An. 23. Car. I.
 1647.
 April.

*By Command of the Commissioners for the Parlia-
 ment of Scotland.*

JOHN CHIESLEY.

Next, the Letter from the *Scots* Parliament,
 mentioned in the foregoing.

Edinburgh, March 15, 1647.
Right Honourable,

THE Estates of the Parliament being at this
 Time employed about the Affairs of this
 Kingdom, the ordering whereof could not admit
 of Delay, have now taken Occasion to let your
 Lordships know that they have appointed their
 Commissioners to join with such as shall be war-
 ranted by you, to desire his Majesty's Assent to
 the Propositions of Peace; and to present to the
 Honourable Houses the earnest Desires of this
 Kingdom, that Reformation of Religion and Uni-
 formity therein, which was the chief Ground of
 our Engagement in the Cause, be speedily settled
 and put in Practice; that all good Means be used
 for obtaining a just and solid Peace; and that it
 is their hearty Resolution, and shall be their con-
 stant Endeavours, to keep a good Understanding,
 and to cherish and preserve the Union betwixt
 the Kingdoms; all which will be more particu-
 larly made known to your Lordships by the Earl
 of *Lauderdale*, and other Commissioners, who are
 ful-

To the Honourable the House of COMMONS assembled in Parliament,

AN. 27. CAR. 1.
1667.

The HUMBLE PETITION of the OFFICERS of the Army under the Command of his Excellency Sir Thomas Fairfax, on Behalf of themselves and the Soldiers of the Army,

Ap^{te}

Humbly sheweth,

‘ THAT your Petitioners being sensible of The Army’s Po-
‘ some Displeasure in this Honourable House sition to the
‘ against them, through some Misinformation Commons, wish-
‘ concerning the Carriage and Managing of a late Pe- cing their late
‘ tition in the Army, do humbly offer unto your Representation
‘ Consideration the Paper annexed, for the better to General Fay-
‘ clearing of our Intentions: Humbly desiring fax.
‘ your favourable Construction and Acceptance of
‘ what is therein contained, according to the Inte-
‘ grity with which it is presented.’

And your Petitioners shall pray, &c.

The VINDICATION of the OFFICERS of the Army under Sir Thomas Fairfax.

‘ THE Misrepresentations of us and our harm-
‘ less Intentions to this Honourable House,
‘ occasioning hard Thoughts and Expressions of your
‘ Displeasure against us, we cannot but look upon
‘ as an Act of most sad Importance; tending, in
‘ our Apprehensions, to alienate your Affections
‘ from your ever trusty and obedient Army; than
‘ which nothing can more rejoice your Adversaries,
‘ or minister greater Hopes of their Re-advance-
‘ ment: Nothing more discouraging to us, who
‘ should esteem it the greatest Point of Honour to
‘ stand by you till the Consummation of your
‘ Work, the Removal of every Yoke from the
‘ People’s Necks, and the Establishment of those
‘ good Laws you shall judge necessary for the Com-
‘ mon-wealth.

‘ Out of our Fears therefore of the Advantage
‘ that may be had therefrom, and that the Honour-
‘ VOL. XV. Z able

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

April.

able House may retain the same good Opinion of us they formerly had, (whom God hath hitherto bless'd with abundant Blessings) we humbly crave the Boldness to present unto you some Reasons, to clear our Proceedings in those Passages which we find most obvious to Exceptions in our Petition; whereby we hope to make it evident to you, that we did no more than what Necessity prompted us unto: That the Means that was used, and the Method we took was, as we conceived, most orderly and inoffensive, proceeding not in the least from Distemper, and aiming in no measure at Mutiny, nor in any wise to put Conditions on the Parliament; and that you will from thence discover the Corruptions of those Men's Hearts, who have been the evil Instruments of occasioning your late Declaration against us.

For our Liberty of petitioning, we hope this Honourable House will never deny it unto us; we know not any Thing more essential to Freedom, without which Grievances are remediless, and our Condition most miserable. You have not denied it to your Adversaries; you justified and commended it in your Declaration of the second of November 1642, in these Words, *It is the Liberty and Privilege of the People to petition unto us for the Ease and Redress of their Grievances and Oppressions, and we are bound in Duty to receive their Petitions.* And we hope, by being Soldiers, we have not lost the Capacity of Subjects, nor divested ourselves thereby of our Interests in the Common-wealth; that in purchasing the Freedoms of our Brethren, we have not lost our own. Besides, we can instance Petitions from Officers in the Earl of *Essex's* and Sir *William Waller's* Army, even whilst they were in Arms, which were well received by this Honourable House, with a Return of Thanks; and therefore we hope we shall not be considered as Men without the Pale of the Kingdom, excluded from the fundamental Privilege of Subjects; especially since we are

are conscious to ourselves of nothing that may
deserve the same.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.

April.

We have not till now appeared in petitioning,
though our Necessities have been frequent and
urgent; not that we doubted our Liberty, but be-
cause we were unwilling to interrupt you in your
other weighty Affairs. And we proceeded at this
Time with the greatest Care and Caution we
could of giving the least Offence, intending not
to present our Petition to this Honourable House,
but with the Approbation and by the Mediation
of his Excellency, our ever honoured General;
knowing how watchful our Enemies were to make
the hardest Construction of all our Actions, and
represent us to you and the World under such
Terms as may render us most odious.

You may see the Insidies of them by the false
Suggestions they have already made to you, of
our forcing Subscriptions: The Reasonableness
and Necessities of our Desires, whereof almost
every Soldier is abundantly sensible, will plead
the Vanity of such an Inforcement; especially
when it shall be known that the Petition took its
first Rise from amongst the Soldiers; and that
we engaged but in the second Place, to regulate
the Soldiers Proceedings, and remove, as near
as we could, all Occasion of Distaste.

For our Desires of Indemnity for such Actions
as (being not warrantable by Law in Time
of Peace) we were enforced unto by the Ne-
cessity and Exigency of the War, we are con-
fident this Honourable House will approve of it,
when you shall be informed that the Soldiers are
frequently indicted at Assizes and Sessions, and
otherwise grievously molested for such Actions,
and many lately suffering for the same; and
that notwithstanding that Provision you lately
made against it, divers have had Verdicts passed
against them this last Assizes, for Actions done
as Soldiers, as we are credibly informed. If this
be practised during the Time of your Session, for
what we did through the Exigence of your Ser-

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

April.

vice, what cruel and violent Proceedings are we like to find after you are pleased to dissolve?

For the particular Intimation that the Royal Assent may be desired, we never intended by it to lessen your Authority; but since you have, by offering the Propositions, judged the desiring the King's Assent convenient; since likewise the City of *London* made the same Desire without Offence: As to your Orders to the Judges, we know not how effectual they may prove to save us from such Proceedings after your Sessions. All these Reasons considered will, we hope, manifest our Intentions in that Intimation to be only a provident Caution for our future Safety, without the least Thought of Disrespect to your Authority.

For the Desire of our Arrears; Necessity, especially of our Soldiers, enforced us thereunto: That we have not been mercenary, or proposed Gain as our End, the speedy Ending of a languishing War will testify for us, whereby the People are much eased of their Taxes and daily Disbursements, and decayed Trade restored to a full and flourishing Condition in all Quarters. We left our Estates, and many of us our Trades and Callings to others, and forsook the Contentments of a quiet Life, not fearing or regarding the Difficulties of War, for your Sakes. After all which we hoped that the Desires of our hardly-earned Wages, by the Mediation of our General, would have been no unwelcome Request, nor argued us guilty of the least Discontent or Intention of Mutiny.

We know not any Thing further in our Petition which hath been excepted against, but your Apprehensions that it tendeth to hinder the Relief of *Ireland*, which we do not understand wherein; having always manifested, in all our Actions, our Readiness to further that Work; unless you mean by that Desire, that those who have served voluntarily should not be pressed to go out of the Kingdom; to which we humbly offer this, That those who have voluntarily served in these Wars,
and

‘ and left their Parents, Trades, and Livelihoods ; An. 23. Car. 1.
 ‘ and, without any Compulsion, engaged of their 1647.
 ‘ own Accords, should, after all their free and un-
 ‘ wearied Labours, be forced and compelled to go
 ‘ out of this Kingdom, whose Peace they have so
 ‘ much endeavoured with unwearied Pains, hoping
 ‘ thereby to have lived and enjoyed the Fruits of
 ‘ their Labours, would to them seem very hard :
 ‘ But besides this, our several Votes and Engage-
 ‘ ments, *March 21*, to endeavour the Service of
 ‘ *Ireland* what we could, will clear us, and prove
 ‘ our good Affections in promoting that Work ; and
 ‘ therefore we hope what hath been said will re-
 ‘ move all Scruples, and restore us to the good Op-
 ‘ nion of this Honourable House : In Assurance
 ‘ whereof, and in Consideration of the Premises,
 ‘ we are further emboldened to make these our
 ‘ Requests unto this Honourable House.

1. ‘ That you will be pleased to allow us our
 ‘ Liberty of petitioning in what may concern us
 ‘ now as Soldiers, and afterwards as Members of
 ‘ the Common-wealth.

2. ‘ Since, upon the false Suggestions of some
 ‘ Men, informing you that this Army intended
 ‘ to enslave the Kingdom, the Honourable House
 ‘ was so far prevailed withall as to summon divers
 ‘ of us to appear at your Bar ^a, and to pass a De-

Z 3

‘ clarification
 ‘ This Passage alludes to a Transaction of the first of this Month,
 in the House of Commons, of which Mr. *Rushworth* gives the fol-
 lowing Account : ‘ Lieutenant-General *Hammond*, Colonel *Ham-*
mond, Lieutenant-Colonel *Pride*, &c. attending at the Door, they
 were called in ; when the Speaker told Colonel *Pride*, That the
 House was informed that he should read a Petition (of which the
 Houses had an ill Sense) at the Head of Colonel *Harley*’s Regiment ;
 and that there were threatening Speeches given out, that those
 that did not subscribe it should be cashiered the Army, &c. To
 which Colonel *Pride* gave for Answer, That there was no Petition,
 either by himself or by his Appointment, read at the Head of the
 said Colonel *Harley*’s Regiment ; and that there was no menacing
 or threatening Words used, and denied the whole Charge ; and so
 did the rest of them, and gave good Satisfaction in Answer to what
 was demanded of them.

Collections, Vol. VI. p. 444.

But Lord *Holles*, in his *Memoirs*, calls this Answer of Colo-
 nel *Pride*’s mere Collusion and Equivocation ; which he thus ac-
 counts for, by saying, ‘ That when the Colonel was charged with
 causing the Petition to be read at the Head of his Regiment, he de-

nied

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

April.

‘claration, thereby expressing your high Dislike
 ‘of our Petition, declaring it tended to put Con-
 ‘ditions upon the Parliament: The Sense of such
 ‘Expressions is so irksome to us, who have ven-
 ‘tured whatsoever we esteemed dear to us in this
 ‘World for Preservation of your Freedom and Pri-
 ‘vileges, that we cannot but earnestly implore
 ‘your Justice in the Vindication of us, as in your
 ‘Wisdom you shall think fit.’

This Petition was subscribed by Col. *Thomas Hammond*, Lieutenant-General of the Ordnance, by seven other Colonels, seven Lieutenant-Colonels, six Majors, 130 Captains, Lieutenants, and other inferior Officers. ^a

A Letter present-
 ed to them by se-
 veral Troopers.

April 30. The said Petition and Vindication were read. After which Major-General *Skippon* ^e produced a Letter presented unto him the Day before, by some Troopers of several Regiments in the Army, in Behalf of eight Regiments of Horse; wherein they expressed some Reasons why they could not engage in the Service of *Ireland*, under the present Conduct; and complaining of the many scandalous and false Suggestions, that were of late raised against the Army and their Proceedings, whereupon they were declared Enemies to the Public; and that they saw Designs were upon them, and many of the godly Party in the Kingdom:—That there was an Intention to disband and new model

the
 nised it stoutly; because, it seems, it was but at the Head of every Company, the Regiment not being drawn up together.’ He adds, ‘That notwithstanding all this, the House, willing to bury what was past, and hoping it would have gained them to a better Obedience for the future, sent them down again, rather with Respect than otherwise, acquiescing with their Denial.’ And farther remarks, ‘That this very Act of Clemency was turned against them; and when the Army came afterwards to do their Work bare-faced, no longer to excuse but justify that Petition, may make the Parliament criminous for questioning it, they upbraided the House with sending up for the Officers from their Charge, when they had nothing to say against them.

Holles’s Memoirs, p. 80.

^a Their Names are all printed in *Rassworth*, Vol. VI. p. 471.

^e *Ibid.* p. 474.

the Army^f; which, they said, was a Plot contrived by some Men who had lately tasted of Sovereignty; and, being lifted up above the ordinary Sphere of Servants, endeavoured to become Masters, and were degenerated into Tyrants. They therefore declared, That they would neither be employed for the Service of *Ireland*, nor suffer themselves to be disbanded, till their Desires were granted, and the Rights and Liberties of the Subjects should be vindicated and maintained.

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

April.

The foregoing Letter being recommended to the Consideration of the House by General *Skippon*^g, the reading of the Army's Vindication was laid aside; and the three Troopers, viz. *Edward Sexby*^h, *William Allen*ⁱ, and *Thomas Sheppard*, who came with the Letter, (and who had presented Copies of the same to Sir *Thomas Fairfax* the General, and to Lieutenant-General *Cromwell*, both which were brought into the House at the same Time) were ordered to be sent for in; where several Questions were propounded unto them, concerning the contriving, drawing up, and subscribing of the same. They affirmed it was drawn up first at a Rendezvous of several of those Regiments, and afterwards they had several Meetings about it by Agents from each Regiment in several Places. Being demanded, Whether their Officers were engaged in it? They answered, That they thought very few of them knew or took Notice of it. Then, upon Intimation that surely this Letter came by Promotion of Cavaliers in the Army, it was demanded of each of the Troopers severally by themselves, Whether they were Cavaliers? To which Answer was returned, That they had engaged in the Parliament's Cause ever since *Edge-Hill* Battle, and some wounded there; at *Brent-*

Great Debate thereupon.

^f Clarendon, Vol. V. p. 44.

^g He had been some little Time before elected Member for *Barnstable*.

^h Afterwards a Colonel. — ⁱ Sometime after Adjutant-General under *Cromwell*.

An. 23. Car. I. *Brentford*, at *Newbery*, at *Henley*, under Major-General *Skippon*; and that they had been engaged in all the Services since his Excellency first marched into the Field.

1647.

April.

Then they were demanded, What the meaning of that Clause was, wherein the Word a *Sovereignty* was expressed? They severally being called, one by one, answered, That the Letter being a joint Act of those several Regiments, they could not give a punctual Answer, they being only Agents; but if they might have the Queries in Writing, they should send or carry them to the several Regiments, and return their own Answers together with and comprized in the rest. After all these Examinations, they were ordered to attend the House upon Summons.

General *Ludlow* writes *, ‘ That after the reading of the Petition, some of the Members moved that the Messengers might be committed to the *Tower*, and the Petition declared seditious; but the House, after a long Debate, satisfied themselves to declare, That it did not belong to the Soldiery to meddle with Civil Affairs, nor to prepare or present any Petition to the Parliament without the Advice and Consent of their General, to whom they ordered a Letter to be sent to desire, for the future, his Care therein; with which acquainting the three Agents, and requiring their Conformity thereunto, they dismissed them.’ He adds, ‘ That the House having Notice of this Combination against them from Col. *Edward Harley*, one of their Members, who had a Regiment in the Army, expressed themselves highly dissatisfied therewith; and some of them moved that the Petitioners might be declared Traitors, alledging that they were Servants, who ought to obey, not to capitulate.— Others were not wanting, who resolved the securing of Lieutenant-General *Cromwell*, suspecting that he had under-hand given Countenance to this Design; but he being advertised of it, went that

Af-

* *Memoirs*, Vol. I. p. 190.

Afternoon towards the Army, so that they missed of him, and were not willing to shew their Teeth since they could do no more. The Debate continued till late in the Night, and the Sense of the House was, That they should be required to forbear the Prosecution of the said Petition; but when the House, wearied with long sitting, was grown thin, Mr. *Denzil Holles*, taking that Opportunity, drew up a Resolution upon his Knee, declaring the Petition to be seditious, and those Traitors who should endeavour to promote it after such a Day; and promising Pardon to all that were concerned therein, if they should desist by the Time limited. Some of us, fearing the Consequence of these Divisions, expressed our Dissatisfaction, and went out; which gave others Occasion to pass two or three very sharp Votes against these Proceedings of the Army.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
April.

Lord *Holles's* own Account of the Matter runs thus¹: 'The Letter presented to the House, by the three Agitators before-mentioned, was an Exclamation against the Parliament; false and untrue Complaints of Wrongs done to the Soldiers at Assizes in the Counties; a Protestation against the *Irish* Expedition, calling it a Design to break the Army, declaring, even if any of those three Commanders [*Fairfax*, *Cromwell*, and *Skippon*] should engage, their Averseness to it; tho' *Skippon* was appointed by the Parliament to command in *Ireland*, and had accepted it; in plain *English* saying they would not disband, nor receive any other Propositions from the Parliament, till their Expectations were satisfied.

'The three Agitators, being called into the House, carried themselves at the Bar in a slighting braving Manner, refusing to answer such Questions as the Speaker, by Order of the House, asked them; saying they were employed by the Army, and could not, without Leave from thence, discover any Thing. Many of the Members resenting this high Affront, were earnest to have them severely punished;

¹ *Memoirs*, p. 84, 89.

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

April.

nished; but the Party [*the Independents*] stood as stiffly for them, insomuch that the worthy Burgesses of *Newcastle*, Mr. *Warmouth*, stood up and said, He would have them committed indeed, but it should be to the best Inn of the Town, and good Sack and Sugar provided them; which was as ridiculous as it was a bold and insolent Scorn put upon the Parliament; at last even Mr. *Skippon* himself excused them, and said, They were honest Men, and wished they might not be too severely dealt with; whereupon the House flatted, let them go without Punishment, and by Tameness increased their Madness and Presumption.

His Lordship proceeds to inform us, 'That when they had wrought this Feat, Sir *Thomas Fairfax* himself came to *London*, upon Pretence of taking Physick; *Cromwell*, *Ireton*, *Fleetwood*, and *Rainsborough*, who were Members of the House of Commons as well as principal Officers of the Army, kept the House, that the Soldiers might be left to themselves to fire the more, run up to Extreames, and put themselves into a Posture to carry on their Work of Rebellion with a high and violent Hand; but in the mean Time disclaimed these Proceedings, blaming the Soldiers at that Distance, (as *Cromwell* did openly in the House, protesting, for his Part, he would stick to the Parliament) whilst, underhand, they sent them Encouragement and Directions; for nothing was done there but by Advice and Countenance from *London*, where the whole Business was so laid, the Rebellion resolved upon, and the Officers that were in Town so deeply engaged, that when the full Time was come for putting Things in Execution, my Friend *Cromwell*, who had been sent down by the Parliament to do good Offices, was come up again without doing any; and he who had made those solemn public Protestations, with some great Imprecations on himself if he failed in his Performance, did, notwithstanding, privily convey thence his Goods

Goods (which many of the Independents likewise did, leaving the City and Parliament as marked out for Destruction); and then, without Leave of the House (after some Members missing him, and fearing him gone, had moved to have him sent for; whereupon he being, as it seems, not yet gone, and having Notice of it, came and shewed himself a little in the House), did steal away that Evening, I may say run away post, down to the Army.

Ap. 23. Car. I.
1647.
April.

Lord Glarndon concurs with the two last Moralists as to the Suspicions concerning Cromwell, and the Intention of apprehending him, which he introduces in this Manner:

'Cromwell, hitherto, carried himself with that rare Dissimulation (in which sure he was a very great Master) that he seem'd exceedingly incensed against this Insolence of the Soldiers; was still in the House of Commons when any such Addresses were made; and inveighed bitterly against the Presumption, and had been the Cause of the Commitment, of some of the Officers. He proposed, That the General might be sent down to the Army; who, he said, would conjure down this 'matinous Spirit quickly.' And he was so easily believ'd, that he himself was sent once or twice to compose the Army; where, after he had staid two or three Days, he would again return to the House, and complain heavily 'of the great Licence that was got into the Army; that, for his own Part, by the Artifice of his Enemies, and of those who desired that the Nation should be again imbrew'd in Blood, he was render'd so odious unto them, that they had a Purpose to kill him, if, upon some Discovery made to him, he had not escaped out of their Hands.' And, in these and the like Discourses, when he spake of the Nation's being to be involved in new Troubles, he would weep bitterly, and appear the most afflicted Man in the World with the Sense of the Calamities which were like to ensue. But, as many of the

wiser

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

April.

wiser Sort had long discover'd his wicked Intentions, so his Hypocrisy could not longer be concealed. The most active Officers and Agitators were known to be his own Creatures, and such who neither did, nor would do, any Thing but by his Direction. So that it was privately resolv'd by the principal Persons of the House of Commons, that when he came the next Day into the House, which he seldom omitted to do, they would send him to the Tower; presuming, that if they had once sever'd his Person from the Army, they should easily reduce it to its former Temper and Obedience: For they had not the least Jealousy of the General, *Fairfax*, whom they knew to be a Perfect Presbyterian in his Judgement; and that *Cromwell* had the Ascendent over him purely by his Dissimulation, and Pretence of Conscience and Sincerity. There is no doubt *Fairfax* did not then, nor long after, believe that the other had those wicked Designs in his Heart against the King, or the least Imagination of disobeying the Parliament.

‘ This Purpose of seizing upon the Person of *Cromwell*, could not be carried so secretly, but that he had Notice of it; and the very next Morning after he had so much lamented his desperate Misfortune in having lost all Reputation, and Credit, and Authority in the Army, and that his Life would be in Danger if he were with it; when the House expected every Minute his Presence, they were inform'd that he was met out of the Town by Break of Day, with one Servant only, on the Way to the Army; where he had appointed a Rendezvous of some Regiments of the Horse, and from whence he writ a Letter to the House of Commons, ‘ That having the Night before receiv'd a Letter from some Officers of his own Regiment, ‘ that the Jealousy the Troops had conceiv'd of him, and of his Want of Kindness towards them, ‘ was much abated, so that they believ'd, if he ‘ would be quickly present with them, they would ‘ all in a short Time, by his Advice, be reclaim'd: ‘ Upon

‘ Upon this he had made all the Haste he could, and did find that the Soldiers had been abused by Misinformation; and that he hoped to discover the Fountain from whence it sprung; and, in the mean Time, desired that the General, and the other Officers in the House, and such as remain’d about the Town, might be presently sent to their Quarters; and that he believ’d it would be very necessary, in order to the Suppression of the late Distempers, and for the Prevention of the like for the Time to come, that there might be a general Rendezvous of the Army; of which the General would best consider when he came down, which he wished might be hasten’d. It was now to no Purpose to discover what they had formerly intended, or that they had any Jealousy of a Person who was out of their reach.’

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
April.

Mr. *Whitlocke* here observes ^m, ‘ That a victorious Army, out of Employment, is very inclinable to assume Power over their Principals; and this, he adds, occasioned the Parliament’s greater Care to find them Employment in *Ireland*.’ In another Place, after some four Petitions had been presented to the House, and some Printers taken up for publishing two Pamphlets, one called Judge *Jenkins’s Vindication*, and another intitled, *Sir Dudley Digges of the Illegality of Subjects taking Arms against their Sovereign*, he adds, ‘ Thus we see there is nothing constant in worldly Affairs; the Parliament having Conquest and Success after their own Desires, yet are now miserably incumbered with the Mutinousness of their Army on one Side, with the Petulance of Pamphlets and discontented Petitions on the other.’

We have been the more particular in this Digression, as these Intelligences from the Contemporary Writers tend so much to clear up the remarkable Affair of the Seizure of the King by *Cor-net Joyce*, which now hastens upon us.

May

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.
May.

May 13. A Letter from the Earl of Denbigh, address'd to the Speaker of the House of Peers, was read, with the Examination of John Brown and Mrs. Mary Cave, and a Cypher sent to the King from Mr. Ashburnham.

My Lord,

Holdenby, May 12, 1647.

Examinations,
&c. relating to a
Letter in Cyphers
designed to be de-
livered to the
King.

WE send you here inclosed a Petition which served only as a Cover to a Cypher on the Back-side thereof, and was to have been delivered to his Majesty by Mrs. Mary Cave. It was brought to her by one John Brown, Servant to Mr. Ashburnham, then at the Hague, he being newly removed, as Brown affirmed, out of France into those Parts. All the other Particulars your Lordship will find in the inclosed Copies of their Examinations.

Captain Abbot, the Bearer hereof, did first discover the Business to us, being made acquainted with it at the Place where he quartered; and since, in the Management of it, he hath carried himself very discreetly. We have secured their Persons with the Mayor of Northampton till your Pleasure be further known, which we desire your Lordship to signify to

Your Lordship's humble Servants,

B. DENBIGH,
ED. MONTAGUE.

The EXAMINATION of JOHN BROWN, taken before the Commissioners at Holdenby, May 11, 1647.

THIS Examinant saith, about two Months since he received the Petition, with the Cyphers on the Backside thereof, from Mr. Ashburnham at the Hague, and did see Mr. Ashburnham write the Petition, but not the Cyphers.

That about three Weeks since he delivered the Petition and Cyphers to Mrs. Mary Cave, who undertook to deliver it to the King; and that he was induced thereunto, being acquainted with

with her when the King was at her Father's An. 23. Car. I.
House, with Mr. *Asburnham*, as his Majesty came
from *Oxford* to the Scots Army. 1647.

That he had an Order from his Majesty by
Sir *James Lilly*, to attend upon Mr. *Asburnham*
at the *Hague*.

That he never lost any Goods at Sea, as is set
forth in the Petition; but that the Petition was
merely written to be a Colour, that he might the
better deliver the Letter to the King which Mr.
Asburnham gave him.

JOHN BROWN.

The EXAMINATION of Mrs. MARY CAVE,
Daughter to WILLIAM CAVE, of Stamford, in
the County of Lincoln, Esq; taken before the Com-
missioners at Holdenby, May 11, 1647.

THIS Examinant saith, That one *Brown* de-
livered her the Letter, a Fortnight or three
Weeks since, from Mr. *Asburnham*, and brought
it to her as a Petition, and desired her to deliver
it to his Majesty for Mr. *Asburnham*, who is at
the *Hague*: But upon View thereof saith, That
she saw that it was more than a Petition, but did
not know what it was, yet undertook to deliver
it to the King.

MARY CAVE.

The Earls of *Kent*, *Lincoln*, *Rutland*, and *Man-
chester*, were appointed to endeavour to explain this
Cypher.

May 18. The Lords received a Packet from
their Commissioners at *Holdenby*, with a Paper in-
closed in it from the King, which contained an
Answer from his Majesty to the Parliament's Pro-
positions delivered to him at *Newcastle*. Mr. *Rush-
worth* says that this Answer is large and well penn'd,
yet hath given us no more of it than a short Ab-
stract of half a Folio Pageⁿ. But we think the whole
deserves more Notice, and therefore we give it
from a Pamphlet of this Year^o, compared with the
Copy

ⁿ Collections, Vol. VI. p. 487.

• London, printed for Richard Royston.

368 *The Parliamentary HISTORY*

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.

May.

Copy in the *Lords Journals*: This Message contains many Things, especially in the Preface, greatly relative to that unhappy Prince's Condition at that Time. It was ushered in by the following Letter from the Commissioners at *Holdenby*, addressed to the Earl of *Manchester*.

My Lord,

Holdenby, May 13, 1647.

WHEN we sent a Letter heretofore from the King to the Houses, we acquainted your Lordship that we held it our Duty not to hinder any Intercourse between his Majesty and the House, and earnestly desired Directions upon the like Occasions for the future; but having therein heard nothing to this present, we therefore thought it fit to send this Letter, which was delivered to us by his Majesty Yesterday about eight or nine of the Clock in the Evening. We have not seen the Particulars thereof, but did conceive, from what his Majesty told us, that it concerns the Propositions. We remain,

My Lord,

Your Lordship's humble Servants,

B. DENBIGH,
ED. MONTAGUE.

The King's Message runs thus:

HIS MAJESTY'S Most Gracious MESSAGE from
Holdenby, May 12, 1647.

For the SPEAKER of the LORDS House *pro Tempore*, to be communicated to the LORDS and COMMONS in the Parliament of *England*, at *Westminster*, and the COMMISSIONERS of the Parliament of *Scotland*.

His Majesty's Answer to the Propositions of Peace presented to him at New-castle.

AS the daily Expectation of the coming of the Propositions hath made his Majesty, this long Time, to forbear giving his Answer unto them, so the Appearance of their sending being no more, for any Thing

Thing he can hear, than it was at his first coming hither, notwithstanding that the Earl of Lauderdale hath been at London above these ten Days, (whose not coming was said to be the only Stop) hath caused his Majesty thus to anticipate their coming to him; and yet considering his Condition, that his Servants are denied Access to him, all but very few, and those by Appointment, not his own Election; and that it is declared a Crime for any but the Commissioners, or such who are particularly permitted by them, to converse with his Majesty; or that any Letters should be given to, or received from him, may he not truly say, that he is not in a Case fit to make Concessions, or give Answers, since he is not Master of those ordinary Actions which are the undoubted Rights of any free-born Man, how mean soever his Birth be? And certainly he would still be silent as to this Subject, untill his Condition were much mended, did he not prefer such a right Understanding betwixt him and his Parliaments of both Kingdoms, which may make a firm and lasting Peace in all his Dominions, before any Particular of his own, or any earthly Blessing; And therefore his Majesty hath diligently employed his utmost Endeavours for divers Months past, so to inform his Understanding, and satisfy his Conscience, that he might be able to give such Answers to the Propositions, as would be most agreeable to his Parliaments; but he ingenuously professes, that notwithstanding all the Pains that he hath taken therein, the Nature of some of them appears such unto him, that, without disclaiming that Reason which God hath given him to judge by for the Good of him and his People, and without putting the greatest Violence upon his own Conscience, he cannot give his Consent to all of them: Yet his Majesty, that it may appear to all the World how desirous he is to give full Satisfaction, hath thought fit hereby to express his Readiness to grant what he may, and his Willingness to receive from them, and that personally, if his two Houses at Westminster shall approve thereof, such further Information in the rest as may best convince his Judgment, and satisfy those Doubts which are not yet

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
May.

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

May.

clear unto him; desiring them also to consider, that if his Majesty intended to wind himself out of these Troubles by indirect Means, were it not easy for him now readily to consent to what hath or shall be proposed unto him, and afterwards chuse his Time to break all; alledging, that forced Concessions are not to be kept? Surely he might, and not incur a hard Censure from some indifferent Men. But Maxims of this Kind are not the Guides of his Majesty's Actions; for he freely and clearly avows, that he holds it unlawful for any Man, and most base in a King, to recede from his Promises for having been obtained by Force or under Restraint: Wherefore his Majesty (not only rejecting those Acts which he esteems unworthy of him, but even passing by that which he might well insist upon, a Point of Honour in respect of his present Condition) thus answers the first Proposition:

That upon his Majesty's coming to London, he will heartily join in all that shall concern the Honour of his two Kingdoms, or the Assembly of the States of Scotland, or of the Commissioners or Deputies of either Kingdom, particularly in those Things which are desired in that Proposition, upon Confidence that all of them respectively, with the same Tenderness, will look upon those Things which concern his Majesty's Honour.

In answer to all the Propositions concerning Religion, his Majesty proposeth, That he will confirm the Presbyterial Government, the Assembly of Divines at Westminster, and the Directory, for three Years, being the Time set down by the two Houses; so that his Majesty and his Household be not hindered from that Form of God's Service which they formerly have had; and, also, that a free Consultation and Debate be had with the Divines at Westminster, (twenty of his Majesty's Nomination being added unto them) whereby it may be determined by his Majesty and the two Houses, how the Church shall be governed after the said three Years, or sooner, if Differences may be agreed.

Touching the Covenant; his Majesty is not yet therein satisfied, and desires to respite his particular Answer

Answer thereunto untill his coming to London; because, it being a Matter of Conscience, he cannot give a Resolution therein till he may be assisted with the Advice of some of his own Chaplains, which hath hitherto been denied him, and such other Divines as shall be most proper to inform him therein; and then he will make clearly appear, both his Zeal to the Protestant Profession, and the Union of these two Kingdoms, which he conceives to be the main Drift of this Covenant.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
May.

To the seventh and eighth Propositions, his Majesty will consent.

To the ninth, his Majesty doubts not but to give good Satisfaction, when he shall be particularly informed how the said Penalties shall be levied and disposed of.

To the tenth, his Majesty's Answer is, That he hath been always ready to prevent the Practices of Papists; and therefore is content to pass an Act of Parliament for that Purpose: And, also, that the Laws against them be duly executed.

His Majesty will give his Assent to the Act for the due Observation of the Lord's Day; for the Suppressing of Innovations, and those concerning the Preaching of God's Word; and touching Non-Resistance and Pluralities.

His Majesty will yield to such Act or Acts as shall be requisite to raise Monies for the Payment and satisfying all public Debts, expecting also that his will be therein included.

As to the Proposition touching the Militia; though his Majesty cannot consent unto it in Terminis as it is proposed, because thereby, he conceives, he wholly parts with the Power of the Sword intrusted to him by God and the Laws of the Land, for the Protection and Government of his People; thereby at once divesting himself, and disinheriting his Posterity, of that Right and Prerogative of the Crown which is absolutely necessary to the Kingly Office, and so weaken Monarchy in this Kingdom, that little more than the Name and Shadow of it will remain: Yet,

An. 23. CAR. I.

1647.

May.

if it be only Security for the Preservation of the Peace of this Kingdom, after the unhappy Troubles, and the due Performance of all the Agreements which are now to be concluded, which is desired, (which his Majesty always understood to be the Case, and hopes that herein he is not mistaken) his Majesty will give abundant Satisfaction; to which End he is willing, by Act of Parliament, that the whole Power of the Militia, both by Sea and Land, for the Space of ten Years, be in the Hands of such Persons as the two Houses shall nominate, giving them Power, during the said Term, to change the said Persons, and substitute others in their Places at Pleasure; and afterwards to return to the proper Channel again, as it was in the Times of Queen Elizabeth and King James, of blessed Memory. And now his Majesty conjures his two Houses of Parliament, as they are Englishmen and Lovers of Peace, by the Duty they owe to his Majesty their King, and by the Bowels of Compassion they have to their Fellow Subjects, that they will accept of this his Majesty's Offer, whereby the joyful News of Peace may be restored to this languishing Kingdom. His Majesty will grant the like to the Kingdom of Scotland, if it be desired, and agree to all Things that are propounded touching the conserving of Peace betwixt the two Kingdoms.

Touching Ireland (other Things being agreed) his Majesty will give Satisfaction therein.

As to the mutual Declarations proposed to be established in both Kingdoms by Act of Parliament, and the Modifications, Qualifications, and Branches which follow in the Propositions; his Majesty only professes, That he doth not sufficiently understand, nor is able to reconcile many Things contained in them; but this he well knoweth, That a general Act of Oblivion is the best Bond of Peace; and that, after intestine Troubles, the Wisdom of this and other Kingdoms hath usually and happily, in all Ages, granted general Pardons; whereby the numerous Discontentments of many Persons and their Families,
other-

otherwise exposed to Ruin, might not become Fewel to new Disorders, or Seeds to future Troubles: His Majesty therefore desires, that his two Houses of Parliament would seriously descend into these Considerations, and likewise tenderly look upon his Condition herein, and the perpetual Dishonour that must cleave to him, if he shall thus abandon so many Persons of Condition and Fortune that have ingaged themselves with and for him out of a Sense of Duty; and propounds, as a very acceptable Testimony of their Affection to him, That a general Act of Oblivion and free Pardon be forthwith passed by Act of Parliament.

AN. 23. CH. 1.
1647.
May.

Touching the new Great Seal; his Majesty is very willing to confirm both it and all the Acts done by Virtue thereof untill this present Time, so that it be not thereby pressed to make void those Acts of his done by Virtue of his Great Seal, which in Honour and Justice he is obliged to maintain; and that the future Government thereof may be in his Majesty, according to the due Course of Law.

Concerning the Officers mention'd in the nineteenth Article; his Majesty, when he shall come to Westminster, will gratify his Parliament all that possibly he may, without destroying the Alterations which are necessary for the Crown.

His Majesty will willingly consent to the Act for the Confirmation of the Privileges and Customs of the City of London, and all that is mentioned in the Propositions for their particular Advantage.

And now that his Majesty hath thus far endeavoured to comply with the Desires of his two Houses of Parliament, to the end that this Agreement may be firm and lasting, without the least Face or Question of Restraint to blemish the same, his Majesty earnestly desires presently to be admitted to his Parliament at Westminster, with that Honour which is due to their Sovereign; there solemnly to confirm the same, and legally to pass the Acts before-mentioned; and to give and receive as well Satisfaction in all the remaining Particulars, as likewise such other Pledges of mutual Love, Trust, and Confidence

An. 25. Car. 1. as shall most concern the Good of him and his People;
 1647. upon which happy Agreement, his Majesty will dispatch his Directions to the Prince, his Son, to return immediately to him, and will undertake for his ready Obedience thereunto.

The Lords resolve that the King be removed to Oatlands.

May 20. The Lords having appointed this Day for taking the King's Letter into Consideration, it was again read; and the Question being put, Whether the King shall be brought from *Holdenby* nearer to *London*, before such Time as their Lordships consider of the whole Matter of the Letter? It was resolved in the Affirmative, by a Majority of 15 against 9.

The Question being next put, Whether *Oatlands* shall be the Place where the King shall be removed to from *Holdenby*, as soon as it can be made ready for him? It was also resolved in the Affirmative, and a Message was sent to the House of Commons to desire their Concurrence.

A Petition, styling the Commons the Supreme Authority of the Nation, ordered by them to be burnt.

The same Day a Petition, directed *To the Right Honourable and Supreme Authority of this Nation, the Commons in Parliament assembled*; and intitled, *The humble Petition of many Thousands, earnestly desiring the Glory of God, the Freedom of the Commonwealth, and the Peace of Men*, was read; and it was resolved that the same be burnt by the Hangman, on a Division of only 94 against 86. The Purport or Prayer of the Petition is not entered in the *Journals*, nor do we meet with it in any of our Collections. The Offence seems to have been styling the Commons *the Supreme Authority of the Nation*:—But this Censure being carried by so small a Majority, plainly indicates that the Petitioners had a strong Party in the House: And, in less than two-Years after this, the Doctrine thus censured was made the Law of the Kingdom.

May 21. In order to satisfy the Army in some Measure, an Ordinance was passed and published to this Effect;

‘The

‘ The Lords and Commons taking Notice that
 ‘ divers well-affected Persons have been sued, in-
 ‘ dicted, prosecuted, or molested; and others are
 ‘ likely to be sued, indicted, prosecuted, or molest-
 ‘ ed, for Acts done by Authority of this present
 ‘ Parliament, and for the Service thereof, during
 ‘ these late Wars and Troubles; do hereby ordain
 ‘ and declare, That no Persons who have act-
 ‘ ed by Authority of Parliament, or for the Service
 ‘ thereof, ought to be sued or molested: That
 ‘ such as are or shall be so sued or molested, may
 ‘ plead the general Issue that they are not guilty,
 ‘ and give this Ordinance in Evidence; and shall
 ‘ have treble Costs awarded them: That such
 ‘ Persons as are not able to defend a Suit at Com-
 ‘ mon Law, or may find themselves aggrieved in
 ‘ the Proceedings thereof, may, either before or
 ‘ after Trial at Common Law, make their Com-
 ‘ plaint to the Committee of Parliament, herein
 ‘ named, or any five of them, who are impowered
 ‘ to determine such Complaints, to examine Wit-
 ‘ nesses, and to commit to Prison, if they see
 ‘ Cause, any Person suing as aforesaid, and to award
 ‘ to the Defendant treble Damages: That in case
 ‘ any Solicitor, Attorney, &c. do not forbear the
 ‘ Prosecution upon Order shewed from the said
 ‘ Committee, that then such Solicitor, Attorney, &c.
 ‘ shall be committed to safe Custody. Provided that
 ‘ nothing in this Ordinance shall discharge any Per-
 ‘ son from making a true Account to any Com-
 ‘ missioners or Committee of Parliament of what
 ‘ they have received for the Benefit thereof. ^b

An. 23. Car.
 1647.
 May.

An Ordinance
 indemnifying al
 such as have act
 ed in the Servio
 of the Parlia-
 ment.

To shew that the Art of decyphering is no modern Invention, we give the following Instance of a Letter in Figures sent to the King from Mr. *Ashburnham*, which had been intercepted by the Commissioners at *Holdenby*, and by them transmitted to the Parliament, as already mentioned. This Letter, as decyphered, runs thus :

Hague,

^b This Ordinance at large, with the Names of the Commissioners of both Houses, is printed in *Scobell's Collections*, p. 122.

*Hague, Feb. 28, 1646.**May it please your Majesty,*An. 23. Car. I.
1647.

May.

A Letter in Cyphers, addressed to the King, decyphered and read,

‘ **A**S 173 hath written to you lately by Persons at large, this is in short to tell your Majesty, that my Soul is sorrowful to Death for your Afflictions; and 389 doth confesse that Weight to be greater than Mankind can suffer, unless your Majesty look stedfastly upon Religion and Honour: Yet be not discouraged, for if you continue constant to your Principles, you will yet overcome all, and, in all Probability, you will see a good War for your Recovery. 389 hath perfected his Negotiation with Prince *William*; and if the Peace between *Spain* and the *States* be declared, which is confidently said here, he will certainly land a gallant Army for your Relief; and 389 hopes you shall have the *Irish* Army and this meet successfully: Therefore, as you tender the Good of you and yours, be constant to your Grounds. If your Majesty make Laws to strengthen their usurped Power, or part with the Church Lands, there can be no Hopes to restore you, and your Posterity will be for ever lost. All that I, or any of your faithful Servants, can say to you is, to beg constantly for you, that God would fortify your Resolutions, and enable you to go through your unheard-of Trials with Piety and Reputation; which is, and ever shall be, the Prayers of

Your humblest and faithfullest

389.

P. S. ‘ 389 hopes you have burnt all your Letters and Cyphers; if you have not, for God’s Sake do it. Your Majesty will still remember the Alphabet, in Confidence whereof you see 389 hath only made use of that Part.’

Next the Letter and Examinations, sent from the Commissioners at *Holdenby*, were also read along

along with the foregoing^c; and the Question being put, Whether this Letter of the Commissioners, with the Examinations and the Decyphering, shall be now communicated to the House of Commons? it was resolved in the Negative; whereupon the following Lords entered their Dissents.

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.
May.

‘ In Consideration that this Letter being decyphered, importeth Matters of such high Consequence; and, by Examination, appears to have been sent from Mr. *Ashburnham* to the King, who hath been much employed in the King’s Designs against the Parliament, they conceived it fit to be communicated to the House of Commons for the Good and Safety of the whole Kingdom; and, that they may be acquitted from any Inconveniency that may arise by the not sending of it down to the House of Commons, they have accordingly entered this their Protestation.’

B. DENBIGH, GREY of WARKE,
SAY and SELE, LA WARR.
P. WHARTON,

But it being moved, That the original Letter, with the Examinations taken by the Commissioners and their Letter, shall be now communicated to the House of Commons, it was resolved in the Affirmative.

May 22. Some Officers in the Army having consented to be disbanded, the Lords thought fit to pass an Ordinance, sent up by the Commons, for the Payment of 17,138*l.* 10*s.* 11*d.* to those reduced Officers, late under the Command of Sir *Thomas Fairfax*.

May 27. The Lords took into Consideration some Votes, sent up by the Commons, about disbanning the Foot; and the first being read, *viz.*

Resolved, 1. ‘ That the General’s Regiment be first disbanded; that the Time for that Disbanning be

Votes relating to
the Disbanning of
the Foot.

^c These are before given at p. 366.

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.

May.

1. be on the first of *June*, and that the Town of *Chelmsford* be the Place for the Rendezvous.'

The Question being put, Whether to agree to this Vote now read? It was resolved in the Affirmative, the Earls of *Denbigh* and *Mulgrave*, and the Lord Viscount *Say* and *Sale*, dissenting.

'Then the rest of the Votes were severally read and agreed to as follows, viz.

2. 'That such as will engage for *Ireland* shall presently be taken on, and have a Fortnight's Advance paid them out of their six Weeks, besides the two Months Pay of their Arrears, and to march forthwith to *Ingatstone*, there to receive Orders.

3. 'That those that shall be disbanded shall receive their two Months Pay of their Arrears, and shall deposit their Arms in the Church, and have a Pass to go to their several Homes.

4. 'That the like Manner be observed in disbanded the rest of the Regiments, at the several Times and Places of Rendezvous, as follows, viz.

'That Col. *Hewson's* Regiment be disbanded at *Bishops-Stortford*, on the third of *June* next; and those who engage for *Ireland* to march to *Puckeridge* to receive Orders: That Col. *Lambert's* Regiment be disbanded at *Walden*, on the fifth of *June* next; and that those that engage for *Ireland* march to *Heydon* to receive Orders: That Col. *Lilburne's* Regiment be disbanded at *Newmarket*, on the tenth of *June* next; and those who engage for *Ireland* to march to *Botesham* to receive Orders; of this Regiment there are 580 already engaged now at *Evesholm*: That Col. *Harley's* Regiment be disbanded at *Cambridge*, on the eighth of *June* next; and those that engage for *Ireland* to march to *Stanton* to receive Orders: That Sir *Hardress Waller's* Regiment be disbanded at *Huntingdon*, on the twelfth of *June* next; and those who engage for *Ireland* to march to *Thrapston* to receive Orders: That Col. *Hammond's* Regiment be disbanded at *Bedford*, on the fifteenth of *June* next; and those that engage for *Ireland* to march to *Newport-Pagnell* to receive Orders: That Col. *Ingoldsby's* Regiment be
dis-

disbanded at *Woodstock*, on the fourth of *June* next; and those who engage for *Ireland* to march to *Chipping-Norton*.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
May.

5. ' That Field-Marshal *Skippon's* Regiment at *Newcastle* be taken on for *Ireland*, and march according to his Orders.

6. ' That the Money for disbanding all those Regiments, and also a Fortnight's Pay for those that shall go for *Ireland*, be conveyed under a strong Guard to the several Places of Rendezvous, to be there the Day before the Day of disbanding.

7. ' That the General be desired to issue out his Orders to the several Regiments, to be at the several Places and Times of Rendezvous respectively; and that himself be present to see them disbanded; as likewise Field-Marshal *Skippon*, who is then to take on such of them as will go for *Ireland*: And that, in regard the Regiment of Col. *Ingoldsbys* lies off from the rest, and it is to be disbanded at *Woodstock* the fourth of *June* next, the General is desired to send some Officers to see them disbanded.

8. ' That the several Captains of each Company bring a List of their Company, under their Hand, to the Place of the Rendezvous appointed for disbanding; wherein the Name of every Soldier in that Company shall be expressed.

9. ' That where it shall appear that any of the Soldiers have not two Months Pay due to them, so much be abated as shall be found to come short of it.

10. ' That it be referred to the Committee of the Army, to consider of Instructions for stating the Arrears and Accounts of the Soldiers of this Army, and how Debentures shall be given them for so much as shall appear justly due upon their Accounts.

11. ' That all Commission-Officers shall receive their particular Debentures upon their Accounts made by the Committee and Treasurers of the Army aforesaid.

12. ' That

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.

May.

12. ' That the Excise in Course shall be the Security to be given for the Payment of the Arrears of the inferior Officers and common Soldiers; and that the Commission-Officers shall be paid out of the Estates of the Delinquents in the first Exceptions, not yet disposed; and that the Committee of the Army do prepare and bring in an Ordinance to this Purpose.

13. ' That a Committee of Lords and Commons be appointed to go down, and be assisting to the General in this Service of disbanding the Army.

14. ' That the Committee of Lords and Commons appointed to go down to the Army, shall, at the Head of every Regiment, at their disbanding, give them the Thanks of the Houses for their faithful Service to the Parliament.'

Besides the foregoing Votes sent up to the House of Lords for their Concurrence, the Commons had resolved That 40,000*l.* be appointed for the disbanding of these Regiments, and for the Fortnight's Pay, Part of the six Weeks Pay for those that should go for *Ireland*. But this last Resolution was not sent up, which is thus accounted for in the *Commons Journals* of the 25th of this Month, viz. Resolved, ' That all these Votes concerning the Army, *except those that concern the disposing of the Monies*, be sent to the Lords for their Concurrence.'

It was afterwards ordered, That these Votes, so passed, should be sent down, inclosed in the following Letter from both the Speakers, to Sir *Thomas Fairfax*.

Which are sent
to Sir Thomas
Fairfax, in a Letter
from the
Speakers of both
Houses.

S I R,

Westminster, May 28, 1647.

' WE are commanded to transmit unto you these Votes concerning the disbanding the Foot, whereby you will see the Care of the two Houses of Parliament, to give all Satisfaction
' to

‘ to the Officers and Soldiers under your Com-
‘ mand. An. 23. Car. I.
1647.

‘ You are desired to communicate these Votes
‘ to them in such Manner as you shall think best
‘ for preparing all Things which may conduce to
‘ the expediting the Service, which doth so much
‘ import the Peace of this Kingdom, and the Re-
‘ lief of *Ireland*; to which it is not doubted but
‘ that you will contribute all that lies in your
‘ Power, and thereby add to your former Merit.
‘ We are

Your Friends and Servants,

MANCHESTER,
Speaker of the House of Peers
pro Tempore.

WILLIAM LENTHALL,
Speaker of the House of Com-
mons.

May 28. The Parliament being still anxious to get rid of their Army at any Rate, which now began, as Mr. *Rushworth* tells us, to be the Concern of the whole Kingdom, they this Day passed the following Declaration, penned, as may be seen, in order to sooth their Resentment; but it proved all to no Purpose.

‘ **T**HE Lords and Commons finding it of ab-
‘ solute Necessity, in relation to their Duty
‘ to this Kingdom, to take off the great Charge
‘ which it hath so long undergone in Maintenance
‘ of Arms; as likewise to that of *Ireland*, which
‘ cries out for present Relief, and must otherwise
‘ irrecoverably perish, have therefore thought fit
‘ to disband the Foot of this Army. But, withall,
‘ have taken it into their special Care to give all
‘ just Satisfaction to those who have served there-
‘ in, providing for their Indemnity, and for the
‘ Maintenance of such as have lost their Limbs;
‘ and likewise for the Widows and Orphans of
‘ those who have lost their Lives in their Service;
‘ and

The Parlia-
ment's Declara-
tion touching the
Disbanding of
the Army; pro-
viding for Wi-
dows, &c.

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

May.

and an Assurance unto those who have voluntarily served them, not to be pressed out of the Kingdom; and also such a considerable Part of their Arrears to be paid to those that are to be disbanded, as is possible to be provided for at present, with a Regard to other public Services of unavoidable Necessity; and good and sufficient Security for all that shall appear to be due, both to Officer and Soldier, upon the auditing of their Accounts; which is put into a Way of speedy Dispatch, and of no Trouble at all to the Soldier, and but of little to the Officer; all which doth appear by the several Ordinances and Orders of both Houses, passed to that Effect; which will, we presume, abundantly satisfy all Persons of the Parliament's Tenderneſs towards the Army, and Acceptance of their faithful Services; and dispose the Army to a chearful and ready Compliance with their Resolution, that *Ireland* may be relieved, and this Kingdom recover a breathing Time after so long and heavy Sufferings; the Houses being fully resolved to apply their whole Care and Endeavours, with God's Assistance, to remove those Pressures, which either the Necessity of War, or Want of Leisure for the Remedy in these troublesome Times, may have occasioned.'

Next, the List of the Regiments of Horse to be continued for the Defence of the Kingdom, with the Names of the Commanders, was read and agreed to as follows:

Six Regiments of
Horse to be con-
tinued in Pay.

That the several Troops in the Counties of *Leicester, Salop, Chester, Stafford, Warwick and Northampton*, shall make up one Regiment, under the Command of Col. *Needham*, to be kept up in the Kingdom of *England*: That the General's own Regiment of Horse shall be another: That Col. *Greaves's* Regiment be a third: That Major *Twisleton* be Colonel of Col. *Roffiter's* Regiment, which shall be a fourth: That Col. *Whalley's* Regiment be a fifth: That Lieutenant-General *Cromwell's*

well's Regiment, under the Command of Major *An. 23. Car. I.*
Huntingdon as Colonel, shall be a sixth: That 100
 1647.
 Horse and 100 Dragoons be kept up for the Safe-
 ty of *North-Wales*, under Major-General *Mitton*;
 and the same Number for *South-Wales*, under Ma-
 jor-General *Langharne*; to be commanded in Chief
 by the General, as the other Horse kept up in the
 Kingdom.

Ordered, ' That the Earl of *Warwick* and Lord
De La War be desired to go down to the Army, to
 see the Disbanding thereof according to these Votes
 of both Houses.'

June 1. Two Letters from Sir *Thomas Fairfax*,
 in Answer to the last Orders of Parliament sent to
 him, together with a Paper, called *The humble Ad-*
vice, &c. of the Council of War, were read to the
 Lords as follows:

And, first, that to the Committee at *Derby-House*:

For the Right Honourable the COMMITTEE of
 LORDS and COMMONS for *Irish Affairs*, sitting
 at *Derby-House*.

Bury, May 30, 1647.

My Lords and Gentlemen,

' Yesterday, towards Evening, I received your
 ' Lordships Letter, and Votes therein in- General Fairfax
 ' closed: Before the Receipt thereof I had con- to the Irish Com-
 ' vened the Officers unto a general Council of War, mittee, concern-
 ' to advise concerning the better transacting of that the Army.
 ' Business, and Prevention of all Inconveniences;
 ' whereupon, after much Time spent about it, we
 ' came to these Resolutions, which declare much
 ' Dissatisfaction in the Army at being disbanded
 ' without having their Grievances fully redressed;
 ' and the Danger that may ensue if any one Regi-
 ' ment should be drawn out to disband, before the
 ' whole Army be equally satisfied. The Resolutions
 ' are long and many, which I shall hasten by a Mes-
 ' senger on purpose to both Houses of Parliament;
 ' being Things, indeed, of that great Concernment,
 ' as

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.

May.

as I cannot but, in Duty and Discharge of myself, communicate unto the Houses.

In the mean Time I humbly offer unto your Lordships Consideration, that if you hold your intended Journey to *Chelmsford*, there is little Hopes (as the Temper of the Army now stands) that your Lordships will find Things answerable to your Expectations: However, I have appointed a Guard of Horse, out of my own Regiment, to be there on *Monday*; but I doubt, the Orders coming so late, they cannot be there so early, as to meet the Money upon the Way; and for the same Reason I could not possibly have the Life-Guard to be there in Time, it being now quartered in *Bedfordshire*, nor any other Guard but out of my own Regiment of Horse, which lieth nearest. I remain

Your Lordships humble Servant,

THO. FAIRFAX.

The other was addressed to the Earl of *Manchester*.

Bury, May 30, 1647.

My Lord,

Another to the Earl of *Manchester*, on the same Occasion;

YOUR Lordship's Letter of the 28th I received Yesterday, with the Votes of both Houses inclosed therein: Before the Receipt thereof I had called the Officers unto a general Council of War, to advise concerning the better Transaction of the Business, and Prevention of all Inconveniencies thereupon. When they were in Consultation I communicated your Lordship's Letter, and the Votes therewith sent, unto them. After much Time spent in the Debate thereof, this inclosed was delivered to me by the Officers, as the Result of the Council of War; which, being of very great Concernment, I held it my Duty to hasten unto your Lordship.

It is no small Grief of Heart to me that there should be any Dissatisfaction betwixt the Parliament

ment and the Army, and that the last Votes did not give Satisfaction. I beseech God to direct your Lordships to proceed with such Wisdom, that Things may be determined in Love, and this poor Kingdom freed from further Distractions; which is the earnest Desire of

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.
June.

Your Lordship's humble Servant,

THO. FAIRFAX.

The Paper mentioned in the foregoing Letter.

*To his Excellency Sir THOMAS FAIRFAX, Knt.
Commander in Chief of the Parliament's Forces,*

The OPINIONS and HUMBLE ADVICE of your Council of War, convened at Bury this Saturday the 29th of May 1647, in relation to the Votes of Parliament communicated unto us by your Excellency, and your Desire of our Advice thereupon,

Humbly shewing,

I. **T**HAT, upon the Reports come to all Quarters of the Army, concerning the Votes and Proceedings of the Houses of *Friday* the 21st of *May*; as also of those of *Thursday* the 27th of *May*, we find the Generality of the Army (as we also ourselves) much unsatisfied with the one, and something amazed and startled at the other; the first Votes, of *Friday*, coming much short of Satisfaction, as to the Grievances of the Army then reported to the House, and not taking any Notice at all of some that are most material; and the latter, of *Thursday*, importing a Resolution suddenly to disband the Army by Piece-meal, before equal Satisfaction be given to the whole Army of the Grievances, or so much as any Consideration had of some others most material; and also before any effectual Performance of that Satisfaction which the Votes of *Friday* seemed to promise, as to some of the

The Advice of the Council of War to that General,

An. 23, Car. I.

1647.

June.

Grievances; all which we shall be ready, upon a little Time given us, to present to your Excellency more distinctly, and in Particulars.

II. That the said Dissatisfaction, and the Jealousies occasioned upon the said Proceedings, as we fear, and, by some Effects already appearing, do find, may unhappily produce dangerous Disturbances and tumultuous Actings amongst several Parts of the Army, as they lie now dispersed and remote from the Head Quarters; especially amongst those Regiments, whose principal Officers, by neglecting and deserting their Soldiers in their necessary Concernments, or just Grievances, have disobliged their Soldiers, and lost their Interest with them; insomuch that such Officers are in some sort forced to withdraw from their Charges, and can scarce, with Safety, come at them: And, to prevent the Inconveniences or ill Consequences which such disturbed or tumultuous Actings might produce, either to the Countries where the Army quarters, or to the Kingdom, we humbly advise your Excellency, without Delay, to draw the Army, or at least those Parts thereof that are not fixed to certain Quarters upon particular Duty, unto a closer Posture of Quarters; so as each Regiment, Troop, and Company may lye under the View and Oversight of the respective Officers that are left with them; and all of them under a nearer View and Correspondence with the Head Quarters, which may thus have a readier Influence upon all, for a better preserving of good Order, and Prevention of Inconveniences; and, in such Posture, for the Country's Ease, as to remove and shift the whole Quarters once a Week at least, till, upon further Satisfaction, the Army may be quietly and orderly disbanded.

III. That, upon the same Dissatisfactions, we find an extreme Earnestness and violent Propensity amongst the Soldiers to a general Rendezvous; and we verily believe the first attempting to

' to disband any one Regiment, before equal Sa- An. 23. Car. I.
 ' tisfaction to all, and Assurance against those 1647.
 ' they have Cause to fear, will occasion them all }
 ' to draw together and rendezvous of themselves, June.
 ' as it were upon Alarm. To prevent the Incon-
 ' veniences or ill Consequences, both to those
 ' Counties and the Kingdom, of any such tumult-
 ' tuous or confused Drawing unto Rendezvous
 ' without Order, we humbly advise your Ex-
 ' cellency, without Delay, after the Contraction
 ' of Quarters, to order a general Rendezvous for
 ' those Parts of the Army whose Quarters shall
 ' be so contracted; and this we advise and desire
 ' the rather, because of the scandalous Suggestions
 ' of some, importing as if the late Discontents
 ' appearing in the Army, and the Representation of
 ' Grievances, were not really in or from the Bo-
 ' dy of the Soldiery; but a meer Delusion and
 ' Appearance, made by the Contrivance and Ar-
 ' tifice of some factious Officers, or some other
 ' Persons in the Army; the Truth or Falshood
 ' whereof, as also the true Distemper or Disposi-
 ' tion of the Army, your Excellency and all others
 ' may most clearly discover, by such a general
 ' Rendezvous, without Delay or Trouble of go-
 ' ing to every Regiment apart as they now lye;
 ' the Army may more certainly understand what
 ' they may expect from the Parliament; and both
 ' Parliament and Kingdom know what to judge
 ' and trust to concerning the Army: And to that
 ' Purpose, at such a Rendezvous, we shall (we
 ' hope through the Grace of God) discharge our
 ' Duties to the Parliament and the Kingdom, as
 ' well as to your Excellency and the Army; and
 ' demonstrate that the Good and Quiet of the King-
 ' dom is much dearer to us than any particular
 ' Concernments of our own. These two last
 ' Things we humbly advise and desire may be
 ' done without Delay, or that otherwise we may
 ' be held acquitted from all Inconveniences that
 ' may ensue in our several Charges.

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

Junc.

IV. ‘ Since besides the Dissatisfactions of the Army hitherto in the Point of Grievances, and Defect of Assurance as to several of those Things promised towards Satisfaction; and besides the Jealousies occasioned upon the Votes of *Thursday* last, and all the ill Consequences which may follow in proceeding thereupon; that Course of disbanding the Army by Piece-meal, before the Satisfaction intended be performed equally to the whole, seems something strange and unusual; not practised in the former Armies, as Major-General *Massey*’s Brigade, the *Scots* Army, &c. nor used, that we have heard of, by any State towards any Army that was ever accounted faithful; we humbly desire your Excellency, by an effectual Letter, to move the Parliament for this, as that which we humbly offer and do beg of them, both for their own Honour, in relation to what future Armies they may have Occasion to employ, for the Reputation of your Excellency and this Army, as well as for its better Satisfaction; and as they tender the Good and assured Quiet of this Kingdom, or the effectual Relief and Saving of *Ireland*, that they would be pleased to resume the Consideration of the Things voted on *Thursday* last, and to suspend any present Proceeding thereupon; as also to resume the Grievances of the Army, together with the Things proposed in the Conclusion of the Narrative from the Officers; and to give Satisfaction, or at least some Resolution, to each of them; and that they would not put that Temptation and Jealousy in the Way of the Army, or that Dishonour upon it, as to disband it in scattered Pieces before Satisfaction be equally given to the whole.

‘ And we here further desire your Excellency to move that what hereafter follows may be admitted into Consideration, but not as tending to delay the Relief of *Ireland*:

I. ‘ We find most clearly, that the great Hopes suggested to the Parliament of the Supply, of that Service, in that Way at present intended, will

‘ will prove, as to any farther Expectations out of this Army, but vain and delusive; as the loud Noise of so many powerful Officers of the Army, with fifty Companies of Foot and ten of Horse, so long since engaged for that Service, hath already proved; and herein, if our Judgments be not credited, we have yet discharged our Duty to the Parliament and both Kingdoms in declaring it.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
June.

2. ‘ We cannot but, for our own and the Army’s further Discharge and Clearing, declare, That if the Parliament had not been abused by many of those who have pretended the Promotion of that Service; and not been by such Men’s false Informations or Misrepresentations concerning the Army, or otherwise, diverted from the Consideration of, or from giving reasonable Satisfaction to, the Army, in those Things proposed by the Generality of the Officers at the first Meeting at *Walden*, in *March* last, in order to that Service; and had not, by like mischievous Practices of such Incendiaries, been since then moved and drawn into a Series and Succession of such Things, as have conduced to multiply Discontents, Discouragements, Disobligations and Provocations, upon the Army; we say, had it not been for such Persons and such Things, we are confident the Parliament might have had, if they pleased, an Army entire and ready formed under the Conduct of their old Officers, to have engaged in that Service, having first found a just Consideration for the Service past, and Assurance of the Pay and Subsistence in that to come.

J. MILES, *Advocate.*

Sir THOMAS FAIRFAX’s Letter to the SPEAKER of the House of Commons, inclosing a Copy of the foregoing.

Mr. Speaker,

Bury, May 30, 1647.

‘ HAVING called the Officers of the Army to St. Edmundsbury, I communicated unto them Yesterday the Votes of both Houses, and a Letter

And his Letter thereupon to Mr. Speaker.

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

June.

Letter of the House of Peers sent therewith, concerning the disbanding the Army; after a long Consultation had thereof, this inclosed was delivered unto me, as the Result of the Council of War, where the Officers were very many and unanimous; which being of Importance, I held it my Duty to hasten the same unto you, being much perplexed in my Thoughts that Dissatisfaction betwixt the Parliament and the Army should rather increase than lessen. I intreat you that there may be Ways of Love and Composure thought upon. I shall do my Endeavours, tho' I am forced to yield to something out of Order, to keep the Army from Disorder, or worse Inconveniences. I desire you to take some speedy Resolution for the composing of Things, whereby the Kingdom may be happy in a timely Deliverance from further Distracti^on; for the effecting whereof I could be content to be a Sacrifice, as the last Service you can have from

Your most faithful and humble Servant,

THOMAS FAIRFAX.

Then a Letter from the Earl of *Warwick* and the Lord *De la War* was read:

To the Right Honourable the Earl of MANCHESTER,
Speaker of the House of PEERS.

My Lord,

A Letter from the Earl of *Warwick* and Lord *De la War*, concerning great Disorders in the Army,

WE came to *Gbelmsford* this Evening, about six of the Clock, where we met with Major *Desbrough*, with three Troops of Horse, by Order from the General, to guard the Money. Field-Marshal *Skippon* met us, and gave us Information that the General went from *Saffron-Walden*, on *Tuesday* last, to *St. Edmundsbury*, where he yet remains.

Yesterday the General wrote to the Field-Marshal lying at *Walden*, advertising him thus much, That, at a Council of War, Matters of Concernment were voted by them; and as to drawing

‘ drawing out his own Regiment to *Chelmsford* 12 12 Cr. 1
 ‘ on *Tuesday*, he conceiveth there was little Hopes
 ‘ of doing any Thing in that Business of disbanding, Jm.
 ‘ till the further Pleasure of the Parliament were
 ‘ known, whereof he hath given Notice to both
 ‘ Houses of Parliament, and the Committee at
 ‘ *Derby-House*, expecting their further Pleasure.

‘ When we came hither, after a little Enquiry, we
 ‘ found that, two Hours before we came to *Town*,
 ‘ Major *Goody*’s Company, who is the Major of
 ‘ the General’s Regiment, and was then with the
 ‘ General at his Head-Quarters, had violently bro-
 ‘ ken open the Lieutenant’s Chamber, and set a
 ‘ Musket at his Breast. After they had possessed
 ‘ themselves of the Colours, they marched towards
 ‘ *Rayne*, which is in the Way to *Newmarket*,
 ‘ where we heard they lay. There will be sud-
 ‘ denly a general Rendezvous of all the Foot; the
 ‘ Horse have likewise been ordered with all Expe-
 ‘ dition to contract their Quarters.

‘ We desire further and speedy Instructions,
 ‘ and, in particular, what Order you will give con-
 ‘ cerning the Money.

‘ As we were closing our Letter, Lieutenant-
 ‘ Colonel *Jackson*, Major *Goody*, and Captain *Hyl-
 ‘ field* are come hither; and the Major meeting
 ‘ with his Company by the Way, and demanding
 ‘ of them by what Order they removed their
 ‘ Quarters, they answered the Horse caused them
 ‘ to remove further; expressing that they received
 ‘ Orders to that Purpose from the Agitation.—
 ‘ All which we leave to your Lordship’s Consider-
 ‘ ation, and rest

Your Lordship’s most humble Servant;

Chelmsford, May 31,
 1647,
Monday Night.

WARWICK.
 DE LA WAR.

June 2. A Message was brought from the House
 of Commons, to let the Lords know, that where-
 as they had ordered that Monies should be sent
60,000

An. 25. Car. 1.

1647.

June.

down to *Chelmsford* and *Woodstock*, 7000*l.* to the first, and 5000*l.* to the latter, the House, upon some Reasons, had ordered the said Money to be brought back to *London*. They also desired their Lordships Concurrence, that the Commissioners sent down to *Chelmsford* might be recalled. The Lords agreed to the first, but took Time to consider of the last Request; though they afterwards consented to that also; and the Commissioners being returned gave this Account, That they had not disbanded the Foot, in regard the Army was in a Distemper, (Mutiny we suppose) and did march away from the Place of Rendezvous.

June 3. Advice came by a Messenger from the Commissioners at *Holdenby*, that Yesterday they had Information the Army had a Design to take the King away from them; and that last Night there came 700 Horse to *King's-Thorpe*, near *Holdenby*: That he, coming away from thence, was stopped and searched by the said Troopers, though they knew him to be one of the Commissioners Servants; and that the Commissioners dare not send any Letters lest they might be intercepted. Lastly, that Col. *Greaves* had drawn all the Guards into *Holdenby-House*, and had shut up the Gates.

Both Houses were now in great Consternation at this News, and sat Morning and Afternoon for some Time. And in the Afternoon of this Day the Lords agreed to the Form of a Letter to be sent to Sir *Thomas Fairfax*, to desire him to come to *London*, that they might be more fully informed by him of the Distempers and Dissatisfaction of the Army, and be advised how they might appease them. The Letter to be sent down to the House of Commons for their Concurrence, who agreed to it.—But the Parliament were soon put out of their Doubts, tho' not out of their Fears, for

June 4. The Speaker of the House of Lords presented a Letter to them from the Commissioners attending

tending the King at *Holdenby*, and a Paper inclosed, An. 23. Car. I.
both which were read : 1647.

To the Right Hon. the Earl of MANCHESTER,
Speaker of the House of PEERS pro Tempore.

June.

My Lord,

Y^Esterday we got first uncertain Intelligence of some Parties of Horse upon their March near *Stony-Stratford* ; towards Night, other Reports came to us of an Intention to surprize this Place ; whereupon Col. *Greaves* doubled the Guards by such as he had most Confidence in ; at length a Scout of our own brought Word of a Party of Horse rendezvouing upon *Harlaston-Heath*, not two Miles off, about ten o'Clock at Night ; and, withall, we were secretly informed that their Intentions were to seize Col. *Greaves*, and to possess themselves of this Place : Hereupon we began to prepare for Defence ; but we found, upon Advice with Col. *Greaves*, the Guards were so little to be relied upon, that we thought it requisite he should withdraw himself, lest he should be taken by Force from us, there being no Means left us to secure ourselves ; to which Necessity he was contented to submit, and we purposely caused it to be divulged that he was gone, hoping thereby to divert the Horse from falling on us ; but, about one of the Clock, we had certain Knowledge of their being drawn into the Park and Meadows adjoining, and that we were surrounded by them ; which caused us to send for all the Officers of our Guards, who, with one Consent, declared to us that they found no Disposition in their Soldiers to fight with any of the General's Army, with whom they had so often adventured themselves against the common Enemy. Whilst this Discourse held with them, it passing two of the Clock, about Break of the Day we discovered a Party of Horse drawn up before the great Gates ; whereupon we dismissed them to their Charges, and immediately, at our Back-Yard, where

Lord Montague's Letter, advising that Cornet Joyce had surrounded Holdenby House with a Party of Horse.

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

June.

‘ where our Horse and Dragoons stood, their Horse,
 ‘ with many of ours amongst them, entered with-
 ‘ out any Resistance at all, being quietly let in and
 ‘ embraced by the Soldiers. We presently sent to
 ‘ speak with their Chief Officer. It was answer-
 ‘ ed, That there was none that commanded them ;
 ‘ but soon after, Mr. *Joyce*, Cornet to the Gene-
 ‘ ral’s Lifeguard^d, came unto us ; and being de-
 ‘ manded the Cause of their coming in this Manner,
 ‘ he answered, They came with an Authority from
 ‘ the Soldiery to seize Col. *Greaves*, that he might
 ‘ be tried by a Council of War, for having scanda-
 ‘ lized the Army ; whereby a Plot contriving to
 ‘ convey the King to *London*, without Directions of
 ‘ the Parliament, would be prevented. We de-
 ‘ fired he would put the same into Writing, and ac-
 ‘ cordingly he delivered us the following Paper ;
 ‘ wherein you will not find Col. *Greaves* mention-
 ‘ ed by Name, tho’ intended.

May it please the Honourable Commissioners of
 Parliament,

The Paper deli-
 vered by him to
 the Parliament’s
 Commissioners.

*WE, Soldiers under his Excellency Sir Thomas
 Fairfax’s Command, have, by the general Con-
 sent of the Soldiery, manifested our true Love to the
 Parliament and Kingdom, by endeavouring to prevent
 a second War, discovered by the Designment of some
 Men privately to take away the King, to the end that
 he might side with that intended Army to be raisd ;
 which, if effected, would be to the utter undoing of
 the Kingdom. We shall be able and willing to bring
 our Testimony, when called for, who were the Plot-
 ters and Contrivers therein. This being the only
 Way and Means to prevent all those forementioned
 Dangers, that might have unhappily come on us and
 this whole Kingdom, whose Weal we have always en-
 deavoured with the Hazard of our Lives, and the
 Blood of many of our dear Friends and Fellow Sol-
 diers and Commanders. This being the only Thing*
pre-

^d Cornet *Joyce* was a Taylor, and had, two or three Years be-
 fore, served in a very inferior Employment in Mr. *Holles’s* House,
Clarendon’s History, Vol. V. p. 47.

presented to us, which put us on the late *Business* of the Preservation of the King's Person, and the ordering of the Parliament's Proceedings, together with the Commissioners great Care it is to be desired, and to discharge the Trust imposed on them.

' This is the Condition we are in, with much Sorrow to ourselves that we can give you no better Account, tho' our Endeavours have not been wanting; our humble Suit is, that by this bearer, Capt. Titus, you will please to send us *agreed* Directions; the Want whereof hath been a small Discouragement to us in the Service of this Length and Importance.

My Lord,

Moldenby, June 3,
1647.

Your Lordship's humble Servant

ED MONTAGUE

Capt. Titus also made a Narrative of the Success to the same Effect as the foregoing Letter.

Hereupon the Lords ordered that the Earl of Northumberland be sent to Sir as being the King's Children, now in the County of Northumberland, and that a Letter be sent to him for that purpose.

June 5. A Letter from the Earl of Northumberland to the Earl of Montague.

My Lord,

' THIS Night is eleven o'clock, and I am informed by your Messengers, the Command of the House for bringing back the King's Children to St. James's, which I shall readily obey, tho' there is very great Inconvenience to them, for there is no Provision of any kind for them at that Place. I am

Your Lordship's humble Servant

Hampton-Court, June 4,
1647.

NORTHUMBERLAND

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.

June.

Then another Letter from the Lord *Montague* was read, address'd as the former.

My Lord,

*Holdenby, June 4, 1647.*Another Letter from Lord *Montague*, concerning his Majesty's being carried from *Holdenby* by *Cornet Joyce*.

THE Party that possessed themselves of this Place upon *Thursday* Morning, carries the King this Day to *Huntingdon*, in his Way to *Newmarket*: We, having publickly declared to them that our Commission was to attend the King at *Holdenby*, and not elsewhere, till further Orders, are compelled to go along with them. Would the Convoy assigned to the Service have adhered to us, or had we been enabled by any other Force, our Resolution was to discharge our Trust with the Loss of our Lives, as we told them openly this Morning, when the King spoke with them in the outer Court; but upon the Question propounded, Who would stand by us? it was replied by them all, *Not a Man*.

We should make you a Narrative of Colonel *Joyce's* Admission to speak with the King, after he was in Bed last Night, when he propounded his going to the Army; and also of his Majesty's Answer given them in public this Morning: The Effect was, the King declared he came hither with his own Consent, though not so willingly as he might have done, to the end he might send Messages to his two Houses of Parliament, the greatest Power next himself in *England*, and to receive Answers from them: That he had sent them several Messages, and was, in short, obliged to stay for their Answers; yet, being no way able to oppose so many, he should go more or less willingly with them according to the Answers they should give him; but, withall, required to know by what Authority they came unto him. They replied, Their Authority was from the Army: That they did this of Necessity,

in

Lord *Clarendon* writes, 'That there was no Part of the Army known to be within twenty Miles of *Holdenby* at that Time; and that which administr'd most Cause of Apprehension was, that those Officers who were of the Guard declared, 'That the Squadron,

which

in order to the Peace of the Kingdom and Maintenance of the Laws; which were in great Danger of being overthrown by a Plot, divers Years since contrived amongst Persons that had a Hand in the present Government; and as to the King's Demands, which were, that he might be treated with Honour and Respect; that he might not be forced to any Thing against his Conscience; that his Servants, against whom they had no just Exception, might have Liberty to attend him. All this they consented to with Acclamation.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
June.

The Confusion we are in, together with the Haste they impose upon us, gives us not Leave to make you a better Narration; but shall humbly desire that we may not be forgotten in a Condition wherein your Service hath involved us, but that we may receive your Directions, remaining

Your Lordship's humble Servant,

ED. MONTAGUE.

The House of Commons busied themselves in voting Monies as the surest Way to satisfy the Army; and this Day, *June 5*, they sent up to the Lords, for their Concurrence, the following Votes and Resolutions:

Resolved, &c. That the Officers of this Army, not in Commission, shall have their full Pay upon their disbanding or engaging for *Ireland*, deducting for free Quarter according to the Course and Rules of the Army: That 10,000*l.* be allowed to the reduced Officers: That the common Soldiers shall have their full Pay, on the Footing of the Officers: That Commission-Officers should have a Month's additional Pay on their Disbanding: That the Declaration of both Houses, on the 30th of *March* last, be expunged. This last Vote the Lords

Votes passed for
satisfying the
Army,

which was commanded by *Joyce*, consisted not of Soldiers of any one Regiment, but were Men of several Troops, and several Regiments, drawn together under him who was not the proper Officer; so that the King did, in Truth, believe that their Purpose was to carry him to some Place where they might more conveniently murder him.

Hibbery, Vol. V. p. 48.

398 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.
June.

Lords debated; and the Question being put, for expunging the Declaration or not? it was carried in the Affirmative; the following Lords entering their Names as a Protest against it:

STAMFORD,	F. WILLOUGHBY,
SUFFOLK,	MIDDLESEX,
T. LINCOLN,	W. MAYNARD.

And expunging
the late Declara-
tion against them

When the same Question for expunging this Declaration was proposed the Day before, in the House of Commons, they divided upon it; and it was carried in the Affirmative by 96 against 79: Accordingly it was expunged in the Presence of the whole House; and, as the *Journal* expresses it, The whole House sitting. Here, says *Whitlocke*, The Parliament began to surrender themselves and their Power into the Hands of their own Army.

A Letter ordered by the Lords to be sent to Sir *Thomas Fairfax*, and now sent up again by the Commons, was read, and debated whether it should go to that General; but this also was carried in the Affirmative, the Lords *Willoughby* and *Hunsden* only dissenting. The Draught thereof, to be sign'd by the Speakers of both Houses, runs thus:

S I R,

A Letter there-
upon sent to Sir
Thomas Fairfax,
in the Name of
both Houses.

THE Houses have received your Letters and those Papers from the Council of War. They have taken into Consideration to do that which may best conduce to the Public Peace, and have already passed divers Votes in order thereunto, and are going on to the rest; which they are confident will give a full Satisfaction to all good Men, and will leave no Scruple in the candid and honourable Intentions of the Parliament towards the Army. These Resolutions cannot be ready to be with you before *Wednesday* next, at which Time they will send them to you, and a Committee of both Houses to advise with you how to improve these Votes
for

‘ for the settling of the present Distempers, and to
 ‘ give you their best Assistance in communicating
 ‘ them to the Army; and that it may be done in
 ‘ a more public and satisfactory Way, they desire
 ‘ you to appoint a general Rendezvous on *Wednes-*
 ‘ *day* next, upon *Newmarket* Heath; desiring and
 ‘ expecting that you and your Officers will, in the
 ‘ mean Time, so order it, that the Army shall
 ‘ neither remove, nor act any Thing to the Di-
 ‘ sturbance of the Public Peace. This being all
 ‘ we now have in Command, we rest
 Yours, &c.

An. 23. Car. I.
 1647.
 June.

The *Scots* Commissioners residing in *London* had also taken the Alarm, and sent to the Lords to desire they would appoint a Committee to meet them that Day, having something of great Importance to communicate to them. Accordingly a Committee of both Houses were ordered to attend the *Scots* immediately.

The Lords being informed that the Lord *Dumfermline* was in the little Lobby, and said he had a Message to the Houses from the King, they ordered him to be called in, and he delivered his Message: But the Lords desiring him to put it in Writing, that so they might deliberately think of it, it was deferred to the Afternoon of this Day. In the mean Time the Speaker, in the Name of the House, gave his Lordship Thanks for his Care in delivering the Message.

Post Meridiem. The Message from the King, as delivered by Word of Mouth, and now put in Writing, was to this Effect:

My Lords,

I Am sent by his Majesty to the Honourable Houses of Parliament, and commanded to impart three Things unto them:

A Message from the King by the Earl of *Dumfermline*.

1. That his Majesty goeth from *Holdenby* unwillingly.

2. His

400 *The Parliamentary History*

AN. 10. CAR. I. 2. *His Majesty desires that his Parliament will neglect no Means for preserving the Honour of Parliament, and the established Laws of England.*
 1647.
 June.

3. *His Majesty desires that they will believe nothing that is sent or done in his Name against the Parliament, unless they send to himself and know the Truth of it.*

The same Message was presented to the House of Commons by the Lord *Dumfermline*, who delivered it sitting in a Chair appointed him by the House for that Purpose.

Next, the Lords commanded the King's Letter from *Holdenby*, of the 12th of *May* last, to be all read, and then it was ordered to be read in Parts, and compared with the last Propositions for Peace; for the doing which the House adjourned into a Committee during Pleasure. The House being resumed, a Motion was made that the Question might be put, Whether this House would adhere to their former Propositions, or not? But it being put to the Question, Whether this should be now put? it passed in the Negative.

The last Thing of this Day was, that the Lords received a Message from the Commons, informing them that they, the Commons, intended to sit the next Day, being *Sunday*, in the Afternoon, and desired the Lords to do the same; which they readily agreed to. Accordingly

June 6. A Letter from Sir *Thomas Fairfax* was read, with a Paper inclosed.

For the Right Hon. the Earl of MANCHESTER, Speaker of the House of PEERS pro Tempore.

General Fairfax's Letter relating to the King's being removed from Holdenby. *My Lord,* *Kenford, near Bury, June 4, 1647.*
THIS Day I received Advertisement from *Holdenby*, that the Soldiers of that Party, formerly assigned to attend the Commissioners there

‘ there, together with some others belonging to
 ‘ that Army, (of whose Number or Quality I had
 ‘ no Account, nor how they came thither) have,
 ‘ of themselves, undertaken, by placing other and
 ‘ stronger Guards about the King than formerly,
 ‘ to secure his Majesty from being secretly convey-
 ‘ ed away. The Grounds they alledge for such
 ‘ Proceedings your Lordships may gather from
 ‘ the inclosed, which is a true Copy of a Paper
 ‘ sent to me in a Letter from thence; being, as it
 ‘ seemeth, a Kind of a Declaration presented to
 ‘ your Commissioners there by the Soldiers, to set
 ‘ forth the Grounds and Intentions in the said Un-
 ‘ dertaking. I understand that Colonel *Greaves*
 ‘ hereupon is secretly slipt away; and therefore I
 ‘ have immediately ordered Colonel *Whaley’s* Re-
 ‘ giment to march up thither, and himself, in the
 ‘ Room of Colonel *Greaves*, to attend the Com-
 ‘ missioners, and to take the Charge of the Guards
 ‘ necessary to be kept there. For the Prevention
 ‘ of any Inconveniency that might ensue, I thought
 ‘ it my Duty to signify thus much unto your Lord-
 ‘ ship, that I might understand the further Pleasure
 ‘ of both Houses thereupon. I remain

An. 23. Car. I.
 1647.
 June.

Your Lordship’s humble Servant,

T. FAIRFAX.

The Lords next proceeded to hear some Part of the Report from the Committee appointed to meet the *Scots* Commissioners the Day before, and the following Paper was read and delivered by them:

Worcester-House, June 5, 1647.

Right Honourable,

‘ **W**HEN, in *January* last, the Honourable The Scots Com-
 ‘ Houses did desire that the King, then missioners Re-
 ‘ at *Newcastle* with the *Scots* Army, might come monstration on
 ‘ to *Holdenby*, they did declare to the Kingdom of that Occasion,
 ‘ of at a Committee
 Vol. XV. C c Scot- of both Houses,

‘ This Paper is already given in the Commissioners Letter, p. 394.

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

June.

Scotland they would take Care of the Preservation of his Person, in the Preservation and Defence of the true Religion and Liberties of the Kingdoms, according to the Covenant; and that when the King should be at *Holdenby*, and the Scots Army gone out of this Kingdom, they would be ready, according to their former Declarations, to join with the Kingdom of *Scotland*, in employing their best Endeavours to procure his Majesty's Assent to the Propositions of Peace; and when the Parliament of *Scotland* did give their Concurrency for his Majesty's going to *Holdenby*, they did declare against all Harm, Prejudice, Injury, or Violence to be done to his Royal Person. We have attended these six Weeks past, in a Readiness to join with the Honourable Houses, according to their Declaration, for procuring his Majesty's Assent to the Propositions; and whilst we were expecting that an Application should be made to his Majesty, by both Kingdoms, to this Effect, we understand that, in a violent Manner, his Majesty is carried away from *Holdenby*, against his Will, by a Party of Sir *Thomas Fairfax's* Army; which we are confident is without any Warrant from either House of Parliament.

The Parliament of *Scotland*, to manifest their Confidence in the Houses of the Parliament of *England*, did consent to his Majesty's Coming to *Holdenby*; and now, by an open Breach against both Kingdoms, he is carried away from thence, we know not whither; which Action will certainly be highly resented by the Kingdom of *Scotland*, and doth engage us, according to the Duty we owe to them who have intrusted us, to represent our Sense of this violent Act, which must needs be dangerous to both the Kingdoms; and to desire that the Houses, in their Wisdoms, would take such Course as the King may be brought from those that have taken him away, unto some of his Houses near the Parliament; that so a joint Application may be made to him, by

‘ by both Kingdoms, for the settling of a just and solid Peace. An. 23. Car. I.
1647.

‘ And we do assure the Honourable Houses, in the Name of the Kingdom of Scotland, that, if there shall be Need, they will be ready, to the utmost of their Power, to join with this Kingdom, as for the Ends of the Covenant, so for rescuing and defending his Majesty’s Person, in the Preservation of the true Religion and the Liberties of the Kingdoms; and for maintaining the Privileges of Parliaments, according to the Covenant, wherein we shall have Regard to the Honour of this Kingdom as well as our own.

}
June.

‘ We cannot think that all who are of that Army are accessary to such wicked Designs, or will knowingly disappoint the Trust reposed in them by the Parliament: Some, we believe, have gone along in the Simplicity of their Hearts; such, we doubt not, but the Clemency and Wisdom of the Honourable Houses may, and will, reclaim to their Duty: And, upon the other Part, we trust the Prudence and Care of both Houses will, in such a Way as they think fit, provide against the present visible Dangers, which do more than threaten the Parliament and City.

‘ These Things the Conscience of our Duty hath moved us to declare; and as we have accounted it Guiltiness for us to be silent at such a Time; so, if a speedy Remedy be not taken against this Deluge of the worst of Evils, we trust that we have hereby exonerated our Consciences before God and the World.

By Command of the Commissioners for the Parliament of Scotland.

JOHN CHIESLEY.

June 7. The remaining Part of the Report which was made to the Lords, was contained in the following Speech, delivered by the Earl of Lauderdale at the Committee of both Houses in the Painted-Chamber: But we do not find that any farther

AN. 23. CAR. I. Notice was taken of these *Scots* Remonstrances
1647. this Time.

June..

My Lords and Gentlemen,

And the Earl of
Lauderdale's
Speech there-
upon.

THE Interests of these two Kingdoms of *Scotland* and *England* are so nearly conjoined in this Cause, that what is hurtful or dangerous either, must needs be so to both; for they are united, that they must stand and fall together: *The* Consideration hath moved us, who have served Parliament of *Scotland* here, to wait upon both Houses of Parliament, having understood that Majesty is carried against his Will from *Holde* we know not whither.

My Lords, the Parliament of *England* hath often, upon several Occasions since the Beginning of these unhappy Troubles, expressed their Resolution to maintain and reform Religion, preserve the established Government of the Kingdom, and to defend his Majesty's Person and Authority, in the Defence of the true Religion, Liberties of the Kingdoms: These I need not repeat; your Lordships and these worthy Gentlemen do better remember them; and I am confident you will make good what you have so desired: But we are all more solemnly tied; for when the Kingdom of *Scotland* was engaged in this Cause, the Parliaments of both Kingdoms entered into solemn League and Covenant for the Reformation and Defence of Religion, the Honour and Happiness of the King, and the Peace and Safety of both Kingdoms.

In Pursuance of the Ends of that Covenant, the Kingdom of *Scotland* hath employed both their Forces and Councils with so much Fidelity and Constancy, that the Mouth of Malice itself is stopped, even our Enemies being Judges; and to take away all Jealousies, and to shew our earnest Desire for the Weal of the Country, and settling Peace, our Army marched away, as they came into this Kingdom, in the Dead of Winter, punctually performing their Duty: And yet further to witness the

C

Confidence in this Parliament, the Parliament of *Scotland* agreed his Majesty should go to *Holdenby*, or some other of his Houses in or about *London*, untill joint Application were made to him by both Kingdoms for settling, jointly, an happy Peace : But it was with the two Houses of Parliament he was left ; they are of one Religion with us, and engaged in the same Covenant ; yet we now understand that his Majesty is violently torn away from that Place by some Soldiers of Sir *Thomas Fairfax's* Army ; we know not, nor cannot understand, by what Authority, we are confident not by the Authority of this Parliament ; and, I confess, I wonder how any Subjects of *Great-Britain* could take upon them to dispose of the Person of their King against his own Will, and the declared Intentions of both Parliaments.

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.
June.

‘ Your Lordships and the Honourable House of Commons know best what to do for your Honour and Safety ; I shall not presume to offer my Advice ; but because this Action will certainly be much resented by the Kingdom of *Scotland*, and have a very great Influence there, we are engaged to come hither ; and, according to the Duty we owe to them that trusted us, represent our Sense of this violent Act, which must needs be of great Danger to both Kingdoms ; and we do desire that the two Houses would, in their Wisdoms, take such a Course that the King’s Majesty may be rescued from those that have so violently carried him away, and brought to some of his own Houses near the Parliament, that a joint Application may be made to him, by both Kingdoms, for agreeing all Differences and settling a just and solid Peace.

‘ I can also assure you, in the Name of the Kingdom of *Scotland*, that, if there be Need, they will join as one Man with this Parliament to maintain, with their Lives and Fortunes, the Covenant, the King’s Majesty, and the just Liberties of both Parliaments, according to the Covenant, against whatsoever Violence ; to vindicate the Honour of this Parliament, and to preserve and strengthen the Union

An. 23. Car. I. of the Kingdoms, untill it please God to crown
1647.
all our Endeavours with Truth and Peace.

June.

As a further Means of pacifying the Army, an additional Ordinance, for the more full Indemnity of the Officers and Soldiers, was passed by both Houses, and ordered forthwith to be printed and published; an Abstract whereof may suffice ^d.

An Ordinance
for a further In-
demnity to the
Officers and Sol-
diers.

Forasmuch as, in the Times of this late War and public Distractions, there have been many Injuries done to private Persons, and other Offences committed by divers Persons bearing Arms in the Service of the Parliament; the Lords and Commons in Parliament assembled, taking into their Considerations that it is expedient that the Injuries and Offences aforesaid be pardoned and put in Oblivion, rather than, by Pretence of Prosecution against some few Persons, a great Number of such who have faithfully served the Parliament, should be brought into a continual Vexation for such Actions as the Exigency of War hath necessitated them unto; do hereby ordain, That all Persons who have committed any Offences, Trespasses, Injuries, or Misdemeanors whatsoever, during the Time they have been employed in Arms, by or for the Service of the Parliament, shall be pardoned for the same; and discharged from all Prosecution or Damages therefore, at the Suit of the King or the Party grieved; and may, in case they be questioned therefore, plead the general Issue, and give this Ordinance in Evidence: That in case any Person hereby discharged be prosecuted contrary to the Tenour of this Ordinance, after Notice given, such Person shall recover Costs of the Prosecutor. Provided, That nothing in this Ordinance shall extend to discharge any such Person from making a true and just Account, to any Committee of Parliament, of what they have received for the Service or Benefit of the Parliament.

The

This Ordinance is at large in *Scobell's Collections*, p. 127.

The Earl of *Nottingham* and Lord *De la War*, An. 23. Car. 1. 1647.
 Field-Marshal-General *Skippon*, Sir *Henry Vane*,
 jun. *Robert Scarven* and *Thomas Povey*, Esqrs; Mem-
 bers of the House of Commons, were appointed
 Commissioners to go down to the Army. Their
 Instructions were to acquaint the General with
 the Votes and Resolutions of both Houses, and
 desire his Assistance to communicate them to
 the Army; to cause the said Votes, &c. to be
 read at the Head of every Regiment, and to im-
 prove them to the best Advantage for the Public
 Peace; to give an Account to the Houses of their
 Proceedings at their Convenience; and to use their
 utmost Endeavours to create a good Understanding
 between the Parliament and the Army. Upon
 which Lord *Clarendon* makes this Remark, "Now
 the Army thought itself upon a Level with the
 Parliament, when they had a Committee of the
 one authorised to treat with a Committee of the
 other; which likewise raised the Spirits of *Fair-
 fax*, who had never thought of opposing or diso-
 beying the Parliament; and disposed him to more
 Concurrence with the impetuous Humour of the
 Army, when he saw it was so much complied
 with and submitted to by all Men."

Both Parliament and City were now in the ut-
 most Dread and Fear of the Army's coming up to
 them with the King, turning the former out of
 Doors, and plundering the other. This Day the
 Lords made an Order, That the Committee for
Irish Affairs, sitting at *Derby-House*, should im-
 mediately consider of the best Ways and Means
 for the ordering and directing the Forces within the
 City of *London* and Lines of Communication,
Middlesex, Surrey, Hertfordshire, and Kent, to
 suppress all Tumults, Mutinies, and disorderly
 Assemblies, to the Disturbance of the Parliament
 and Hinderance of their Proceedings, in the car-
 rying on the great Business of the Kingdom. To
 this the Commons gave their Concurrence.

June

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

June.

An Ordinance
for allowing Days
of Recreation in-
stead of the abo-
lished Festivals.

June 8. The Parliament passed an Ordinance for abolishing all Holidays, and appointing other Days for Sports and Recreations for Scholars, Apprentices, and Servants, in their Room; of which the following is an Abstract^f:

‘Forasmuch as the Feasts of the Nativity of *Christ*, *Easter*, and *Whitsuntide*, and other Festivals, commonly called Holidays, have heretofore been superstitiously used and observed; be it ordained, That the said Feasts and Festivals be no longer observed within *England* and *Wales*.

‘And to the end that there may be a convenient Time allotted to Scholars, Apprentices, and other Servants, for their Recreation, be it ordained, That, with the Leave and Approbation of their Masters first obtained, they shall have such convenient reasonable Recreation from their ordinary Labours, on every second *Tuesday* in the Month throughout the Year, as formerly they used to have on the Festivals aforesaid: And if any Difference shall arise between any Master and Servant, concerning the Liberty hereby granted, the next Justice of Peace shall have Power to order and reconcile the same.’

This Day the Commons sent up to the Lords the following Letter from Sir *Thomas Fairfax*.

For the Honourable *WILLIAM LENTHALL, Esq;*
Speaker of the House of Commons.

Mr. Speaker, Cambridge, June 7, 1647.

A second Letter
from General
Fairfax relating
to the King's be-
ing carried from
Holdenby.

‘BY my last, of *Friday* the fourth Instant, I gave you an Account of what I understood from *Holdenby*, concerning the Undertaking of some Soldiers, on *Wednesday* last, to secure the King from being secretly conveyed away; and that Col. *Greaves*, being thereupon privately slipt away, I had sent Col. *Whaley*, with his Regiment, to attend the Commissioners, and to take Charge of the King's Guards there.

‘On

^f At large in *Scobell's Collections*, p. 128.

Of ENGLAND. 201

‘ On Saturday Morning, being at a Rendezvous beyond Newmarket, and attending the Army this Way, in order to quarter about *Cambridge*, I received Advertisement that the Soldiers at *Holdenby* had, upon Friday Morning, with his Majesty’s Consent, brought him away from thence, together with your Commissioners. that they lay at *Hitchingbrook*, near *Huntingdon*, in the Night, and would be at Newmarket the Day.

‘ The Ground of this Remove was thought to be an Apprehension in the Soldiers of some further gathering towards the Place suddenly to fall upon them, and to force the King out of their Hands. to withstand which they thought they might be too weak, having then no Notice of Col. *Waller*: coming with his Regiment: Upon this I immediately sent after Col. *Waller*, to advise him thereof, with Order to direct his Course towards *Huntingdon*; and where ever he met his Majesty and the Commissioners, to desire they would come on no further this Way, but rather to return and suffer him to guard them back, and to prevent any Danger imaginable thereof. I sent off from the Rendezvous two Regiments of Horse more to march after Col. *Waller*, towards *Huntingdon*, and so on to *Hillsdon*, to be sufficient to him in the Guards about his Majesty. If it should be found needful; and thus I held on the Motion of the rest of the Army this Way.

‘ Towards the Evening, after the Quarter of the Army were assigned and taken up hereabouts, and the Regiments marching off towards their several Quarters, I understood from Col. *Waller*, that, meeting the King and Commissioners upon their Way from *Huntingdon*, towards *Newmarket*, about four Miles short from *Cambridge*, they had forborne coming on any further, but his Majesty being not willing to return back for *Holdenby*, they had taken up his Quarters, for the present, at Sir *John Cutts*’s House, at *Chisley*, being the next House of any Convenience to the Place where he met them: Hereupon I sent

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

June.

‘ther to Sir *Hardress Waller* and Col. *Lambert*, to inform the Commissioners of my Coming to *Cambridge* and the Army’s quartering thereabouts, and desired that they would think of returning back with his Majesty to *Holdenby*; and, because there might be many Inconveniences in Delay, that they would not make any Stay where they were, but remove back that Way next Morning, though it were the Lord’s Day. The Commissioners refused to act, or meddle any otherwise to dispose of the King, without the Parliament’s further Directions; and his Majesty declares himself very unwilling to go back to *Holdenby*.

‘Thus I have given you a true and faithful Account how his Majesty came to the Place where he is, and how the Quarters of the Army have fallen out to be so near him: Whatever the Concurrence of Events to make it thus may be suspected to design therein, this is the exact Truth of the Business; and I can clearly profess, as in the Presence of God, for myself, and dare be confident of the same for all the Officers about me, and the Body of the Army, that this Remove of his Majesty from *Holdenby* was without any Design, Knowledge, or Privy thereof on our Parts; and a Thing altogether unexpected to us, untill
‘the

§ Lord *Holles* informs us, ‘That a Meeting was appointed at Lieutenant-General *Cromwell*’s upon the 30th of *May*, where it was resolved that Cornet *Joyce* should, with a Party of Horse, go to *Holdenby*, and seize upon his Majesty; although *Cromwell* protested he knew nothing of it.’ And, after taking Notice that Sir *Thomas Fairfax* professed the same Thing, he proceeds thus, ‘Perhaps he said true; I would fain be so charitable as to believe it; nor indeed do I think the good Man was privy to all their Plots, he must have no more than what they were pleased to carve and chew for him, but must swallow all, and own them when they come abroad.’

Memoirs, p. 96.

Conformably to this Lord *Clarendon* (in his *History*, Vol. V. p. 52.) observes, ‘That tho’ General *Fairfax* had been with the King and kiss’d his Hand, and made such Professions as he could well utter; yet his Authority was of no Use, because he resigned himself entirely to *Cromwell*.’ And Sir *Philip Warwick* (in his *Memoirs*, p. 299.) adds, ‘That when, afterwards, they waited on the King both together, at *Roxton*, his Majesty asked them, *Whether they commission’d Joyce to remove him?* which they denying, the King answered them, *I’ll not believe you unless you tang him.*’

the Notice of it came upon the Rendezvous, as An. 23. Cat. I.
 before; neither was our Rendezvous, or our 1647.
 Coming hither to quarter with the Army, for }
 any Purpose or with any Expectation to be so }
 near his Majesty as it happened; but the Effect }
 is so far merely providential, and to us accidental: }
 That the Case being as it is, the Commissioners
 refusing to intermeddle as before, and the King
 to go back, I have placed, and shall continue,
 about his Majesty such a Guard of trusty Men,
 and under such Command, (Col. Whaley being
 Chief in the Charge) as I may be responsible for
 to the Parliament and Kingdom; and so far, as
 can reasonably be expected from me, by the Bless-
 ing of God, to secure his Majesty's Person from
 Danger; and prevent any Attempts of such as
 may design, by the Advantage of his Person, the
 better to raise any new War in this Kingdom.
 And truly, Sir, to prevent any Attempts of such
 as may design any such Mischief, as it is my
 own most earnest and humble Desire, so I find it
 to be the unanimous Desire and Study of the Ar-
 my; that a firm Peace in this Kingdom may be
 settled, and the Liberties of the People cleared
 and secured, according to the many Declarations
 by which we were invited and induced to engage
 in the last War: And the Parliament's speedy and
 effectual Application to these two Things, I find,
 would conduce more surely to a chearful and
 unanimous Disbanding than any other Satisfac-
 tion to their particular Grievances can do: And
 yet, whatever may be suggested or suspected, I
 do certainly find, and dare assure you, and you
 may depend upon it, that the Sense of the Army
 is most clear from any Purpose or Inclination to
 oppose the settling of Presbytery, or to have the
 Independent Government set up, or to uphold a
 Licentiousness in Religion, or to meddle with any
 such Thing as the Advancement of any parti-
 cular Party or Interest whatsoever; but wholly to
 leave all such particular Matters to the Wisdom
 of the Parliament.

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.

June.

‘ I shall, by the next, send you a full Account
‘ of the Proceedings and unanimous Resolution of
‘ the Army at the late Rendezvous, being not at
‘ present so fully prepared to do it as is fit.

‘ The Letter from both Houses I have received
‘ but this Night. The Quarter of the Army being
‘ lately altered before, will make the Heath near
‘ *Newmarket* less convenient for a Rendezvous ;
‘ yet I shall take Order, according to the Desire
‘ of the Houses, to have a Rendezvous either there,
‘ or not far off, on *Wednesday* next. I remain

Your most humble Servant,

T. FAIRFAX.

P. S. I shall, according to my Duty and the
‘ Desire of the Houses, do my utmost to keep the
‘ Army in good Order, to which I find it abso-
‘ lutely necessary that there be some Pay imme-
‘ diately sent down, otherwise this Country may
‘ suffer much.

‘ This Letter being long, and the Business re-
‘ quiring Hasten, I desire that this may serve at pre-
‘ sent to be communicated to both Houses.’

Money voted for
the Soldiery.

The same Day the Lords pass’d an Ordinance,
sent up by the Commons, for granting 10,000 *l.*
more, with Interest for the same, to be added to
the 10,000 *l.* assigned for the private Soldiers by
an Order of the 5th of this Month.

The Commons sent up, at the same Time, a
Declaration for repealing and expunging another of
the 30th of *March* last, to which the Lords gave
their Concurrence. This extraordinary Recan-
tation runs thus :

A Declaration
for expunging
that of the 30th
of *March* against
the Proceedings
of the Army.

‘ **W**Hereas the Lords and Commons did, by
‘ a Declaration of the 30th of *March* last,
‘ declare their Sense upon a Petition, with the Re-
‘ presentation thereunto annexed : And whereas
‘ they have been since informed, That the Peti-
‘ tioners intended not thereby to give any Offence
‘ to the Parliament ; and calling to Mind the great
‘ and

‘ and eminent Services done by the Army to the Par-
 ‘ liament and Kingdom, the Lords and Commons,
 ‘ being tender of the Honour of the said Army, have
 ‘ thought fit to ordain and declare, and be it decla-
 ‘ red and ordained by the said Lords and Commons
 ‘ in the Parliament of *England* assembled, and by
 ‘ the Authority of the same, That the said former
 ‘ Declaration of the 30th of *March*, be razed and
 ‘ expunged out of the Books of the said Houses,
 ‘ and wholly taken away and made void; and that
 ‘ no Member of the said Army shall receive any
 ‘ Damage, Prejudice or Reproach, for any Thing
 ‘ in the said former Declaration.’

Ap. 23. Car. .
 1647.
 June.

To shew more evidently what a Panic both And a Fast ap-
 Houses were in at this Time, the Commons sent pointed.
 to let their Lordships know that they intended to
 keep the next Day for private Humiliation and
 Fasting in their own House. ^h ‘ This Motion
 was made by Field-Marshal-General *Skippon*, who,
 with a doleful Countenance and lamentable Voice,
 exhorted the House to humble themselves before
 God; and to do those Things which a zealous and
 conscientious Army, who had done so much good
 Service, desired of them.’ Adding, ‘ That the
 Army was a form’d Body, not to be provoked,
 which would be upon them before they were aware.’
 The Lords ordered the same, in regard of the Di-
 stractions of the whole Kingdom. Both Houses
 appointed particular Preachers to pray and preach
 before them, and all the Members to be present.
 The Lords also ordered that the Lord Mayor of
 the City of *London*, and the Committee of the Mi-
 litia, should be sent to, to take Care to prevent all
 Tumults and disorderly coming down of the People
 to the two Houses of Parliament.

The Commons, however, had the Courage to
 put a Negative on the Question, Whether to give
 any further Answer to the Particulars in the Sum-
 mary from the Army? But this was done only by
 a single Vote, 78 against 77.

Soon

^h *Holles's Memoirs*, p. 105.

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.
Junc.

Soon after a Motion being made for concurring with the Lords in their Vote of the 20th of *May*, for Removal of the King's Person to *Oatlands*, it passed in the Negative by 119 against 86.

June 10. A Letter from the Commissioners with the King was read, and a Relation touching his Majesty's Removal from *Holdenby*. It was afterwards ordered to be printed and published, and we give it from the original Edition ^h.

To the Right Honourable the Earl of MANCHESTER, Speaker of the House of Peers pro Tempore, these.

Childersley, June 8, 1647.

My Lord,

A Letter from Lord Montague, concerning the King's coming to Newmarket.

‘ UPON Saturday, as we were upon the Way between *Huntingdon* and *Cambridge*, in our Journey, as we supposed, towards *Newmarket*, we were met by Col. *Whaley*, who acquainted us with the first Orders he had received from the General to attend the King with his Regiment at *Holdenby*, in the Room of Col. *Greaves*; and also with such other Orders as he received from his Excellency, after it was known unto him that his Majesty was upon his March towards *Newmarket*; whereby he was directed, at his meeting of the King upon the Way, to entreat his Majesty to take up his Quarters at the next convenient House, which he had assigned to be at *Childersley*, the late Dwelling-House of Sir *John Cutts*; wherewith his Majesty was contented. At the same Time we also received two Letters from the General, wherein he acquainted us, That the changing of the Guards at *Holdenby*, and the Removal of the King, had been without his Privy; and that he had sent Col. *Whaley*, with his Regiment, to attend his Majesty back to *Holdenby*: But those Orders which Col. *Whaley* last

^h London, printed for John Wright at the King's Head in the Old Bailey, 1647.

‘ last received, for waiting upon the King to such
 ‘ convenient Quarters as should be next to the
 ‘ Place where he met him in the Way, were given,
 ‘ as it seems, after the Date of those Letters he
 ‘ directed to us, and upon his Knowledge of the
 ‘ King’s being advanced as far as *Huntingdon*.

An. 23. Car. I.
 1647.
 June,

‘ Upon *Saturday* in the Afternoon the King came
 ‘ accordingly to this Place, and we returned An-
 ‘ swer to his Excellency’s two Letters; wherein
 ‘ we acquainted him with our Condition, and that
 ‘ we had sent to the Parliament for Directions,
 ‘ which we speedily expected.

‘ Upon *Saturday*, late in the Night, Sir *Har-*
 ‘ *dress Waller* and Col. *Lambert*, came unto us
 ‘ from the General, and desired our Advice what
 ‘ was fittest to be done upon this Accident, which
 ‘ had befallen by the Disorder of the Soldiers,
 ‘ without his Excellency’s Knowledge; and with-
 ‘ all propounded unto us the King’s Return to *Hol-*
 ‘ *denby*, whereto his Majesty had declared his ut-
 ‘ ter Averseness to Col. *Whaley*; insisting that he
 ‘ would not be posted from Place to Place, but,
 ‘ since they had removed him against his Will from
 ‘ *Holdenby*, he would now go to *Newmarket*. To
 ‘ this we durst not, in the Condition we were, pre-
 ‘ sume to give any Advice at all before we received
 ‘ new Directions from you; and that was all the
 ‘ Answer we return’d.

‘ Upon *Monday* the General himself, the Lieu-
 ‘ tenant-General, and other chief Officers of the
 ‘ Army, came hither; and were much pressed by
 ‘ the King that, for his Convenience, he might
 ‘ remove to his own House at *Newmarket*; pro-
 ‘ testing that he would not return to *Holdenby*.
 ‘ Herein, though much desired, we could not take
 ‘ upon us to advise or act any Thing; conceiving
 ‘ that no new Guards could be put into the Capa-
 ‘ city of the former, who, by Ordinance of Par-
 ‘ liament, were immediately to receive and observe
 ‘ our Orders, and could not be countermanded
 ‘ by any other Authority than that of both Houses.
 ‘ His Excellency, after much Discourse, returned

‘ to

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

Junc.

to his Quarters at *Cambridge*, having promised the King that he should have their Resolution before Morning; and accordingly Col. *Whaley* hath now received Orders to attend the King to *Newmarket*, whither we also waited upon him, expecting hourly to receive your Directions; which are hereby earnestly intreated, and will be extreamly well-come unto

Your Lordship's humble Servant,

EDW. MOUNTAGUE.

P. S. ' In regard I was straightened in Time when my last Letter was written, I have here inclosed sent you a perfect Relation of what passed upon the 4th of this Instant *June*, when the King spake publickly with the Soldiers at *Holdenby*.

The NARRATION betwixt his Majesty and Cornet Joyce, &c.

And a particular Narrative of what passed between his Majesty and Cornet Joyce.

THE Party being drawn up in the first Court before the House, his Majesty came down, and, standing upon the Top of the Steps, directed his Speech to Cornet *Joyce*; who, representing the Commander of the Party, stood before the Horse at the Foot of the Stairs.

' The King said, That Cornet *Joyce* having, though at an unseasonable Hour of the Night, acquainted him that he was come to convey his Majesty to the Army, his Majesty according to his Promise was there to give his Answer in Presence of them all; but first he desired to know by whom he was authorized to propound this to his Majesty. Mr. *Joyce* answered, That he was sent by Authority from the Army. The King replied, That he knew no lawful Authority in *England* but his own, and, next under him, the Parliament; but withall asked, Whether he had any Authority from Sir *Thomas Fairfax*; and whether in Writing? It being replied, That Sir *Thomas Fairfax* was a Member of the Army;

the

the King insisted that he was not answered; Sir *Thomas Fairfax*, being their General, was not properly a Member, but Head of the Army. *Joyce* said, That at least he was included in the Army; and that the Soldiers present were his Commission, being a commanded Party out of every Regiment. The King replied, That they might be good Witnesses, but he had not seen such a Commission before; and if they were his Commission, it was an Authority very well written, all handsome young Men. The King proceeded to say, That he came to *Holdenby*, not by Constraint, (though not so willingly as he might have done) to the Intent he might send Messages to his two Houses of Parliament, and receive Answers from them: That accordingly he had sent several Messages to them, and thought himself in a sort obliged to stay for their Answers which were not come; yet, if they gave him such Reasons as might convince his Judgment, he would go with them; nay, the Commissioners should not stop him. He desired therefore to know the Reasons they could give him for this Journey. *Joyce* replied, That a Plot, for these four Years last contrived by some Members of both Houses, to overthrow the Laws of the Kingdom, and a Design to convey his Person to an Army newly to be raised for that Purpose, were the Causes of their undertaking this Employment; and hoped would prevail with his Majesty to go willingly with them, thereby to defeat the Purposes of those that would otherwise, by the Countenance of his Person, perturb the Peace of the Kingdom: And that his being with the Army was the readiest Expedient he could think upon to procure him a speedy and satisfactory Answer to his former Messages. The King returned, That he knew not a Syllable of any such Design or intended Army: And that to seek an Answer with so many gallant Men at his Back, were to extort it, which were very unhandsome; besides that, their Proposal looked like an Oppo-

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

June.

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

June.

' sition to the Parliament, which he desired not,
 ' nor would ever infringe the just Privileges of
 ' the Laws of the Land: That these Reasons in-
 ' duced him not to go willingly; and therefore he
 ' desired to know what they intended, if he would
 ' not go with them. It was answered, That they
 ' hoped his Majesty would not put them to use
 ' those Means, which otherwise they should be
 ' necessitated to, if he refused. For the Commis-
 ' sioners, or any else that refused, they knew well
 ' what Course to take with them. The King pro-
 ' tested, That unless they gave him Satisfaction to
 ' the reasonable and just Demands he should make,
 ' he would not go with them, unless they carried
 ' him by absolute Force; and he thought they
 ' would well think upon it before they would lay
 ' violent Hands upon their King: That the Com-
 ' missioners had never put any Constraint upon him;
 ' they were more civil. Then he propounded,
 ' That he might be used with Honour and Respect;
 ' that they would not force him in any Thing con-
 ' trary to his Conscience, or his Honour; tho' he
 ' hoped he had long ago so fixed his Resolutions,
 ' that no Force could cause him to do a base Thing:
 ' Tho' they were Masters of his Body, yet his Mind
 ' was above their Reach. To all those Propositions
 ' they consented with a general Acclamation; Mr.
 ' *Joyce* adding, That their Principles were not to
 ' force any Man's Conscience, much less the King's.
 ' Then his Majesty desired that those which at-
 ' tended him, and some other of his Servants, a-
 ' gainst whom they had no just Exceptions, might
 ' be permitted to wait upon him. This being a-
 ' greed, the King asked whither they would have
 ' him go. *Oxford* was first nominated, then *Cam-*
 ' *bridge*. The King named *Newmarket*, which
 ' accepted, he desired Care might be taken to car-
 ' ry his Stuff; wherein Mr. *Joyce* said something
 ' was done already.

' The other Expressions of their Respect to the
 ' King, of the Armies Desire to see him with
 ' them, and of their Fidelity towards him, were
 ' in-

‘ intermixed in the Discourse, together with
 ‘ Complaints of the Proceedings of the Parlia-
 ‘ ment towards them; which the King said,
 ‘ He would not adjudge, unless he heard both
 ‘ Sides.

An. 23. Car. I.
 1647.
 June.

‘ The King having ended, at the Desire of the
 ‘ Commissioners, he gave them Leave to speak to
 ‘ the Troops; who, having repeated the Sum of
 ‘ their Instructions from both Houses, whereby
 ‘ they were appointed to attend his Majesty at
 ‘ *Holdenby* till further Orders, did publickly protest
 ‘ against his Removal, and against this Act of the
 ‘ Soldiers, as unlawful in itself, and dangerous to
 ‘ them; requiring so many of them, as would
 ‘ stand by the Commissioners in Opposition there-
 ‘ of, to declare themselves accordingly. But it
 ‘ being with a general Voice answered, *That not a*
 ‘ *Man of them would do so*, the Commissioners
 ‘ added, That, as honest Men, they held them-
 ‘ selves obliged to discharge the Trust reposed in
 ‘ them, to the utmost of their Power; and, agree-
 ‘ able thereunto, if they had Force for the Service,
 ‘ they would withstand them to the Loss of their
 ‘ Lives; But since they were not in a Capacity at
 ‘ present, they must acquiesce.

‘ As the King turned back to go into the House,
 ‘ Major *Tamlin*s declared to his Majesty, in the
 ‘ Presence of the Commissioners, That, according
 ‘ to the Orders they gave him, he had endeavour-
 ‘ ed what he could to induce the Troops assigned
 ‘ for the ordinary Guards, which he commanded
 ‘ in the Absence of Col. *Greaves*, to draw up and
 ‘ make Resistance; but without Effect, they all
 ‘ refusing to obey him therein.’

Both Houses had now a Guard of a whole Re-
 giment of Trained Bands, placed every Morning
 at Seven o’Clock, in the Precincts of the Parlia-
 ment Close, for their Security. And this Day,
 June 10, a Petition was presented to the Lords by
 Alderman *Cullum*, with other Aldermen and Com-

An. 23. Car. 1. mon Council of the City of *London*, which was received, and read openly as follows :

1647.

June.

To the Right Honourable the LORDS assembled in the High Court of Parliament,

The HUMBLE PETITION of the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and Commons of the City of London, in Common Council assembled,

Humbly sheweth,

A Petition from the City of London, on occasion of the Differences between the Parliament and the Army.

THAT as your Petitioners acknowledge the Parliament of *England* to be the Supreme Judicature of the Kingdom, from whom the Subjects of this Nation have found Shelter in Danger, and Relief in Distress; so now your Petitioners having, with the whole Kingdom, a great Share and Interest in these Privileges, do therefore at this Time humbly, yet earnestly, present these their important Desires to this Honourable House :

1. ' That all honourable Ways and Means may be used to prevent the further Effusion and Shedding of Christian Blood; and, to that End, that all just Satisfaction may be given to the Army, and all other Soldiers who have adventured their Lives for the Defence of this Parliament and Kingdom. That though the Condition of your Affairs do not enable you to give full Satisfaction at present, yet that their Accounts may be adjusted and put into a certain Way of Payment, to the quieting of many thousand discontented Persons; which we humbly conceive will be much to the Glory of God, the Honour of the Parliament, and the Quiet of the Kingdom.

2. ' That, according to our Allegiance, and the Covenant and Agreement of both Nations, his Majesty's Royal Person may be preserved and so disposed of that the Parliaments of both Kingdoms may have free Access unto him, that thereby a right Understanding may be obtained between

‘tween them; and this tottering Church and Kingdom, after all our Fears, Sorrows, and Sufferings, may enjoy the Blessing of a well-grounded and long-desired Peace, whereby this Kingdom may be the better enabled to send speedy Relief and Help to miserable bleeding Ireland.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
June.

3. ‘That, for the better Defence and Security of the Parliament and City in these tumultuous and troublesome Times, this Honourable House will be pleased to renew so much of an Ordinance of Parliament of the 17th of January 1645, as concerneth the raising, maintaining, and ordering of Horses, and Power of making Searches, whereby the Committee of the Militia of London, and Parishs mentioned in the weekly Bills of Mortality, may be the better enabled to suppress all tumultuous Assemblies, and to prevent any Dangers that may happen to the Parliament and City.

‘And as this City from the Beginning of these Troubles hath faithfully adhered to the Parliament, so we are resolved, by the Blessing of God, never to desert the same; but, with the utmost of our Lives and Estates, will stand and fall, live and die, with the Parliament of England, according to our Covenant.’

And your Petitioners shall pray, &c.

The Persons that presented this Petition being called in, the Speaker, by Directions of the House, gave them this Answer:

‘The Lords acknowledge the Constancy of the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and Commons in Common-Council assembled in the City of London; to have been such, as that you have never been alienated from your Fidelity to the Parliament by the Changes and Alterations that have been in the Condition of their Affairs; They likewise do acknowledge this your Care hath been the principal Means, next under the Providence of the Almighty, for upholding the Honour and Authority

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

June.

‘rity of the Parliament; and likewise for the Preservation of their Safety in Times of most pressing and imminent Danger: The great Reality and good Affections thus seasonably expressed by you, who represent this renowned City of London, in this your Petition, the Lords receive with Gladness, and have commanded me to return you their heartiest Thanks; assuring you that, as to the Particulars of your Petition, they will put them into such a Way as they doubt not but will give you full Satisfaction.’

The Lords ordered that this Petition and Answer be forthwith printed and published^d; and that an Ordinance be prepared and brought into their House, pursuant to the Desires of the City.

The Commons had received the same Petition from the City two Days before, and named a Committee also to bring in an Ordinance according to the Desire of the Petitioners. And Mr. *Whitlocke* says, ‘They had the heartiest Thanks the House could express, for their constant Affections to the Parliament, and for providing Guards so seasonably for the Safety of it; the Continuance of which Care was desired.’

The Commons had been some Time in framing a Self-denying Ordinance for their own Members only; and, this Day, the Debate of it was again resumed; after which they made the following Votes:

Disinterested Resolutions of the Commons,

‘That no Member shall receive any Profit of any Office, Grant, or Sequestration from the Parliament.

‘That the Benefit such Members have received shall be paid, for the Use of the Common-wealth, to the Committee of Accounts.

‘That the Lands and Estates of all the Members of the House be liable to the Law for Payment of their Debts.’

A

^d The Copies here given are from the original Editions, printed by *Richard Cotes*, the City Printer,

A Day was also fixed to hear Informations An. 23. Car. I.
 against Members; and that no Member hereafter
 shall receive any Reparation for Damages or Losses
 sustained by these Times, till the Public Debts be
 first satisfied.— All this was done, no doubt, to
 let the Army and the whole Nation see what disin-
 terested Principles the Commons acted upon.

1647.
 June.

June 11. The Lords received Advice from the
 Earl of Nottingham, one of the Commissioners
 sent down to the Army, communicated in the fol-
 lowing Letter, &c.

To the Right Hon. the Earl of MANCHESTER,
 Speaker of the House of PEERS pro Tempore.

Royston, June 10, 1647,
 Ten in the Morning.

May it please your Lordship,

THE Committee got last Night to Cambridge, A Letter from
 and immediately applied themselves to the the Earl of Not-
 General; and, about ten o'Clock, acquainted tingham, con-
 him and his Officers with our Instructions and cerning an En-
 your Votes and Resolutions, and left Copies of gagement enter-
 them in Writing. The General appointed eight ed into by the
 of the Clock in the Morning to give his Answer, Army.
 which we received by Word of Mouth about
 Eleven; but the Committee desired to have it in
 Writing, and about One they received the fol-
 lowing Answer from the General and his Officers
 by Mr. Rusworth:

By the Engagement of the Army at the last gene-
 ral Rendezvous, near Newmarket, your Lordship
 and the rest of the Commissioners may see what Way
 the Army had put themselves into for avoiding Con-
 fusion or Uncertainties; and, in order to a general
 Satisfaction in the Point of disbanding, you may
 perceive by that a ready and sure Way to bring that
 Affair unto an Issue, without any Course that may
 endanger Disorders or other Inconveniencies; but if
 you be, by your Instructions, bound up, or shall, of
 your.

424 *The Parliamentary HISTORY*

An. 23. Car. 1. *your selves, think fit to see the Votes and Resolutions of both Houses communicated immediately to the several Regiments, the Army being now at Rendezvous, I shall, with my Officers, be ready to attend your Lordship and the rest of the Commissioners, in pursuance of your Instructions.*

1647.
June.

‘ Upon Perusal of this Answer we have taken
‘ our Instructions into Consideration, and find our-
‘ selves obliged thereby to cause your Votes and
‘ Resolutions to be read, this Day, at the Rendez-
‘ vous at the Head of every Regiment.

‘ The General’s Answer having Relation to an
‘ Engagement of the Army, and we finding the
‘ same in Print, I send it your Lordship inclosed.

‘ This Afternoon we have attended the Rendez-
‘ vous, and immediately imparted the Votes and
‘ Resolutions to the Army, and find the general
‘ Sense of the Army conformable to that Engage-
‘ ment. I have nothing else to add but that I am,

My Lord,

Your Lordship’s humble Servant,

C. NOTTINGHAM.

*A SOLEMN ENGAGEMENT of the Army, under the
Command of his Excellency Sir Thomas Fairfax,
with a Declaration of their Resolutions as to dis-
banding, &c. read, assented unto, and subscribed,
by all the Officers and Soldiers of the several Re-
giments, at the general Rendezvous near New-
market, June 5, 1647^e.*

The Engagement
itself, containing
the Terms on
which they agree
to disband.

‘ **W** Hereas, upon the Petition intended and
‘ agreed upon in the Army, in *March*
‘ last, to have been presented to the General, for
‘ the

‘ From the Original Edition, printed by Roger Daniel, Printer
to the University of Cambridge. On the Title whereof is this In-
dorsement.

*It is my Desire that the humble Representation of the Dissatis-
factions of the Army, together with their Engagement, be forthwith
printed*

‘ the obtaining only of our due and necessary Con- An. 23. Car. 1.
 ‘ cernments as Soldiers, the Honourable House of 1647.
 ‘ Commons being unseasonably prepossessed with }
 ‘ a Copy thereof, and (as by the Sequel we sup- June.
 ‘ pose) with some strange Misrepresentations of
 ‘ the Carriage and Intention of the same, was in-
 ‘ duced to send down an Order for suppressing the
 ‘ Petition; and, within two or three Days after,
 ‘ (upon further Misinformations and scandalous
 ‘ Suggestions of the like or worse Nature, and by
 ‘ the indirect Practices of some malicious and mis-
 ‘ chievous Persons, as we suppose, surprizing or
 ‘ otherwise abusing the Parliament) a Declaration
 ‘ was published, in the Name of both Houses, high-
 ‘ ly censuring the said Petition; and declaring the
 ‘ Petitioners, if they should proceed thereupon, no
 ‘ less than Enemies to the State and Disturbers
 ‘ of the Public Peace: And whereas, at the same
 ‘ Time and since, divers eminent Officers of the
 ‘ Army have been brought into Question and
 ‘ Trouble about the said Petition; whereby both
 ‘ they and the rest of the Officers were disabled
 ‘ or discouraged, for the Time, from further acting
 ‘ or appearing therein on the Soldiers Behalf:

‘ And whereas, by the aforesaid Proceedings and
 ‘ the Effects thereof, the Soldiers of this Army
 ‘ (finding themselves so stopp’d in their due and re-
 ‘ gular Way of making known their just Grievances
 ‘ and Desires to and by their Officers) were enforced
 ‘ to an unusual, but in that Case necessary, Way of
 ‘ Correspondence and Agreement amongst them-
 ‘ selves; to chuse out of the severall Troops and
 ‘ Companies severall Men, and those out of their
 ‘ whole Number to chuse two or more for each
 ‘ Regiment, to act in the Name and Behalf of
 ‘ the

*printed and published. Given under my Hand the eighth Day of
 June, 1647.*

T. FAIRFAX.

Besides this Mr. *Rusworth* (p. 505, *et seq.*) gives us two other
 Papers relating to the Army, both which were originally printed
 also at *Cambridge*: But as they are very long and tedious, and the
 main Purport of them is comprized in our Extracts from the Jour-
 nals, this Reference to his Collections may be sufficient.

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

June.

the whole Soldiery of the respective Regiments, Troops, and Companies, in the Prosecution of their Rights and Desires in the said Petition; as also of their just Vindication and righting in Reference to the aforesaid Proceedings upon and against the same, who have accordingly acted and done many Things to those Ends; all which the Soldiery do own and approve as their own Acts:

And whereas afterwards (upon the sending down of Field-Marshal *Skippon*, and those other Officers of the Army that were Members of the House of Commons, to quiet Distempers in the Army^f) fresh Hopes being conceived of having our Grievances and Desires again admitted to be made known and considered in a regular Way, and without such Misrepresentations as formerly; the Officers and Soldiers of the Army, except some few dissenting Officers, did again join in a Representation of their common Grievances; and the Officers, except as before, did agree upon a narrative Account of the Grounds, Rise, and Growth of the Discontents in the Army, and their Proceedings in relation thereunto, with an Overture of the best Expedients to remove or satisfy the same; both which were presented to the said Members of the House, and from them reported to the House:

And whereas the Parliament, having thereupon voted and ordered some Particulars only towards Satisfaction of our Grievances, hath since proceeded to certain Resolutions of sudden disbanding the Army by Pieces; which Resolutions being taken, and to be executed before full and equal Satisfaction be given to the whole Army in any of the Grievances; before effectual Performance of that Satisfaction in Part, which the preceding Votes seemed to promise, as to some of the

^f These were *Ireton*, *Fleetwood*, *Harrison*, with many other Officers in the Army, who were about this Time elected into the House of Commons; in the Room of such as were dead, or had been expelled for adhering to the King; whereby they most effectually set aside their Self-denying Ordinance, and soon after gain'd a Majority against the Presbyterian Party in Parliament.

the Grievances; and before any Consideration at
all of some others most material; (as by the Re-
sults of a general Council of War on *Saturday*,
May 29, was in general declared, and is now
more fully remonstrated in Particulars, by a Re-
presentation thereof agreed upon by us all) we
cannot but look upon the said Resolutions of dis-
banding us in such Manner, as proceeding from
the same malicious and mischievous Principles
and Intentions, and from the like indirect Practices
of the same Persons, abusing the Parliament and
us, as the former Proceedings against us before-
mentioned did; and not without cruel and bloody
Purposes, (as some of them have not stuck to de-
clare or intimate) after the Body of the Army
should be disbanded, or the Soldiers divided from
their Officers; then to question, proceed against,
and execute their malicious Intentions upon, all
such particular Officers and Soldiers in the Army,
as had appeared to act in the Premises in Behalf
of the Army:

And whereas, upon a late Petition to the Ge-
neral from the Agitators in Behalf of the Soldiery,
grounded upon the preceding Considerations, rela-
ting to the said Resolutions of disbanning, the said
general Council of War (to prevent the Danger
and Inconveniences of these Disturbances, or tu-
multuous Actings or Confluences, which the Dis-
satisfactions and Jealousies, thereupon also ground-
ed, were like suddenly to have produced in the Ar-
my) did advise the General first to contract the
Quarters of the Army, and then to draw the same
to an orderly Rendezvous for Satisfaction of
all; and that his Excellency would immediately
send up to move and desire the Parliament to su-
spend any present Proceedings upon the said Re-
solutions of disbanning, to resume the Considera-
tion of the Grievances and Desires sent up from
the Army, and not to disband it in Pieces before
just and equal Satisfaction given to the whole:

And whereas some of the Regiments appointed
for disbanning, upon Notice thereof have with-
drawn

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
June.

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

June.

‘ drawn themselves from their Quarters adjacent
 ‘ to their appointed Rendezvous and Drawing to-
 ‘ wards the Head-Quarters; and the rest contract-
 ‘ ed their Quarters by Order, according to the
 ‘ said Advice of the Council of War: We, the
 ‘ Officers and Soldiers of the several Regiments
 ‘ hereafter named, are now met at a general Ren-
 ‘ dezvous; and the Regiments appointed as afore-
 ‘ said to be disbanded have not appeared, nor can
 ‘ appear; but are rather resolved not to appear at
 ‘ the several and respective Rendezvous, appoint-
 ‘ ed as aforesaid for their disbanding; and divers
 ‘ other Things have been done by several other
 ‘ Parties or Members of the Army, necessarily re-
 ‘ lating to the Good and Concernment of the whole
 ‘ in these Affairs.

‘ Now, forasmuch as we know not how far the
 ‘ Malice, Injustice, and tyrannical Principles of
 ‘ our Enemies, that have already prevailed so far
 ‘ to abuse the Parliament and Army, as is afore-
 ‘ mentioned in the past Proceedings against the
 ‘ Army, may farther prevail to the Danger or Pre-
 ‘ judice of ourselves, or any Officers or Soldiers
 ‘ of the Army, or other Persons that have appeared
 ‘ to act any Thing in the Behalf of the Army; or
 ‘ how far the same may farther prevail to the Dan-
 ‘ ger or Prejudice of the Kingdom, in raising a
 ‘ new War or otherwise: Therefore, for the better
 ‘ Prevention of all such Dangers, Prejudices, or
 ‘ other Inconveniences that may ensue; and with-
 ‘ all for the better Satisfaction of the Parliament
 ‘ and Kingdom concerning our Desires of conform-
 ‘ ing to the Authority of the one, and providing
 ‘ for the Good and Quiet of the other, in the pre-
 ‘ sent Affair of Disbanding; and for a more assured
 ‘ Way whereby that Affair may come to a certain
 ‘ Issue, (to which Purposes we herein humbly im-
 ‘ plore the continued Presence and Assistance of
 ‘ God, the righteous Judge of all) the Officers and
 ‘ Soldiers of the Army subscribing hereunto, do
 ‘ hereby declare, agree, and promise, to and with
 ‘ each

each other, and to and with the Parliament and Kingdom, as followeth : An. 23. Car. I.
1647.

First, ' That we shall chearfully and readily disband, when thereunto required by the Parliament ; or else shall many of us be willing, if desired, to engage in further Services either in *England* or *Ireland* ; having first such Satisfaction to the Army, in relation to our Grievances and Desires heretofore presented, and such Security that we ourselves, when disbanded and in the Condition of private Men, or other the Free-born People of *England* (to whom the Consequence of our Case does equally extend) shall not remain subject to the like Oppression, Injury, or Abuse, as in the Premises hath been attempted, and put upon us while an Army, by the same Men's Continuance in the same Credit and Power (especially if as our Judges) who have in these past Proceedings against the Army so far prevailed to abuse the Parliament and us, and to endanger the Kingdom ; and also such Security, that we ourselves, or any Members of the Army, or others who have appeared to act any Thing in Behalf of the Army, in relation to the Premises before recited, shall not, after disbanding, be any Way questioned, prosecuted, troubled, or prejudiced, for any Thing so acted, or for the entering into, or necessary Prosecution of, this present Agreement: We say, having first such Satisfaction and Securities in these Things, as shall be agreed unto by a Council, to consist of those general Officers of the Army, who have concurred with the Army in the Premises, with two Commission-Officers and two Soldiers to be chosen for each Regiment, who have concurred, or shall concur, with us in the Premises and in this Agreement; or by the major Part of such of them who shall meet in Council for that Purpose, when they shall be thereunto called by the General.

Secondly, ' That without such Satisfaction and Security as aforesaid, we shall not willingly disband or divide, or suffer ourselves to be disbanded

June.

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

June.

ed or divided. And whereas we also find many
 ' strange Things suggested, or suspected, to our
 ' great Prejudice, concerning dangerous Principles,
 ' Interests, and Designs in this Army; (as over-
 ' throwing of Magistracy, the suppressing or hin-
 ' dering of Presbyterian Government and establish-
 ' ing of Independent, or upholding of a general
 ' Licentiousness under Pretence of Liberty of Con-
 ' science, and many such Things) we shall very
 ' shortly tender to the Parliament a Vindication of
 ' the Army from all such Scandals, to clear our
 ' Principles in relation thereunto: And, in the mean
 ' Time, we do disavow and disclaim all Purpose or
 ' Designs, in our late or present Proceedings, to ad-
 ' vance or insist upon any such Interest; neither
 ' would we, if we might and could, advance or set
 ' up any one particular Party or Interest in the
 ' Kingdom, tho' imagined never so much our own;
 ' but should much rather study to provide, as far
 ' as may be within our Sphere or Power, for such
 ' an Establishment of common and equal Right,
 ' Freedom, and Safety to the whole, as all might
 ' equally partake of, that do not (by denying the
 ' same to others, or otherwise) render themselves
 ' incapable thereof.'

Several Ordinances
 passed relative
 to the public
 Confusions.

The same Day (*June 11, post Merid.*) the Lords ordered that the Committee appointed to draw up the Ordinance in pursuance of the Desires of the City, do draw up another for Indemnity of the Officers and Soldiers that are come from the Army, that they may not be tried by a Council of War; likewise for providing Quarters for them, and giving them Satisfaction for their Arrears.

Next, an Ordinance empowering such Members of both Houses as are of the Committee at *Derby-House* for the Affairs of *Ireland*, to consult, advise, and put in execution all Ways and Means, which, in their Judgment, may be necessary for the Safety and Defence of the Kingdom, Parliament and City; with Authority to raise Horse and Foot for that Purpose, and to send to the Common-
 Coun-

Council and Militia of *London*, and all Committees, Deputy-Lieutenants, and other Persons, as they shall think fit, for their Advice and Assistance therein, was read a third Time and passed; the following Lords entering their Dissent and Protestation against it, for this Reason, ' Being apprehensive this Ordinance might be an Occasion of casting the Kingdom into a new War.'

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.

June.

A Protest against one for raising Forces for Defence of the Parliament, &c.

DENBIGH, SAY and SELE,
MULGRAVE, GREY of Warke.
DE LA WAR,

A Deputation from the City waited on the two Houses, and presented them with the following Copy of a Letter they had received from the General and principal Officers of the Army, with their Desires thereupon; which we give from the *Lords Journals*:

To the Right Honourable the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and Common-Council of the City of London.

Right Honourable and worthy Friends,

HAVING, by our Letters and other Addres- A Letter from
presented by our General to the Honou- General Fairfax
rable House of Commons, endeavoured to give and the Army to
Satisfaction of the Clearness of our just Demands; the City of Lon-
don.
and also in Papers published by us remonstrated
the Grounds of our Proceedings in Prosecution
thereof; all which having been exposed to pub-
lic View, we are confident have come to your
Hands, and at least received a charitable Con-
struction from you: The Sum of all which our
Desires as Soldiers, are no other than a Desire of
Satisfaction to our Demands as Soldiers, and Re-
paration upon those who have, to the utmost,
improved all Opportunities and Advantages, by
false Suggestions, Misrepresentations, and other-
wise for the Destruction of this Army, with a
perpetual Blot of Ignominy upon it; which we
should not value, if it singly concerned our own
Particulars, being ready to deny ourselves in
this, as we have done in other Cases for the King-
dom's

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

June.

dom's Good; but, under this Pretence, finding
 no less involved in it than the Overthrow of
 the Privileges both of Parliament and People;
 wherein, rather than they shall fail in their De-
 signs, or we not receive in the Eyes of all good
 Men what is just, do endeavour to engage the
 Kingdom in a new War; and this singly by them
 who, when the Truth of these Things shall be
 made appear, will be found the Authors of those
 Evils that are feared, as having no other Way to
 protect themselves from Question and Punish-
 ment, but by putting the Kingdom into Blood,
 under Pretences of the Honour of, and their Love
 to, the Parliament; as if that were dearer to
 them than us; or as if they had given greater
 Proof of their Faithfulness to it than we. But
 we perceive that, under these Veils and Pretences,
 they seek to interest their Design in the City of
 London, as if that City ought to make good their
 Miscarriages, and should prefer a few self-seek-
 ing Men before the Welfare of the Public; and
 indeed we have found these Men so active to ac-
 complish their Designs, and to have such apt In-
 struments for their Turn in that City, that we
 have Cause to suspect they may engage many
 therein, upon Mistakes which are easily swal-
 lowed in Times of such Prejudices against those
 that have given (we speak it without Vanity)
 the most public Testimony of their good Affec-
 tions to the Public, and to that City in particular.

For the Thing we insist upon as *Englishmen*,
 and surely our being Soldiers hath not stript us
 of that Interest, although our malicious Enemies
 would have it so: We desire a Settlement of
 the Peace of the Kingdom, and of the Liberties
 of the Subject, according to the Votes and De-
 clarations of Parliament; which, before we took
 up Arms, were, by the Parliament, used as Argu-
 ments and Inducements to invite us and divers
 of our dear Friends out; some of which have
 lost their Lives in this War; which being, by
 God's Blessing finished, we think we have as
 much

‘ much Right to demand, and Desire to see, a happy
 ‘ Settlement, as we have to our Money and the
 ‘ other common Interest of Soldiers, which we
 ‘ have insisted upon. We find also the ingenuous
 ‘ and honest People, in almost all the Parts of the
 ‘ Kingdom where we come, full of the Sense
 ‘ of Ruin and Misery, if the Army should be dis-
 ‘ banded before the Peace of the Kingdom, and
 ‘ those other Things before-mentioned, have a
 ‘ full and perfect Settlement.

An. 23. Car.
 1647.
 June.

‘ We have said before, and profess it now, we
 ‘ desire no Alteration of the Civil Government.

‘ We desire not to intermeddle with, or in the
 ‘ least to interrupt, the settling of the Presbyterian
 ‘ Government; nor do we seek to open a Way
 ‘ to licentious Liberty, under Pretence of obtain-
 ‘ ing Ease for tender Consciences. We profess,
 ‘ as ever, in these Things, when the State have
 ‘ once made a Settlement, we have nothing to
 ‘ say but to submit or suffer; only we could wish
 ‘ that every good Citizen, and every Man that
 ‘ walks peaceably in a blameless Conversation, and
 ‘ is beneficial to the Common-wealth, may have
 ‘ Liberty and Encouragement, it being according
 ‘ to the just Policy of all States, and even to Justice
 ‘ itself.

‘ These, in brief, are our Desires and the Things
 ‘ for which we stand, beyond which which we shall
 ‘ not go; and for the obtaining of these Things we
 ‘ are drawing near your City; professing sincere-
 ‘ ly from our Hearts we intend no Evil towards
 ‘ you; declaring with all Confidence and Assu-
 ‘ rance, that if you appear not against us in these
 ‘ our just Desires, to assist that wicked Party that
 ‘ would embroil us and the Kingdom, neither we
 ‘ nor our Soldiers shall give you the least Offence:
 ‘ We come not to do any Act to prejudice the
 ‘ Being of Parliaments, or to the Hurt of this, in
 ‘ order to the present Settlement of the Kingdom:
 ‘ We seek the Good of all, and we shall here wait,
 ‘ or remove to a farther Distance there to abide,
 ‘ if once we be assured that a speedy Settlement

An. 25. Car. 1.

1647.

June.

of Things be in Hand, untill they be accomplish'd ;
 which done, we shall be most ready, either all of
 us, or so many of the Army as the Parliament
 think fit, to disband or go for *Ireland*: And al-
 tho' you may suppose that a rich City may seem
 an enticing Bait to poor hungry Soldiers to ven-
 ture far to gain the Wealth thereof ; yet, if not
 provoked by you, we do profess, rather than any
 such Evil should fall out, the Soldiers shall make
 their Way through our Blood to effect it : And
 we can say this for most of them, for your better
 Assurance, that they so little value their Pay in
 Comparison of higher Concernments to a Public
 Good, that rather than they will be unrighted
 in the Matter of their Honesty and Integrity,
 which hath suffered by the Men they aim at, and
 desire Justice upon ; or want the Settlement of the
 Kingdom's Peace and theirs, with their Fellow
 Subjects Liberties, they will lose all : This may
 be a strong Assurance to you that it is not your
 Wealth they seek, but the Things tending in
 common to your and their Welfare, that they
 would attain : You shall do like Fellow Subjects
 and Brethren, if that you solicit the Parliament
 for them on their Behalf.

If after all this you, or a considerable Part of
 you, be seduced to take up Arms in Opposition
 to, or Hinderance of, these our just Undertakings,
 we hope, by this brotherly Premonition, to the
 Sincerity whereof we call God to witness,
 we have freed ourselves from all that Ruin which
 may befall your great and populous City, having
 hereby washed our Hands thereof. We rest

Royston, June 10, Your affectionate Friends to serve you,
 1647.

THOMAS FAIRFAX,

OLIVER CROMWELL,	HENRY IRETON,
ROBERT HAMMOND,	ROBERT LILBURNE,
THOMAS HAMMOND,	JOHN DESBOROUGH,
HARDRESS WALLER,	THO. RAINSBOROUGH,
NATHANIEL RICH,	JOHN LAMBERT,
THOMAS PRIDE,	THO. HARRISON.

The

*The DESIRES of the City of London in Consequence
of the foregoing LETTER.*

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.

June.

*Commune Concil. tent. in Camera Guild. Civit. Lon-
don. 11^o Die Junii, 1647.*

‘**F**Orasmuch as this Court of Common Coun-
cil hath received a Letter, bearing Date the
tenth of this Instant *June*, subscribed by his Ex-
cellency Sir *Thomas Fairfax*, and other Com-
manders of the Army, signifying, for Reasons
therein expressed, the drawing the Army near
the City; the which, in this dear Time, may oc-
casion great Scarcity of Provisions therein; which
we hope is not the Meaning, nor will be the
Matter of Contentment to the said Army: For
Prevention of which this Court doth humbly
pray, if it may seem good to the Honourable
Houses, to send to his Excellency the General
not to quarter the Army, nor any Part thereof,
within 25 Miles of this City, hoping there shall
be no just Cause given them to do otherwise;
and that it may please the Houses to give to this
Court such further Directions in this weighty Bu-
siness as, in their grave Wisdoms, shall seem
meet.’

Which they pre-
sent to both
Houses, and de-
fire their Direc-
tions thereupon.

After reading the foregoing Letter from the Ge-
neral to the Lord Mayor, and the City's Desires
thereupon, in the House of Lords, the Messengers
that presented them were called in again, and the
Speaker gave them this Answer:

‘That the Lords receive daily Expressions of
the Fidelity of the City of *London*, for which
their Lordships return them Thanks; and will
speedily send a Letter to Sir *Thomas Fairfax*, not
to quarter the Army within 30 Miles of the City;
and their Lordships will speedily give them Ad-
vice in relation to the whole Business.’—But
afterwards, at the Desire of the Commons, the
Distance was extended to 40 Miles; and both
Houses agreed to send the following Letter accord-

An. 23. Car. 1. 1647. dingly to Sir *Thomas Fairfax*, sign'd by their respective Speakers.

June.

S I R,

June 11, 1647.

The Parliament require the General not to advance within 40 Miles of London.

THE Houses having this Day received Information from their Commissioners, of the Advance of the Army near the City of *London*, thereby threatening Danger to the Parliament and City; they have commanded us, in their Names, to require you so to dispose your Motions and Quarters, that no Part of the Army may quarter within 40 Miles of *London*; that so the dangerous Consequences, which may arise by a Fact so highly prejudicial to the Kingdom, may be timely prevented. This being all we have in Command, we rest

Your loving Friends, &c.

The last Thing that was done in this busy Day, when both Houses sat very late, was to pass an Ordinance, *For enabling the Committee of the Militia of the City of London to make Searches and raise Horses*: Of this the following Abstract may be sufficient:

An Ordinance empowering the Committee of Militia there to raise Horses, &c.

The Committee of the Militia of *London*, by themselves, or such as they shall appoint, are hereby authorized to search all Houses and Places within the Lines of Communication, and Parishes mentioned within the weekly Bills of Mortality and Hamlets of the Tower, where they shall have Cause to suspect any Papists are, or Persons who cannot give a good Account of themselves; or who have or shall discover their Ill-affection to the Parliament, by any Offence for which they ought to be sequestred or punished by any Ordinance of Parliament; likewise to search for Arms, Ammunition and Materials for War, in the Custody of such Persons, and to seize the same; to commit such Persons to safe Custody, or to expell them out of the Limits aforesaid, if they

This Ordinance is at large in *Rusworts's Collections*, Vol. V.

they shall see Cause; and, in case of Resistance, An. 23. Car. 1.
 to command any Constable to break open any 1647.
 House or Place within the said Limits, where
 Resistance shall be made: The said Committee
 are empowered to charge such Inhabitants, (as
 shall appear to them to be able) who constantly re-
 side within the Limits aforesaid, or such who have
 Stocks going in Trade and absent themselves, to
 find and maintain Horses, with Riders and Fur-
 niture, at their proper Charge, for the Defence
 of the City and Parts adjacent, to be under such
 Commanders as the Committee shall think fit;
 but no Person to be charged with more than two
 Horses: Any Person so charged, refusing or ne-
 glecting to provide the same within three Days
 after Notice given, or left in Writing at their
 Dwelling-houses, shall forfeit 20 l. Any Person
 neglecting or refusing to send forth Horses, &c.
 as aforesaid, as often as summoned thereunto by
 the said Committee, or such as they shall ap-
 point, shall forfeit 10 s. for each Failure, or suf-
 fer four Days Imprisonment without Bail or
 Mainprize; the said Fines to be employed by the
 said Committee towards the Payment of the Com-
 manders and Officers of the said Horse, and
 for such other Uses as they shall find necessary for
 the better carrying on the said Service: The said
 Committee have Power to make what Sub-
 Committees, within the aforesaid Limits, they
 shall think fit, for executing this and former Or-
 dinances now in Force concerning the Militia of
 London and Limits aforesaid: All Constables,
 Head-Boroughs, &c. and all Commanders and
 Soldiers of the Militia are required to obey and
 execute such Warrants as they shall, from Time
 to Time, receive from the said Committee or
 Sub-Committees, concerning the Execution of
 the same: No privileged Place or Person, within
 the Limits aforesaid, shall be exempted from the
 Power of this Ordinance, except the Peers of
 this Realm, the Members of the House of Com-
 mons, and the Officers and Attendants of both
 Houses

An. 23. Car. I. Houses of Parliament. This Ordinance to continue in Force one Month only.

1647.

June.

June 12. This Day the Common Council of London resolved to send the following Letter to the General and Officers of the Army, in Answer to that which they had received from them: Both Houses of Parliament having been consulted upon this Occasion, gave their Approbation of the City's Proceedings therein.

To his Excellency Sir THOMAS FAIRFAX, Knight, General of the Forces raised by the Parliament, and the rest of the worthy Commanders.

London, June 12, 1647.

Right Honourable and worthy Commanders,

The City's Answer to the Letter from General Fairfax and his Officers,

YOUR Letter, dated at *Roydon* the 10th of this Instant *June*, we, the Mayor, Aldermen, and Commons in Common-Council assembled, have seriously perused, and presented a Copy thereof to each House of Parliament; and, for your and our further Satisfaction, we have sent a Committee of Aldermen and Commons, with this our Answer thereunto, and to prevent all Misunderstanding betwixt your so well-deserving Army and this City.

We take Notice, by that Letter, of your drawing near this City with your Army, for the obtaining your Desires as Soldiers and as *Englishmen*, and what you do and what you do not intend thereby; more especially that you come not to do any Act to prejudice the Being of Parliaments, or to the Hurt of this, in order to the present Settlement of the Kingdom; and of your Declaration, *That if we appear not against you in those your just Desires, to assist those that would embroil you and the Kingdom in a new War, that you intend no Evil towards the City, nor that you or your Soldiers shall give it the least Offence.* But we desire that, in regard your Approaches may, contrary

‘trary to your Intentions, be an Occasion to increase the Price of Victuals, and to discontented Persons to make some ill Use thereof in raising of Tumults, that you will be pleased to take it into your further Consideration; and, according to your own Resolution concerning the City’s Safety, to forbear quartering within thirty Miles thereof: This we shall look upon as a special Evidence of the Sincerity of your Intentions expressed in your Letter.

‘We cannot pass by that Expression of yours, *to hazard your own Blood for our Preservation*; nor can we return you more real Thanks for it than this, to declare our Resolutions that the very Thought of engaging this Kingdom in a new War we unanimously detest; and that we intend no Evil to you, but only to defend the Parliament and ourselves against any unlawful Violence; for Prevention whereof, lest it should happen though you never intended it, we have, by the Direction of Parliament, and for our own Safety, put ourselves in a Posture of Defence; but not with the least Intention to do any Prejudice to that Army, whom God hath made so eminent an Instrument of our Deliverance and Safety.

‘And we do disavow the raising of any Forces, or taking up any Arms, in Opposition to, or with Intent to hinder, the obtaining of your just Demands; yea, so far have we been, and shall be, from that, that both before and since the Receipt of your Letter, we have made our humble Addresses to the Parliament for the obtaining thereof, which we shall not fail to prosecute as Occasion shall present; only this Request we earnestly make in the Name of the City, That you will be careful, when you descend into Particulars, to desire no more than what shall be just and reasonable; and in such a Way as may consist with the Honour, Power, and Privilege of Parliament, the Liberty of the Subject, and Safety

of

An. 23. Car. 1. 1647.
 June.
 of the City and Kingdom; and we shall appeal
 to God, and to the present and future Genera-
 tions, to judge of your and our Performance,
 according to the several Engagements.

*By Command of the Mayor, Aldermen, and Com-
 mons of the City of London, in Common-
 Council assembled.* MITCHEL.

The same Day a Letter from the Earl of *Not-
 tingham*, at *Roylton*, was read, with some Papers
 inclosed.

*For the Right Hon. the Earl of MANCHESTER,
 Speaker of the House of Peers.*

*Roylton, June 11, 1647,
 My Lord, Nine at Night.*

A Letter from
 the Earl of Not-
 tingham residing
 with the Army.

SINCE the Resolution taken by this Com-
 mittee last Night, to send two of our Num-
 ber to *London*, we do find that every Hour doth
 administer unto us fresh Occasion of Address
 unto you.

This Morning we having been to hear a Ser-
 mon at *Roylton*, where the General and his Of-
 ficers were, we did observe, upon our Return
 home, many Persons, Ministers and others, about
 an hundred in Number, on Horseback, styling
 themselves the peaceable and well-affected Inha-
 bitants of the County of *Norfolk*; who, meeting
 the General in the Street, one of the said Persons,
 in the Name of all the rest, presented a Peti-
 tion to him, after some Time spent in a Speech
 to his Excellency. This Morning, also, Infor-
 mation came unto us that, the last Night, a Let-
 ter was sent to the City of *London*, signed by the
 General and divers of the chief Officers, decla-
 ring the Intentions of the Army to come unto the
 City; which, so soon as we had Notice of, and
 were able to recover Copies of them, it was the
 Resolution of this Committee that both Houses
 should

‘ should be acquainted therewith; and I have accordingly here inclosed sent the Copies of them. The printed Copies of the Votes and Resolutions of both Houses, sent down unto us, we shall endeavour to see distributed, the best we can, to the several Regiments; though we find them to go off but slowly.

‘ I have no more to add, but that I shall, according to the Instructions given us, with all Faithfulness, endeavour to preserve a right Understanding between the Parliament and the Army while I continue in this Service; and shall not be wanting to give your Lordship frequent Advertisements of what comes to our Knowledge, whereby you may with more Certainty ground your Councils and Resolutions, as becomes

Your Lordship's humble Servant,

C. NOTTINGHAM.

The Letter from the Army to the City, mentioned in the above, we have already given: The Petition was in these Words:

*To his Excellency Sir THOMAS FAIRFAX, Knt.
Captain-General of the Parliament's Forces.*

The HUMBLE PETITION of the peaceable and well-affected Inhabitants of the Counties of Norfolk and Suffolk, together with the City and County of Norwich, earnestly endeavouring after the Prosperity of the Parliament and the Peace of the Kingdom,

Sheweth,

‘ **T**HAT whereas your Excellency has been appointed Commander in Chief over those free Commons of *England*, that have been invited by the Parliament to stand up in Defence of themselves and Fellow Subjects in Time of imminent Danger, against all arbitrary Government, Tyranny, and Oppression; and that the

An. 23. C.
1647.
June.

A Petition
the Countie
Norfolk and
folk, to the
neral, against
banding it,

‘ Par-

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

June.

Parliament has, by divers Declarations, Remonstrances, and Protestations, engaged themselves, both to God and the Kingdom, to endeavour to the utmost to maintain the antient Government of this Kingdom, and to preserve the Rights and Liberties of the Subjects, and to lay hold of the first Opportunity of procuring a safe and well-grounded Peace; notwithstanding all which, there is now an Appearance of a most horrid Design to ruin the native Liberties of the Subject; whereby Discontents are fomented in the Hearts of the People, and the Kingdom like to be divided into Factions, to the imminent Danger of embroiling us yet again in Blood: And from the Policy of the Complotters of this Design, we humbly conceive, have already proceeded those sad Obstructions of our free Addresses to the Parliament, in representing our Grievances and making humble Offers to their Wisdom of just Remedies; which have imposed this Necessity upon us humbly to implore your Excellency's Assistance to mediate with the Parliament, in the Behalf of us and all the free Commons of *England*, for the speedy and peaceable Establishment of those our native Liberties, which have now cost the Kingdom such vast Expence of Blood and Treasure; that all Obstructions that lay in the Way to hinder the Addresses of the free Subjects of *England* to the Parliament, in representing their Grievances, Fears, Doubts, and Jealousies, as also Offers of Remedy, might be so speedily removed, as that a firm Peace and Union might be yet again enjoyed in our distracted Kingdom, according to the Intentions of the Parliament, the frequently declared Engagements of the Army, and the ardent Expectation of all the well-affected of the Kingdom.

And your Petitioners shall ever pray.

This Petition was subscribed by about fourteen hundred of the Inhabitants.

After

After reading the foregoing Petition, the Lords An. 23. Car. 1.
ordered that a Letter should be written to the Com-
missioners, to let them signify to the Army that
the Parliament is in a Way of settling the Peace of
the Kingdom; and that it is desired they should
declare what the great Design mentioned therein is,
with the Particulars of the Matters and Persons,
else they must take it as a Reflection upon the
whole House. The Speaker was ordered to draw
up a Letter to this Purpose, and report it to the
House. They also resolved that all the Lords shall
be served with an Order to attend on Monday
the 14th Instant, about the great Affairs of the
Kingdom; and all such who have had Leave to be
absent to be recalled.

1647.

June,

Which gives Of-
fence to the
House of Lords.

Post Mer. A Letter from Sir Thomas Fairfax
was read, addressed to the Earl of Manchester,
Speaker of the House of Peers.

My Lord,

Royston, June 12, 1647.

THE Letter from both Houses, concerning
the disposing of Quarters of the Army, so
as no Part may be within forty Miles of London,
I received but this Morning between Nine and
Ten o'Clock: The Orders for removing to new
Quarters about St. Alban's were given out Yester-
day, without any Appointment of Rendezvous
for this Day, so as the several Regiments are al-
ready upon their March, in several Ways, from
their last Quarters to their new, and it is not now
possible to stop them. The Quarters now as-
signed, the nearest to London, are twenty Miles
distant; and of the Reasons pressing me to this
Motion, besides what my last Letter to yourself
does express, I have given the Commissioners here
a further Account, to which I refer you, since
now the disposing of the Quarters cannot at pre-
sent be otherwise. I shall, for the better order-
ing of the Army, be this Night at St. Albans,
appointed before for the Head Quarters; where

Sir Thomas Fair-
fax's Letter, ad-
vising that the
Army is march-
ing to St. Al-
ban's.

I

An. 23. Car. 1. 1647. June. I shall wait your further Resolutions on *Monday*.
I shall, by the next, give your Lordship an Account of several Petitions I have received from some Counties. I remain

Your Lordship's most humble Servant,

THO. FAIRFAX.

Next, a Letter from the Earl of Nottingham, with Sir *Thomas Fairfax's* Reasons for removing the Army nearer to *London* was read; and a Copy of a Letter from the Commissioners to the General, declaring their Dissent to that Removal.

To the Right Honourable EDWARD Earl of MANCHESTER, Speaker of the House of Peers.

*Roxton, June 12, 1647,
Twelve at Noon.*

My Lord,

Another from the Earl of Nottingham upon the same Subject.

Y^Esterday, after our Letters to both Houses were sealed and ready to be sent up, private Information being given to the Committee that a Resolution was taken by the Council of War, that the Head Quarters should be this Day at *St. Albans*, Mr. *Fuller*, our Messenger, was thereupon directed to give the said Information to yourself by Word of Mouth. We had no sooner received the Information, but we repaired to the General's Quarters, who, of himself, declared unto us the said Resolution of the Council of War; unto which we presently objected, that this was within 25 Miles of *London*, which the Parliament did not formerly hold fit that the Quarters of the Army should be enlarged unto, for straitening the Provisions that are to come to the City; and that now must needs be the more unsatisfactory unto them, in respect of the Jealousies of the Times.

To which the General replied, That the Reasons of the said Resolutions should be communicated

‘ nicated unto us, which he hoped would satisfy ; An. 23. Car. I.
 ‘ which Reasons we have received this Morning 1647.
 ‘ about ten o’Clock, by the Hands of Adjutant-
 ‘ General *Deane* and Colonel *Hewson*, as the
 ‘ Sense of the General and his Council of War,
 ‘ and are as follows :

*For a nearer Communication and Intercourse with
 the Parliament and City, the more readily to obtain
 Monies for the Satisfaction of the Soldiers, and
 keeping them under Discipline ; and to prevent the
 raising of any new War, and to procure the speedy
 Settlement of the Peace of the Kingdom.*

‘ Upon this we thought good to send the inclo-
 ‘ fed Letter to his Excellency, to testify our Dis-
 ‘ sent to his Reasons, and to declare our Resolutions
 ‘ to go to the Head Quarters at *St. Albans*, there to
 ‘ expect the Pleasure of the Houses, and pursue our
 ‘ Instructions, in endeavouring to preserve a right
 ‘ Understanding between the Parliament and the
 ‘ Army ; having heard not one Word from the
 ‘ Houses for our Direction since we came out. I
 ‘ have no more to add but that I am

Your Lordship’s humble Servant,

C. NOTTINGHAM.

*The Letter from the Parliament’s Commissioners to Sir
 Thomas Fairfax, referred to in the foregoing.*

*Royston, June 12, 1647.
 Two in the Afternoon.*

S I R,

‘ I N regard we do hourly expect the Pleasure of A Letter from
 ‘ both Houses, and that nothing may be want- that Earl, and
 ‘ ing in us to do our utmost Endeavours to keep the other Com-
 ‘ a right Understanding between the Parliament missioners, there-
 ‘ and the Army, according to our Instructions, upon, to Sir
 ‘ whilst we continue in this Service ; we have re- Thomas Fairfax,
 ‘ solved, for the present, to go to *St. Albans*, the
 ‘ Head Quarters ; but we do, withall, declare our
 ‘ Dissent to, and Disapprobation of, the Removal
 ‘ of the Army so near *London* ; not only for the
 ‘ Rea-

446 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.

June,

‘Reasons expressed by us to your Excellency the
‘last Night, but for the Reasons given unto us
‘this Morning, as the Sense of your Excellency
‘and your Council of War; which we do not
‘judge at all sufficient and warrantable for any
‘such Action. All which, in Discharge of our
‘Duty and Trust, we hold it necessary to acquaint
‘your Excellency with; and remain

Your humble Servants,

C. NOTTINGHAM.

P. SKIPPON.

H. VANE, *Jun.*

The same Day both Houses agreed to the following additional Instruction to be sent to their Commissioners with the Army, *viz.* ‘To use their
‘best Endeavours fully to know the Particulars
‘which the Army desires, and will insist on, for
‘their Satisfaction.’

Mr. *Whitlocke* writes, ‘That this Day, upon a Rumour that the Army was coming towards London, all the Trained-Bands were raised on Pain of Death, and strong Guards set; the Shops were also shut up, but in a Day or two opened again, and all Things were quiet in the City.’

June 13. Being Sunday, both Houses sat again to do Business at Four in the Afternoon, when another Letter from Sir *Thomas Fairfax*, address’d to the Speaker of the House of Peers, was read, with two Petitions inclosed; the one from *Norfolk* and *Suffolk*, the other from *Essex*, to mediate with the Parliament for settling of Peace.

Who sends to the
Parliament Peti-
tions from several
Counties in
favour of the
Army.

My Lord,

St. Albans, June 12, 1647.

HAVING had these inclosed Petitions, in the Names of the Counties of *Norfolk*, *Suffolk*, and *Essex*, directed and delivered to me by the Hand of several Inhabitants of the said Counties,
‘to-

‘ together with their Desire, through my Media-
 ‘ tion, to have their Grievances contained therein
 ‘ humbly presented to the Honourable Houses of
 ‘ Parliament; I assured them that I would, with
 ‘ all convenient Speed, make them known unto
 ‘ you, and also use my uttermost Endeavours for
 ‘ the speedy obtaining their just Requests; and
 ‘ therefore, conceiving it my Duty, I thought fit
 ‘ to tender them to your Lordship; not doubting
 ‘ but that, according to the Encouragement I have
 ‘ given them, you will please to consider and re-
 ‘ dress them therein as speedily as your other Af-
 ‘ fairs will permit. I remain

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

June.

Your Lordship's humble Servant,

T. FAIRFAX.

The Petition from *Essex*, herein mentioned, we omit, because that from *Norfolk* and *Suffolk*, given before, is of the same Tenor; as were several more from different Counties, all praying Sir *Thomas Fairfax* not to disband the Army till the general Grievances should be redressed.

Mr. *Whitlocke* here observes, ‘ That it was strange to see how several Counties, with the Citizens of *London*, began to make all their Application to the General and Army, omitting the Parliament; all looked upon the Army in the chief Place, and were afraid of doing any Thing contrary to them.’

The same Day a Letter from the Commissioners with the Army was read, directed also to the Earl of *Manchester*, Speaker of the House of Peers.

St. Albans, June 13, 1647.

Two in the Afternoon.

May it please your Lordship,

‘ WE attended the General this Morning
 ‘ before Sermon, and presented him with
 ‘ a Copy of our additional Instruction. We did
 ‘ desire him with all convenient Speed, to put the

Another Letter from the Parliament's Commissioners concerning the Motions thereof.

‘ Bu-

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

June.

‘ Army; and that whilst we were here in that Service, a printed Vote of both Houses, without his Knowledge or Privy, was conveyed and dispersed, with all Diligence, into all the Regiments of the Army; which Vote, as he told us, was to this Effect, *That such Soldiers as should forsake the Army, should have the Benefit of the former Votes of both Houses, touching the full Pay of the common Soldiers*; which may beget some Disorder in the Army, and doth draw the Soldiers into a very great Suspicion and Jealousy of what is intended by your Endeavours here.

‘ The General at the same Time did acquaint us, that the Lord Mayor, Aldermen and Common Council of the City had sent a Committee of theirs to him and the Army; who, by their Expressions, do endeavour to possess the Army with their great Desires of Peace, and of their having a good Opinion of the Army; and yet Letters have come into the Army amongst the common Soldiers, from their Correspondents in London, certifying them of their great Preparations there, as their listing of Horsemen to very considerable Numbers; and that the Soldiers here do apprehend themselves betrayed by their Officers, that they should thus lie still, whilst such Preparations are making against them; and that the Soldiers do apprehend these Preparations to be made, not with the Knowledge of the Houses nor of the City, but by some Committee in a private Way; and that if these Preparations were only intended to suppress Tumults and Disorders that might arise about the Parliament or City, the Trained Bands were sufficient, and more likely to preserve their Peace than these new Levies, consisting of Persons, as they did understand, whose Interest lay in new Troubles. The General did desire us to represent these Things to the Parliament.

‘ We did then acquaint the General that, as touching the Vote, none such were come from the Houses, or otherwise unto us, or Directions to

‘ to disperse them ; and, as to the Levies, we told
 ‘ the General, That perhaps some Things, in
 ‘ order to the Safety of the Parliament and City,
 ‘ might be done, being the Army was come nearer
 ‘ the City than twenty-five Miles ; and, whilst we
 ‘ were at such a Distance, Things might be mis-
 ‘ represented on both Sides.

An. 23. Car. I.
 1647.
 June,

‘ About an Hour after this the Committee from
 ‘ the Common Council gave us a Visit, and in-
 ‘ formed us, That the End of their Coming
 ‘ was to preserve a good Understanding between
 ‘ the City and the Army ; and that since their
 ‘ Coming hither they found the Soldiery possessed
 ‘ that great Preparations and Levies were made
 ‘ against them about *London*, to the Effect the
 ‘ General had formerly acquainted us ; and they
 ‘ did assure us whatever was done of that Kind,
 ‘ was without the Consent of the Common Coun-
 ‘ cil ; and that the Common Council did unani-
 ‘ mously detest a new War, or any Thing that
 ‘ might give just Offence to the Army.

‘ We have hourly, all this Day, expected from
 ‘ the General an Answer to our additional Instruc-
 ‘ tion ; but, by reason of the Coming down of the
 ‘ Committee of Council, it is not yet come, tho’
 ‘ we hear it is in great Forwardness ; and we hope
 ‘ to receive it this Night before we go to Bed,
 ‘ whereof we shall give you an Account with all
 ‘ Diligence ; so rest

Your Lordship’s most humble

and faithful Servants,

C. NOTTINGHAM.
 DE LA WAR.

P. S. ‘ We understand that the Soldiery grow
 ‘ impatient with the Relations that come, every
 ‘ Hour, of the Levies that are made in and about
 ‘ *London*, as they conceive, against them ; so that
 ‘ unless we receive from you, by To-morrow
 ‘ Night, something that may give Satisfaction

An. 23. Car. 1.

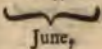
1647.

June.

Army; and that whilst we were here in that Service, a printed Vote of both Houses, without his Knowledge or Privy, was conveyed and dispersed, with all Diligence, into all the Regiments of the Army; which Vote, as he told us, was to this Effect, *That such Soldiers as should forsake the Army, should have the Benefit of the former Votes of both Houses, touching the full Pay of the common Soldiers*; which may beget some Disorder in the Army, and doth draw the Soldiers into a very great Suspicion and Jealousy of what is intended by your Endeavours here.

The General at the same Time did acquaint us, that the Lord Mayor, Aldermen and Common Council of the City had sent a Committee of theirs to him and the Army; who, by their Expressions, do endeavour to possess the Army with their great Desires of Peace, and of their having a good Opinion of the Army; and yet Letters have come into the Army amongst the common Soldiers, from their Correspondents in London, certifying them of their great Preparations there, as their listing of Horsemen to very considerable Numbers; and that the Soldiers here do apprehend themselves betrayed by their Officers, that they should thus lie still, whilst such Preparations are making against them; and that the Soldiers do apprehend these Preparations to be made, not with the Knowledge of the Houses nor of the City, but by some Committee in a private Way; and that if these Preparations were only intended to suppress Tumults and Disorders that might arise about the Parliament or City, the Trained Bands were sufficient, and more likely to preserve their Peace than these new Levies, consisting of Persons, as they did understand, whose Interest lay in new Troubles. The General did desire us to represent these Things to the Parliament.

We did then acquaint the General that, as touching the Vote, none such were come from the Houses, or otherwise unto us, or Directions to

‘ to disperse them ; and, as to the Levies, we told An. 23. Car. I.
 ‘ the General, That perhaps some Things, in 1647.
 ‘ order to the Safety of the Parliament and City, 
 ‘ might be done, being the Army was come nearer
 ‘ the City than twenty-five Miles ; and, whilst we
 ‘ were at such a Distance, Things might be mis-
 ‘ represented on both Sides.

‘ About an Hour after this the Committee from
 ‘ the Common Council gave us a Visit, and in-
 ‘ formed us, That the End of their Coming
 ‘ was to preserve a good Understanding between
 ‘ the City and the Army ; and that since their
 ‘ Coming hither they found the Soldiery possessed
 ‘ that great Preparations and Levies were made
 ‘ against them about *London*, to the Effect the
 ‘ General had formerly acquainted us ; and they
 ‘ did assure us whatever was done of that Kind,
 ‘ was without the Consent of the Common Coun-
 ‘ cil ; and that the Common Council did unani-
 ‘ mously detest a new War, or any Thing that
 ‘ might give just Offence to the Army.

‘ We have hourly, all this Day, expected from
 ‘ the General an Answer to our additional Instruc-
 ‘ tion ; but, by reason of the Coming down of the
 ‘ Committee of Council, it is not yet come, tho’
 ‘ we hear it is in great Forwardness ; and we hope
 ‘ to receive it this Night before we go to Bed,
 ‘ whereof we shall give you an Account with all
 ‘ Diligence ; so rest

*Your Lordship's most humble
 and faithful Servants,*

C. NOTTINGHAM.
 DE LA WAR.

P. S. ‘ We understand that the Soldiery grow
 ‘ impatient with the Relations that come, every
 ‘ Hour, of the Levies that are made in and about
 ‘ *London*, as they conceive, against them ; so that
 ‘ unless we receive from you, by To-morrow
 ‘ Night, something that may give Satisfaction

As. 23. Car. 1.^e therein, we fear they may speedily march nearer
1647. ' towards *London*.

June.

In the Afternoon of this Day a Letter was drawn up, read, and agreed to by both Houses, in Answer to the foregoing, and ordered to be sign'd by their Speakers, *in hæc Verba*:

My Lords, Westminster, June 15, 1647.

The Answer
thereto on the
Part of the Par-
liament,

' **T**HE Lords in Parliament have received your Letters of the 13th and 14th, and have commanded us to let you know, that their Desire is that you press your last additional Instruction, that so they may have an Answer thereunto with all possible Speed.

' They further commanded us to signify unto you, that that they know not of any new or extraordinary Levies made against the Army; and they desire you still to insist, that the Army, nor any Part of it, be quartered nearer the City of *London*, in regard of the many Inconveniences that may thereby fall upon the Parliament and City. They give you Thanks for your Care in Observance of all their Commands.'

The same Day the Commons sent up the following Votes for the Lords Concurrence, in relation to the Removal of the King's Person, which were agreed to, and ordered to be sent to Sir *Thomas Fairfax*; viz.

Whoresolve that
the King be
brought to Rich-
mond.

' Ordered, by the Lords and Commons assembled in Parliament, That the General be required to deliver up the Person of the King to such Persons as both Houses shall appoint; to be placed at *Richmond* under such a Guard, and in such Manner, as they think fit; to the Intent that the Propositions agreed upon by both Kingdoms may be speedily presented to his Majesty, for the settling a safe and well-grounded Peace.

' Ordered, &c. That the Persons to whom the General is required to deliver the Person of the King, shall be the Commissioners formerly appointed

pointed to receive the Person of the King, at *Newcastle*, or any three of them.' at An. 23. Car. I.
1647.

When the first of these Votes was put to the Question in the House of Commons, it was carried by 146 against 115.

June.

June 16. More Intelligence came from the Parliament's Commissioners with the Army, contained in the following Letters, directed to their Speaker:

*St. Alban's, June 15, 1647,
Two o'Clock post Mer.*

May it please your Lordship,

' AS we signified to you by ours late last Night, The Commis-
' we were in hopes then to have received sioners farther
' from the Army what it was they desired, and Account of the
' would insist upon, and to what End; somewhat Desires of the
' after Twelve o'Clock the General sent unto us, Army,
' and prayed us to sit up some Time, for that he
' would speedily send us the Answer. In Expect-
' ation whereof, such of us as were not before
' gone to Bed did stay up, but it came not; where-
' upon, this Morning early, we did attend the Ge-
' neral, who did excuse his not sending last Night,
' by some Mistake in the transcribing that could
' not be so soon amended, but that we should have
' it forthwith.

' About Eleven of the Clock this Day Lieu-
' tenant-General *Hammond*, and four Colonels of
' the Army, came to us from the General, Com-
' manders, and Soldiers of the Army, and presented
' to us their Representation; and desired us to send
' the same, with all Speed, to the Parliament;
' which here inclosed we present.

' We likewise sent to know whether, in this
' Representation, were contained all the Particulars
' that the Army did desire and insist upon. To
' which, by Colonel *Hammond* and other Officers,
' this Answer from the General was returned, That
' the Sum and Bottom of the Desires of the Army
' are delivered in the Representation, only there

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.

June.

remain some Heads tending to the clearing of
the Representation, which should be within three
Hours brought to the Commissioners. These
shall be sent you from

Your Lordship's humble Servants,

C. NOTTINGHAM,
DE LA WAR.

Another Letter from the Earl of *Nottingham*
was read.

St. Alban's, June 16, 1647.

May it please your Lordship,

I Received your Lordship's Letter of the 15th
Instant, about Ten o'Clock that Night; and
as to the additional Instruction, your Lord-
ships will perceive, by our Dispatch sent Yester-
day by the Lord *De la War*, Col. *White*, and
Mr. *Povey*, to the Houses, that we have obeyed
your Commands. We have also assured the Ge-
neral and his Officers, that no Levies are made
against him by both or either House of Parlia-
ment.

Concerning the Removal of the Army nearer
the City of *London*, I shall acquaint them with
your Lordships Commands; and let them know
your Lordships do expect their ready Obedience.
To which, so soon as I shall receive their An-
swer, it shall be sent up with Speed from

Your Lordship's humble Servant,

C. NOTTINGHAM.

Which are sent
up to the Parlia-
ment, by way of
a Representation
in Form.

This Declaration, or Representation, from the
Army, mentioned in the above Letters, is not en-
tered in the *Journals*; the Parliament esteeming it,
as may be well imagined, too derogatory to their
Honour to have such a Thing stand in their Re-
cords. However it was published by the special
Or-

Order of the General and his Officers*: From which Authority we give it, together with another Paper, printed by the same Authority and hinted at above, which contained the Heads of a Charge against several Members of the House of Commons.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
June.

And first,

A REPRESENTATION from his Excellency Sir THOMAS FAIRFAX and the Army under his Command, humbly tendered to the Parliament, concerning the just and Fundamental Rights and Liberties of themselves and the Kingdom, with some humble Proposals and Desires in order thereunto, and for settling the Peace of the Kingdom.

‘ **T**HAT we may no longer be the Dissatisfaction of our Friends, the Subject of our Enemies Malice, (to work Jealousies and Misrepresentations upon) and the Suspicion, if not Astonishment, of many in the Kingdom, in our late or present Transactions and Conduct of Business, we shall, in all Faithfulness and Clearness, profess and declare unto you those Things which have of late protracted and hindered our disbanding; the present Grievances which press our Army, and are yet unremedied; with our Desires as to the complete Settlement of the Liberties and Peace of the Kingdom, which is that Blessing of God than which, of all worldly Things, nothing is more dear unto us or more precious in our Thoughts; we having hitherto thought all our present Enjoyments (whether of Life, or Livelihood, or nearest Relations) a Price
‘ but

* Printed at Cambridge, by Roger Daniel, Printer to the University, with the following Fiat.

St. Alban's, June 14, 1647.

By the Appointment of his Excellency Sir Thomas Fairfax, with the Officers and Soldiery under his Command.

J. Rushworth, Secretary.

It is also given in the *Collections*, Vol. VI. p. 564. but imperfectly, as will appear in the next Note.

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

June.

‘ but sufficient to the Purchase of so rich a Blessing;
 ‘ that we, and all the free-born People of this Nation
 ‘ may sit down in Quiet under our Vines, and un-
 ‘ der the glorious Administration of Justice and
 ‘ Righteousness, and in full Possession of those fun-
 ‘ damental Rights and Liberties, without which
 ‘ we can have little Hopes, as to human Consi-
 ‘ derations, to enjoy either any Comfort of Life,
 ‘ or so much as Life itself, but at the Pleasure of
 ‘ some Men, ruling merely according to Will and
 ‘ Power.

‘ It cannot be unknown what hath passed be-
 ‘ twixt the Parliament and the Army as to the Ser-
 ‘ vice of *Ireland*; by all which, together with the
 ‘ late Proceedings against the Army in relation to
 ‘ their Petitions and Grievances, all Men may
 ‘ judge what hath hindered the Army from a ready
 ‘ Engagement in that Service; and without fur-
 ‘ ther Account or Apology as to that Particular,
 ‘ than what those Passages and Proceedings them-
 ‘ selves, already made public, do afford, we do
 ‘ appeal to all Men, whether those Courses to
 ‘ which the Parliament hath, by the Designs and
 ‘ Practice of some, been drawn, have rational-
 ‘ ly tended to induce a chearful and unanimous
 ‘ Undertaking of the Army as to that Service, or
 ‘ rather to break and pull the Army in Pieces with
 ‘ Discontents and Dishonour; and to put such Dif-
 ‘ obligations and Provocations upon it as might
 ‘ drive it into Distemper, and, indeed, discourage
 ‘ both this Army and other Soldiers from any fur-
 ‘ ther Engagement in the Parliament’s Service.
 ‘ And we wish all Men would with us, upon the
 ‘ whole Carriage, seriously consider whether, in the
 ‘ Intentions of those who have, by false Informa-
 ‘ tions and Misrepresentations, put the Parliament
 ‘ upon such Ways, the timely and effectual Re-
 ‘ lief of *Ireland* seems really to have been intended;
 ‘ or rather, with the breaking and disbanding of
 ‘ this Army, to draw together or raise such other
 ‘ Forces,

Forces, and of such a Temper, as might serve
to some desperate and destructive Designs in
England: For which, besides the probable Suspi-
cions from their Carriage of the Business, we
have before-hand, in the Transaction thereof,
had more than Hints of such a Design, by clear
Expressions to that Purpose, from many of those
Officers of the Army that have been persuaded,
and appeared most forward, to engage for Ireland
on the Terms proposed. And that such a Design
hath all along been driven seems now too evi-
dent, by the present disposing of those Forces that
have been engaged as for Ireland, by the En-
deavours of some to gain a Power from the Par-
liament of ordering the same for some Service in
England, and by the private Listings of Men for
Service here, without any public Authority of
Parliament; and all this by the same Persons
who have all along appeared most active and vio-
lent in the late Proceedings against the Army.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.

June.

As to the just Discontents and Dissatisfactions
of the Army in relation to their Grievances, and
their Non-compliance to the late Orders for sud-
den disbanding by Piece-meal, before more full
and equal Satisfaction were given to the whole,
we desire you to look back to the Papers already
published of the Grievances themselves, the Nar-
rative of the Officers, and to the later Papers
from the general Council of War at Bury, and
from the late general Rendezvous last Week near
Newmarket: And, we think, the Parliament's
late resuming the Consideration of those Things,
as to a further Satisfaction, doth much justify
the Desires and Proceedings of the Army in those
past Particulars hitherto.

And though had we, upon our first Addresses
for our undoubted Rights and Dues, found a free
and candid Reception, with a just Consideration
and reasonable Satisfaction, or at least an inge-
nuous Answer therein, we should have been ea-
sily persuaded to have abated or forborne much

of

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.

June.

of our Dues; and not to have inquired into or considered, so far as we have, either the Possibilities there are for more present Satisfaction of Arrears, or the Credit of future Securities proposed; yet since, upon those former Addressses, we have found such unworthy Dealing, as in the said Papers is set forth: And those additional, tho' hitherto but partial, Satisfactions coming so hardly as they have, we find no obliging Reasons, in the least, to decline or recede from what is our Due; but rather still to adhere unto our Desires of full and equal Satisfaction in all the Things mentioned in the aforesaid Papers, not only in behalf of ourselves and the Army, but also of the whole Soldiery throughout the Kingdom, who have concurred, or shall concur, with us in the same Desires.

And to all our former Desires as Soldiers we cannot but add this, (wherein we find ourselves so nearly concerned in point of Justice and Reputation) That more Care and a stricter Course may be taken for making good all Articles granted upon Surrenders, according to the true Intent and Meaning of them; as also for Remedy and Reparation in case of any Breach; and this without those Delays which divers have found as prejudicial, or more, than if they had been totally denied the Performance of them.

Nor will it now, we hope, seem strange or unseasonable to rational and honest Men, who consider the Consequence of our present Case to their own and the Kingdom's, as well as our future Concernments in point of Right, Freedom, Peace, and Safety, if (from a deep Sense of the high Consequence of our present Case, both to ourselves in future and all other People) we shall, before disbanding, proceed in our own and the Kingdom's Behalf, to propound and plead for some Provision for our and the Kingdom's Satisfaction and future Security in relation to those Things; especially considering that we were not a mere

' mere mercenary Army, hired to serve any arbitrary Power of State, but called forth and conjured, by the several Declarations of Parliament, to the Defence of our own and the People's just Rights and Liberties: And so we took up Arms in Judgment and Conscience to those Ends, and have so continued them; and are resolved, according to your first just Desires in your Declarations, and such Principles as we have received from your frequent Informations and our own common Sense, concerning these our fundamental Rights and Liberties, to assert and vindicate the just Power and Rights of this Kingdom in Parliament, for those common Ends premised, against all arbitrary Power, Violence, and Oppression, and all particular Parties and Interests whatsoever; the said Declarations still directing us to the equitable Sense of all Laws and Constitutions, as dispensing with the very Letter of the same, and being supreme to it, when the Safety and Preservation of all is concerned; and assuring us, that all Authority is fundamentally seated in the Office, and but ministerially in the Persons. Neither do or will these our Proceedings, as we are fully and in Conscience persuaded, amount to any Thing unwarrantable before God and Men; being thus far much short of the common Proceedings, in other Nations, to Things of an higher Nature than we have yet appeared to: And we cannot but be sensible of the great Complaints that have been made to us generally in the Kingdom, from the People where we march, of Arbitrariness and Injustice, to their great and insupportable Oppression.

' And truly such Kingdoms as have, according both to the Law of Nature and Nations, appeared to be the Vindicators and Defenders of their just Rights and Liberties, have proceeded much higher: As our Brethren of *Scotland*, who, in the first Beginning of these late Differences, associated in Covenant from the very same Principles and Grounds, having no visible Form either

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

June.

' Rights, Freedom, Peace, and Safety, as follow- An. 27. Ch. 2.
' ed: 1647.

I. ' That the Houses may be speedily purged of
' such Members as, for their Delinquency, or for
' Corruption, or Abuse to the State, or undue
' Election, ought not to sit there; whereas the
' late Elections in *Corwall, Wales*, and other Parts
' of the Kingdom, afford too many Examples to
' the great Prejudice of the People's Freedom in
' the said Elections.

II. ' That those Persons who have, in the late
' unjust and high Proceedings against the Army,
' appeared to have the Will, the Confidence, Cre-
' dit and Power to abuse the Parliament and the
' Army, and endanger the Kingdom in carrying
' on such Things against us while an Army, may
' be some way speedily disabled from doing the like
' or worse to us, (when disbanded and dispersed,
' and in the Condition of private Men) or to other
' the free-born People of *England* in the same Con-
' dition with us; and that, for that Purpose, the
' same Persons may not continue in the same
' Power, especially as ours and the Kingdom's
' Judges in the highest Trust, but may be made
' incapable thereof for the future.

' And if it be questioned who those are, we
' thought not fit particularly to name them in this
' our Representation to you; but shall very spee-
' dily give in their Names, and, before long, shall
' offer what we have to say against them to your
' Commissioners; wherein we hope so to carry
' ourselves, as that the World shall see we aim at
' nothing of private Revenge or Animosity, but
' that Justice may have a free Course; and the
' Kingdom be eased, at least, by disabling such
' Men from Places of Judicature, who, desiring to
' advantage and set up themselves and their Party,
' in a general Confusion, have endeavoured to put
' the Kingdom into a new Flame of War, than
' which nothing is more abhorrent unto us.

' But because neither the granting of this alone
' would be sufficient to secure our own and the

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

June.

Kingdom's Rights, Liberties, and Safety, either for the present Age, or Posterity; nor would the Proposal of this, singly, be free from the Scandal and Appearance of Faction, or Design only to suppress one Party, under the Notion of unjust or oppressive, that we may advance another which may be imagined more our own: We therefore declare,

That indeed we cannot but wish that such Men, and such only, might be preferred to the great Power and Trust of the Common-wealth, as are approved at least for moral Righteousness; and of such we cannot but, in our Wishes, prefer those that appear acted thereunto by a Principle of Conscience and Religion in them; and accordingly we do and ever shall bless God for those many Worthies, who, through his Providence, have been chosen into this Parliament; and to such Men's Endeavours, under God, we cannot but attribute that Vindication in Part of the People's Rights and Liberties, and those Beginnings of a just Reformation, which the Proceedings at the Beginning of this Parliament appeared to have driven at, and tended to, tho' of late obstructed or rather diverted to other Ends and Interests by the prevailing of other Persons, of other Principles and Conditions.

But we are so far from designing or complying to have any absolute arbitrary Power fixed or settled, for Continuance, in any Persons whatsoever, as that, if we might be sure to obtain it, we cannot wish to have it so in the Persons of any who we might best confide in, or who should appear most of our own Opinions or Principles, or whom we might have most Personal Assurance of, or Interest in; but we do and shall much rather wish that the Authority of this Kingdom in a Parliament rightly constituted, free, equally, and successively chosen, according to its original Intention, may ever stand and have its Course; and therefore we shall apply our Desires chiefly to such Things, as (by having Parliaments settled in
such

such a right Constitution) may give more Hopes
of Justice and Righteousness to flow down equal-
ly to all in that its antient Channel, without any
Overtures tending either to overthrow that Foun-
dation either of Order or Government in this
Kingdom, or to ingross that Power, for Perpe-
tuity, into the Hands of any particular Person
or Party whatsoever.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
Junt.

And for that Purpose, though, as we have found
it doubted by many Men, minding sincerely the
Publick Good, but not weighing so fully all Con-
sequences of Things, it may and is not unlike to
prove, that, upon the End of this Parliament and
Election of a new, the Constitution of succeed-
ing Parliaments, as to the Persons elected, may
prove for the worse many Ways; yet since nei-
ther in the purging of this present Parliament, nor
in the Election of a new, we can promise to our-
selves or the Kingdom an Assurance of Justice, or
other positive Good from the Hands of Men; but
those that appear at present most righteous, and
most for common Good, (having an unlimited
Power fixed in them during Life or Pleasure) in
Time may become corrupt, or settle into Parties
or Factions; or on the other Side, in case of new
Elections, those that should so succeed may prove
as bad or worse than the former:

We therefore humbly conceive that (of two
Inconveniences the less being to be chosen) the
main Thing to be intended in the Case (and be-
yond which human Providence cannot reach, as
to any Assurance of positive Good) seems to be
this, viz. To provide that however unjust or cor-
rupt the Persons of Parliament-Men, in present or
future, may prove; or whatever Ill they may do
to particular Parties, or to the whole in parti-
cular Things, during their respective Terms or
Periods; yet they shall not have the Tempta-
tion or Advantage of an unlimited Power fixed
in them during their own Pleasure, whereby to
perpetuate Injustice and Oppression upon any,
without End or Remedy; or to advance and up-
hold

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

June.

' hold any one particular Party, Faction, or Interest
 ' whatsoever, to the Oppression or Prejudice of the
 ' Community and the Enslaving of the Kingdom
 ' unto all Posterity; but that the People may have
 ' an equal Hope or Possibility, if they have made an
 ' ill Choice at one Time, to mend it in another;
 ' and the Members themselves may be in a Capacity
 ' to taste of Subjection as well as Rule, and may be
 ' so inclined to consider of other Men's Cases, as
 ' what may come to be their own. This we speak
 ' in relation to the House of Commons, as being
 ' intrusted on the People's Behalf, for their Inter-
 ' est in that great and supreme Power of the Com-
 ' monwealth, (*viz.* the legislative Power, with the
 ' Power of final Judgments) which being in its own
 ' Nature so arbitrary, and in a Manner so unli-
 ' mited, unless in Point of Time, is most unfit and
 ' dangerous, as to the People's Interest, to be fixed in
 ' the Persons of the same Men during Life or their
 ' own Pleasure; neither, by the original Constitu-
 ' tion of this State, was it, or ought it, to con-
 ' tinue so; nor doth it, where ever it is, and con-
 ' tinues so, render that State any better than a mere
 ' Tyranny, or the People subjected to it any better
 ' than Vassals: But in all States where there is any
 ' Face of common Freedom, and particularly in this
 ' State of *England* (as is most evident both by ma-
 ' ny positive Laws and antient constant Custom)
 ' the People have a Right to new and successive
 ' Elections unto that great and supreme Trust,
 ' at certain Periods of Time; which is so essential
 ' and fundamental to their Freedom, as it cannot or
 ' ought not to be denied them; and without which
 ' the House of Commons is of very little Concern-
 ' ment to the Interest of the Commons of *England*:
 ' Yet in this we would not be misunderstood to
 ' blame those Worthies of both Houses, whose Zeal
 ' to vindicate the Liberties of this Nation did pro-
 ' cure that Act for the Continuance of this Parlia-
 ' ment, whereby it was secured from being dissolved
 ' at the King's Pleasure, as former Parliaments have
 ' been, and reduced to such a Certainty as might
 ' enable

‘ enable them the better to assist and vindicate the Liberties of this Nation (immediately before so highly invaded, and then also so much endangered) ; and this we take to be the principal Ends and Grounds for which, in that Exigency of Time and Affairs, it was procured, and to which we acknowledge it hath happily been made use of ; but we cannot think it was by those Worthies intended, or ought to be made use of, to the perpetuating of that supreme Trust and Power in the Persons of any, during their own Pleasures, or to the debarring of the People from their Right of Elections totally, now when those Dangers or Exigencies were past, and the Affairs and Safety of the Commonwealth would admit of such a Change.

An. 23. Car. 1
1647.
June.

‘ Having thus cleared our Grounds and Intentions, as we hope, from all Scruples and Misunderstandings in what follows, we shall proceed further to propose what we humbly desire for the settling and securing of our own and the Kingdom’s Rights and Liberties, through the Blessing of God, to Posterity ; and therefore, upon the Grounds premised, we further humbly desire as followeth :

III. ‘ That some determinate Period of Time may be set for the Continuance of this and future Parliaments, beyond which none shall continue, and upon which new Writs may of Course issue out, and new Elections successively take Place, according to the Intent of the Bill for Triennial Parliaments.

‘ And herein we would not be misunderstood, to desire a present or sudden Dissolution of this Parliament ; but only, as is expressed before, that some certain Period may be set for the Determining of it, so that it may not remain, as now, continuable for ever, or during the Pleasure of the present Members. And we should desire that the Period to be now set for ending this Parliament may be such as may give sufficient Time for Provision of what is wanting, and necessary to be passed, in point of just Reformation and for

466 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.

June:

‘ further securing the Rights and Liberties, and
‘ settling the Peace of the Kingdom ; in order to
‘ which we further humbly offer :

IV. ‘ That secure Provision may be made for
‘ the Continuance of future Parliaments, so as they
‘ may not be adjournable or dissolvable at the
‘ King’s Pleasure, or any otherwise than by their
‘ own Consent during their respective Periods ; but
‘ at those Periods each Parliament to determine
‘ of Course as before. This we desire may be
‘ now provided for, if it may be, so as to put it
‘ out of all Dispute for the future, though we think
‘ of Right it ought not to have been otherwise
‘ before.

[‘ And because the present Distribution of Elections
‘ for Parliament Members is so very unequal, and
‘ the Multitude of Burgesses for decayed or incon-
‘ siderable Towns (whose Interest in the Kingdom
‘ would in many not exceed, or in others not equal,
‘ ordinary Villages) doth give too much and too evi-
‘ dent Opportunity for Men of Power to frame
‘ Parties in Parliament to serve particular Interests,
‘ and thereby the Common Interest of the whole is
‘ not so minded, or not so equally provided for : We
‘ therefore further desire,

V. ‘ That some Provision may be now made for
‘ such Distribution of Elections for future Parlia-
‘ ments, as may stand with some Rule of Equality
‘ or Proportion, as near as may be, to render the
‘ Parliament a more equal Representative of the
‘ whole ; as for Instance, That all Counties or Divi-
‘ sions and Parts of the Kingdom (involving incon-
‘ siderable Towns) may have a Number of Parlia-
‘ ment-Men allowed to their Choice, proportionably
‘ to the respective Rates they bear in the Common
‘ Charges and Burdens of the Kingdom, and not to
‘ have more ; or some other such like Rule. ^b]

‘ And thus a firm Foundation being laid in the
‘ Authority and Constitution of Parliaments for the
‘ Hope

^b These two Paragraphs in *Italick* are omitted in Mr. Rushworth’s *Collection*. The Reason of this Variation from the Cambridge Edition, licensed by himself, is more easy to point out than to account for.

‘ Hopes, at least, of common and equal Right and
 ‘ Freedom to ourselves and all the free-born People
 ‘ of this Land; we shall, for our Parts, freely and
 ‘ chearfully commit our Stock or Share of Interest in
 ‘ this Kingdom, into this common Bottom of Par-
 ‘ liaments; and though it may, for our Particulars,
 ‘ go ill with us in one Voyage, yet we shall thus
 ‘ hope, if Right be with us, to fare better in
 ‘ another.

An. 23. Car. 1.
 1647.
 June.

‘ These Things we desire may be provided
 ‘ for by Bill or Ordinance of Parliament, to which
 ‘ the Royal Assent may be desired. And when
 ‘ his Majesty (in these Things, and what else
 ‘ shall be proposed by the Parliament necessary for
 ‘ securing the Rights and Liberties of the People,
 ‘ and for settling the Militia and Peace of the King-
 ‘ dom) shall have given his Concurrence, to put
 ‘ them past Dispute, we shall then desire that the
 ‘ Rights of his Majesty and his Posterity may be
 ‘ considered of and settled in all Things, so far as
 ‘ may consist with the Right and Freedom of the
 ‘ Subject, and with the Security of the same for
 ‘ the future.

VI. ‘ We desire the Right and Freedom of the
 ‘ People to represent to the Parliament, by way of
 ‘ humble Petition, their Grievances, in such Things
 ‘ as cannot be otherwise remedied than by Parlia-
 ‘ ment, may be cleared and vindicated; that all such
 ‘ Grievances of the People may be freely received,
 ‘ and admitted into Consideration, and put into an
 ‘ equitable and speedy Way to be heard, exami-
 ‘ ned, and redressed, if they appear real; and that
 ‘ in such Things, for which Men have Remedy by
 ‘ Law, they may be freely left to the Benefit of the
 ‘ Law and the regular Course of Justice, with-
 ‘ out Interruption or Check from the Parliament,
 ‘ except in case of Things done upon the Exi-
 ‘ gency of War, or for the Service and Benefit of
 ‘ the Parliament and Kingdom in relation to the
 ‘ War, or otherwise in due Pursuance and Exe-
 ‘ cution of Ordinances or Orders of Parliament.

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

June.

‘ More particularly, under this Head, we cannot
 ‘ but desire that all such as are imprisoned for any
 ‘ pretended Misdemeanor, may be put into a speedy
 ‘ Way for a just Hearing and Trial; and such
 ‘ as shall appear to have been unjustly and unduly
 ‘ imprisoned, may, with their Liberty, have some
 ‘ reasonable Reparation according to their Suffer-
 ‘ ings and the Demerit of their Oppressors.

VII. ‘ That the large Power given to Commit-
 ‘ tees, or Deputy-Lieutenants, during the late
 ‘ Times of War and Distraction, may be speedily
 ‘ taken into Consideration; that such of those
 ‘ Powers as appear not necessary to be continued
 ‘ may be taken away, and such of them as are
 ‘ necessary, may be put into a regulated Way, and
 ‘ left to as little Arbitrariness as the Nature and
 ‘ Necessity of the Things wherein they are conver-
 ‘ sant will bear.

VIII. ‘ We could wish that the Kingdom might
 ‘ both be righted, and publickly satisfied, in point
 ‘ of Accounts, for the vast Sums that have been
 ‘ levied and paid; as also in divers other Things
 ‘ wherein the Common-wealth may be conceived
 ‘ to have been wronged or abused: But we are
 ‘ loth to press any Thing that may tend to lengthen
 ‘ out further Disputes or Contestations, but rather
 ‘ such as may tend to a speedy and general Com-
 ‘ posure and quieting of Men’s Minds, in order to
 ‘ Peace; for which Purpose we further propose,

IX. That public Justice being first satisfied, by
 ‘ some few Examples to Posterity out of the worst
 ‘ of excepted Persons and other Delinquents ha-
 ‘ ving past their Compositions, some Course may
 ‘ be taken, by a general Act of Oblivion, or other-
 ‘ wise, whereby the Seeds of future War or Feuds,
 ‘ either to the present Age or Posterity, may the
 ‘ better be taken away; by easing that Sense of pre-
 ‘ sent, and satisfying those Fears of future, Ruin
 ‘ or Undoing to Persons or Families, which may
 ‘ drive Men into any desperate Ways for Self-pre-
 ‘ servation and Remedy; and by taking away the
 ‘ private

‘ private Remembrances and Distinctions of Par- An. 23. Car. I.
ties, as far as may stand with Safety to the Rights 1647.
‘ and Liberties we have hitherto fought for.

June.

‘ There are, besides these, many particular Things
‘ which we could wish to be done, and some to be
‘ undone, all in order still to the same End of
‘ common Right, Freedom, Peace, and Safety;
‘ but these Proposals aforegoing being the principal
‘ Things we bottom and insist upon, we shall, as
‘ we have said before, for our Parts, acquiesce for
‘ other Particulars in the Wisdom and Justice of
‘ Parliament. And whereas it hath been suggest-
‘ ed or suspected that, in our late or present Pro-
‘ ceedings, our Design is to overthrow Presbytery,
‘ or hinder the Settlement thereof, and to have the
‘ Independent Government set up, we do clearly
‘ disclaim and disavow any such Design: We only
‘ desire that, according to the Declarations promi-
‘ sing a Provision for tender Consciences, there may
‘ be some effectual Course taken, according to the
‘ Intent thereof, that such who, upon consci-
‘ entious Grounds, may differ from the established
‘ Forms, may not for that be debarred from the
‘ common Rights, Liberties, or Benefits belong-
‘ ing equally to all, as Men and Members of the
‘ Common-wealth, while they live soberly, honest-
‘ ly, inoffensively towards others, and peacefully
‘ and faithfully towards the State.

‘ We have thus freely and clearly declared the
‘ Depth and Bottoms of our Hearts and Desires, in
‘ order to the Rights, Liberties, and Peace of the
‘ Kingdoms; wherein we appeal to all Men, whe-
‘ ther we seek any Thing of Advantage to our-
‘ selves, or any particular Party whatever, to the
‘ Prejudice of the whole; and the Things we wish
‘ and seek do not equally concern and conduce to
‘ the Good of others, in common with ourselves,
‘ according to the Sincerity of our Desires and In-
‘ tentions; wherein, as we have already found the
‘ concurrent Sense of the People in divers Counties,
‘ by their Petitions to the General, expressing their
‘ deep Resentment of these Things, and pressing us

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

June.

to stand for the Interest of the Kingdom therein ;
 so we shall wish and expect to find the unani-
 mous Concurrence of all others that are equally
 concerned with us in these Things, and wish well
 to the Public.

And so (trusting in the Mercy and Goodness
 of God to pass by and help any Failings or In-
 firmities of ours in the Carriage or Proceedings
 hereupon) we shall humbly cast ourselves and
 the Business upon his good Pleasure, depending
 only on his Presence and Blessing for an happy
 Issue to the Peace and Good of this poor King-
 dom, in the Accomplishment whereof we desire
 and hope that God will make you blessed Instru-
 ments.

Next follow

*The HEADS of a CHARGE, delivered in the Name
 of the Army, under the Command of Sir Thomas
 Fairfax, unto the Commissioners of Parliament,
 now with the Army at St. Albans, June 14, 1647,
 to be by them sent up against Denzil Holles, Esq;
 Sir Philip Stapylton, Sir William Lewis, Sir
 John Clotworthy, Sir William Waller, Sir John
 Maynard, Knights, Major-General Massie, John
 Glynn, Esq; Recorder of London, Colonel Walter
 Long, Colonel Edward Harley, and Anthony
 Nichols, Esq; Members of the House of Com-
 mons, jointly or severally.*

Heads of a
 Charge, presented
 by the Army, a-
 gainst eleven
 Members of the
 House of Com-
 mons,

I. **T**HAT, contrary to the Trust reposed in
 them, the Persons above-named, Mem-
 bers of the House of Commons, have jointly or
 severally invaded, infringed, or endeavoured to
 overthrow, the Rights and Liberties of the Sub-
 jects of this Nation, in arbitrary, violent, or
 oppressive Ways ; and in this Case, where no
 Pretence was, or could be, of the Exigence of
 War, or other Necessity, which might justify or
 excuse the same. And they have likewise endea-
 voured, by indirect and corrupt Practices, to
 delay and obstruct Justice, to the great Damage
 and

‘ and Prejudice of divers of the poor Commoners
‘ of *England* petitioning for the same.

An. 23. Car.
1647.
June.

2. ‘ That this Army, being, untill the Middle
‘ of *March* last, in a quiet and orderly Condition
‘ and Posture, free from any Colour or Appearance
‘ of Distemper or Disorder, or from Offence to
‘ any, and ready, upon reasonable Satisfaction in
‘ their necessary Dues for Service past, either quietly
‘ to have disbanded, or else to have engaged in
‘ the Service of *Ireland*; the Persons above-named
‘ have jointly or severally endeavoured by false In-
‘ formations, Misrepresentations, or scandalous
‘ Suggestions against the Army, to beget Misun-
‘ derstandings, Prejudices or Jealousies in the
‘ Parliament against the Army; and by deluding,
‘ surprizing, or otherways abusing the Parliament,
‘ to engage the Authority of Parliament to such
‘ Proceedings, as to put insufferable Injuries, Abu-
‘ ses, and Provocations upon the Army; thereby
‘ to provoke and put the Army into a Distemper;
‘ and to disoblige and discourage the same from any
‘ further Engagement in the Parliament’s Service;
‘ by all which, and other the like Particulars and
‘ Proceedings of theirs, the Peace of the Kingdom
‘ hath been imminently endangered, and the Re-
‘ lief of *Ireland* retarded.

3. ‘ That whereas the Parliament might other-
‘ wise have had out of this Army an entire Force,
‘ and answerable to their Proportion, designed to
‘ have engaged for *Ireland* as aforesaid, under their
‘ old Officers and Conduct, the Persons above-na-
‘ med, for Advancement of their own Ends, Faction
‘ and Design, to the Prejudice of the Public, have,
‘ jointly or severally, under Pretence of the Service
‘ of *Ireland*, endeavoured by such evil Practices
‘ as before, to break and pull this Army in Pieces,
‘ to the weakening of the Power, and endanger-
‘ ing the Safety, of the Parliament and Kingdom;
‘ and have likewise endeavoured to put the Parlia-
‘ ment and Kingdom to the Trouble, Hazard,
‘ Delay, and vast Expence of raising a new Force
‘ as for that Service.

4. ‘ That

472 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

June.

4. ' That with the breaking of this Army as
' aforesaid, they have in the like Manner endea-
' voured, under the Pretence of the Service of
' *Ireland*, to raise a new Force as before, to ad-
' vance and carry on desperate Designs of their
' own in *England*, to the Prejudice of the Parlia-
' ment and Public; and, in pursuance of the same,
' have endeavoured to divert the Forces engaged as
' for *Ireland* unto such their Purpose as aforesaid
' here in *England*; and have in like Manner endea-
' voured to have gained a Power from the Parlia-
' ment for themselves, or some of them, of di-
' verting or misemploying those Forces aforesaid,
' and to raise new Forces, under Pretence to guard
' the Parliament; and, not having obtained that,
' have, in like Manner, endeavoured privately to list
' and engage Officers and Soldiers, or procure them
' to be listed and engaged, without Authority of Par-
' liament, for the raising of and embroiling this
' Kingdom in a new and bloody War, and to in-
' terrupt and hinder the settling and securing the
' Rights, Liberties, and Peace of the Kingdom;
' and for the settling, upholding, and protecting of
' themselves and their Accomplices in their unjust,
' oppressive, and factious Designs and Proceedings.

5. ' That they have jointly or severally invited,
' encouraged, abetted, or countenanced divers Re-
' formadoes, and other Officers and Soldiers, tu-
' multuously and violently to gather together at
' *Westminster*, to affright and assault the Members
' of Parliament in Passage to and from the House;
' to offer Violence to the House itself; and, by such
' Violence, Outrages, and Threats, to awe and
' enforce the Parliament.

' The several Heads of Charge the Army will,
' (by such Solicitors as they shall appoint, when
' the House of Commons shall admit thereof)
' make good, in Particulars, each Head against
' some of the Persons, and some one Head or
' more against each of the Persons; and shall
' shortly give in the several Particulars against each
' Person respectively, which shall be made good
' by

‘ by Proofs ; the Army desiring to save and refer : Act 13. Cap. 1.
 ‘ to themselves the Liberty of exhibiting any fur- 1647.
 ‘ ther Charge against all or any of the said Persons.’ June.

A PAPER delivered to the Right Honourable the COMMISSIONERS of Parliament now with the Army, June 15, 1647, from his Excellency Sir Thomas Fairfax, and the Army under his Command,

Shewing,

I. ‘ **T**HAT, in pursuance of the Representa- And a Paper de-
 ‘ tions delivered in, we have prepared a livered thereupon
 ‘ Charge against divers Persons, Members of the to the Parlia-
 ‘ House of Commons, (to whom many Passages ment's Commis-
 ‘ in the said Representation do relate) which we sioners at St.
 ‘ have delivered in to be speeded to the Parliament;
 ‘ and shall, when the Parliament have admitted
 ‘ thereof, appoint fit Persons on our and the King-
 ‘ dom's Behalf to prosecute and make good the
 ‘ same.

II. ‘ That if the Parliament shall please to ad-
 ‘ mit these Things into Debate and Consideration,
 ‘ at the Desire of the Army in behalf of themselves
 ‘ and the Kingdom, and to proceed thereupon for a
 ‘ general Satisfaction therein, we shall then desire,

1. ‘ That the Persons impeached in the said
 ‘ Charge may be forthwith suspended from sitting
 ‘ in the House, without which we cannot reason-
 ‘ ably expect such Proceedings upon any the Things
 ‘ we have proposed, as may probably bring the
 ‘ same to an happy or timely Issue to the Kingdom
 ‘ or ourselves ; or as may prevent the present De-
 ‘ signs and Practices so imminently endangering
 ‘ the Peace of this Kingdom, if the same Persons
 ‘ (who have notoriously appeared most active in
 ‘ all the late Proceedings, to the Prejudice and
 ‘ Provocation of the Army, and hazarding thus
 ‘ far the Peace of the Kingdom) shall continue in
 ‘ the same Power, and Judges of those Things rela-
 ‘ ting to the Army's Satisfaction and Peace of the
 ‘ Kingdom.

474 *The Parliamentary HISTORY*

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.

June.

2. ' That there may be a Month's Pay at least
' immediately sent down to the Army for a present
' Supply, out of which the Army shall pay four-
' teen Days Quarter for Time to come, and the
' other fourteen Days Pay shall be accounted as
' Part of Arrears: And to this we must desire a
' present Resolution to be with us on *Thursday*
' next, by Noon at farthest.

3. ' That if the Officers and Soldiers of the
' Army who have engaged for *Ireland*, or those
' who have deserted the Army to come to *London*,
' have since then received more than a Month's
' Pay, there may be so much more Money sent
' down to the Army, above the Month's Pay be-
' fore mentioned, as may make up that Month's
' Pay to the Army equal to what such Officers and
' Soldiers have so received at *London* or elsewhere.

4. ' That no Officers or Soldiers who have so
' deserted the Army shall have any more paid them
' as for Arrears, untill the rest of the Army shall
' first be satisfied in point of their Arrears.

5. ' Whereas there have been several Designs
' and Endeavours, without Authority from the
' Parliament, to raise and lift new Forces in this
' Kingdom, to draw together the Forces engaged
' for *Ireland*, and march them towards *London*,
' and other secret Practices to engage the King-
' dom in a second War; we further desire that,
' during the Debate and Transaction of this Bu-
' siness betwixt the Parliament and the Army, the
' Parliament would not suffer any new Forces to
' be raised within this Kingdom, or any Forces to
' be invited or admitted out of any other Kingdom
' into this; or any Thing else to be done that
' may carry the Face of a new War, or of Prepa-
' rations thereunto, which may endanger or inter-
' rupt the present Proceedings to the Settlement of
' the Liberties and Peace of this Kingdom.

6. ' That the Parliament would be pleased,
' without Delay, to put the Things contained in
' our several Representations and Papers already
' given in, into a speedy Way of Resolution and
' Dis

‘ Dispatch, the present Posture and Condition of
 ‘ the Kingdom and Army, as also of his Majesty
 ‘ himself, not admitting Delays.’

An. 23. Car. I.
 1647.
 June.

This bold Step of the Army must make both Houses tremble ; but, in order to stop the Torrent, they went eagerly on in passing Ordinances, and giving Orders for paying of large Sums of Money to the Officers and Soldiers ; which, as the Sequel will shew, did but serve to make them more insolent. To give some Instances of the passive Disposition the Parliament was reduced to, they this Day joined in revoking several Orders lately made ; as one of the 12th Instant, by a Committee of the Lords, and Commons, and the Committee of the Militia of *London* ; also the Orders made for drawing together any of the Forces out of the several adjacent Counties for their own Defence ; and likewise an Order for desiring Colonel *Dalbier*, and other Colonels, to bring in Lists of the Names and Qualities of such Gentlemen and Reformado Officers, as they should find willing to engage in their Service. All which shews plainly, that the Parliament then thought they laid at the Mercy of the Army.

Whereupon both Houses reverse most of the Orders made against the Army.

June 17. A Letter from the Scots Commissioners was, this Day, delivered to the Lords, importing, That since the Houses had voted for bringing the King from the Army to *Richmond*, whereby it appeared that they gave no Warrant to remove him from *Holdenby* ; and to the end that they might give a clear Account of his present Condition to the Kingdom of *Scotland*, they had resolved that some of their Number should, for that Purpose, repair to his Majesty at *Newmarket*, or where he shall be in this Time of Jealousy and Distraction : They therefore desired a Pass for that Journey.

The Scots Commissioners obtain a Pass to go to the King.

Ordered, That the Lord *Lauderdale* shall have a Pass as desired.

The Lords being informed that some Aldermen, and others, were at the Door to deliver a Message

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

June.

sage from the City of *London*, they were called in; and Alderman *Fowke* gave an Account of their going to Sir *Thomas Fairfax* with the Letter from the City of *London*, and of the Answer of the General to it, and of the Votes of the Lord Mayor and Common Council of the City of *London* thereupon; all which were read as follows: And, first, the General's Answer to the Letter from the City, address'd to their Commissioners that carried it.

For our honoured Friends Alderman Warner, Alderman Fowke, Alderman Gibbs, Alderman Vynner, and the rest of the Commissioners of the City of London.

St. Albans, June 14, 1647.

Sir Thomas Fairfax's Answer to the Letter from the City of London.

Being informed that divers Soldiers are daily lifted under Officers in and about the Cities of *London* and *Westminster*, and Parts thereto adjacent, besides the Train'd Bands and usual Auxiliaries, we strongly apprehend that, notwithstanding all our Desires and Labours of Peace, the Kingdom is like to be precipitated, by some Persons, into a new War; therefore, before we can answer that Part of your City's Letter, to remove 30 Miles distant from *London*, we desire the City would use their Endeavours to prevent all such Listings, and therein deal so effectually, as that nothing be for the future done towards such listing or raising any Forces; and those already raised may be forthwith discharged: But if this cannot be done, we shall be forced, by an unwilling Necessity, to apply our Endeavours to break all Designs of that Kind, and therein we hope to receive the Concurrence of your City; professing we have nothing else in our Eye but yours, our own, and this poor Kingdom's Good and Quiet.

Hereof we desire to hear speedily from you, and so, from Time to Time, as oft as may be; which we shall own as a Seal of that reciprocal Love which the City's Letter purports to this Army

Of ENGLAND. 477

‘ Army, and shall be, on our Parts, most earnestly An. 23. Car
‘ endeavoured to be maintained. 1647.

‘ Sign’d in the Name, and by the Appointment, of
‘ his Excellency Sir Thomas Fairfax and his
‘ Council of War. JO. RUSHWORTH.

June,

Inclosed in the above was another Letter directed
For the Right Hon. the Lord Mayor, Aldermen,
and Common Council of the City of London.

St. Albans, June 15, 1647.

Honourable and Worthy Friends,

‘ WE are very glad our Letter from *Roylson*,
‘ of the 10th of this Instant *June*, had so
‘ good a Reception with you, whereof you have
‘ given us Assurance by your Letter of the 12th
‘ of this Instant, and by those worthy Aldermen
‘ and others the Members of your City, whom
‘ you sent unto us; by whose Hands we Yester-
‘ day returned such Answer to that Part of your
‘ Letter, for our Removal 30 Miles distant from
‘ *London*, as the present Exigency of Affairs could
‘ possibly admit; to which we add this sincere As-
‘ surance, that so soon as we shall receive the next
‘ Resolution from the Parliament, in relation to the
‘ Proceedings upon the Papers now given in unto
‘ them, (whereof likewise your Commissioners have
‘ received a Copy from us) we shall then immedi-
‘ ately give you such further Answer and Satisfac-
‘ tion to that Particular, as the Nature of these Re-
‘ sults will permit, with Respect only had to the
‘ necessary Prosecution of those pressing Concern-
‘ ments of the Kingdom, comprised in those Pa-
‘ pers; whereunto, for the Justness and Reason-
‘ ableness of our Desires, and their Consistence
‘ with the true Honour, just Power, and Privileges
‘ of Parliament, the Liberty of the Subject, and
‘ the Safety of your City and Kingdom, we do
‘ refer you.

‘ As to your Desire expressed in your Instruc-
‘ tions to your Commissioners, of our Care for
‘ the

478 *The Parliamentary HISTORY*

An. 23. Car. 1. 1647.
 {
 June.
 ' the Safety of his Majesty's Person while amongst
 ' us, we had, upon his first Coming into our
 ' Quarters, assign'd (and have since continued in
 ' Attendance about his Majesty) a Guard of two
 ' Regiments of Horse, of as faithful Men, and
 ' under as trusty a Commander as this Army doth
 ' afford; neither shall our future Care be wanting
 ' in any further Provision necessary for the Safety
 ' of his Royal Person.

' And we now cannot but take Notice, as of the
 ' past most free and forward Engagements of your
 ' famous City in the same Cause, which we are
 ' now desiring to see a Period to and Accomplish-
 ' ment of, so of your continual Readiness to close
 ' with us in our just and necessary Desires to the
 ' same Ends; as also of your present professed
 ' Averseness to engage in any Thing that may tend
 ' to a further War or Distraction in this Kingdom;
 ' for all which we cannot but return (after our
 ' Praises to God) Thanks to you and your City;
 ' and we assure you that the Sense thereof hath a
 ' deep Impression on our Spirits, to find (as we do
 ' hitherto) the Hand of God working all Men's
 ' Hearts to so clear and unanimous Concurrence
 ' with our own, in our Desires for the present set-
 ' tling and securing the Rights, Liberties, and
 ' Peace of this Kingdom, beyond which we have
 ' no Aims nor Ends of our own.' [Sign'd as the last.]

*A Copy of the ACT of COMMON COUNCIL, in
 Consequence of the two foregoing Letters.*

*Commune Concil. tent. in Camera Guildh. Civit.
 London. 15to Die Junii, 1647.*

The Proceedings
 of the Common
 Council there-
 upon.
 UPON Relation now made, by the Committee
 of this Court, of the noble Reception and
 Entertainment of them by Sir Thomas Fairfax,
 and the rest of the Commanders at St. Albans;
 and of the Passages and Answers between them
 concerning the Contents of the Letter sent from
 this Court; and, after reading of the Letter and
 Papers presented unto this Court from his Excel-
 lency

‘lency and Council of War; and, after long Debate thereupon had, it was thought fit, and so ordered by this Court, That the said Committee shall, To-morrow Morning, acquaint both Houses of Parliament with these Letters, and signify the Desire of his Excellency and his Council of War, that the City of *London* would use their Endeavours to prevent the listing of Soldiers, under Officers, in and about the Cities of *London* and *Westminster*, and Parts thereto adjacent, (except the Train’d Bands and usual Auxiliaries) for raising a new War; and that those already raised may be forthwith discharged: And the said Committee are hereby ordered to take the Contents of the said Letter into serious Consideration, and to prepare a Letter to be sent from this Court in answer to the same, to give Satisfaction to his Excellency and his Council of War that no Forces are, or shall be, listed within the City but their Train’d Bands and Auxiliaries; and to signify the Proceedings of the said Court herein; and the said Committee are to present unto this Court a Draught of the said Letter to be sent as aforesaid.’

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
June.

The Answer returned to all this was, That the Lords gave the Citizens Thanks for communicating those Papers unto them, and let them know that the Orders they mentioned were already annulled and made void by both Houses of Parliament.

Another Order agreed to by both Houses this Day, that the Army under Sir *Thomas Fairfax* should be required to remove forty Miles from *London*, and the following Letter to the General, to put in Execution the aforesaid Vote, was also agreed to.

S I R,

‘THE Lords and Commons being desirous to prevent Jealousies and Misunderstandings between them and the Army, and, as much as in them

The Parliament’s
Letter to Sir
Thomas Fairfax
to remove his
Army 40 Miles
from *London*.

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

June.

‘ them is, to preserve the Kingdom in Peace, and
 ‘ prevent a new War, have passed several Votes,
 ‘ which they have commanded their Commission-
 ‘ ers to communicate unto you, in order to pre-
 ‘ vent the great Mischief that may arise through
 ‘ popular Discontents, by Scarcity of Provisions;
 ‘ and to the end that the Parliament may have
 ‘ more free Debate upon the Matters presented to
 ‘ them from the Army, the Houses do require you
 ‘ that, according to their former Order, you
 ‘ would speedily remove the Army 40 Miles Di-
 ‘ stance from *London*: And they require you like-
 ‘ wise to take Order, that no Forces be raised or
 ‘ admitted into the Army, nor any Forces placed
 ‘ in any Forts, or displaced from any Garrisons
 ‘ which they have made, without their Approba-
 ‘ tion. The Houses do likewise expect from you
 ‘ a speedy and positive Account of what you have
 ‘ done upon the Letter and Votes you have recei-
 ‘ ved for the Removal of the King’s Person to
 ‘ *Richmond*. So we rest

Your affectionate Friends,

MANCHESTER,

Speaker of the House of Peers.

W. LENTHALL,

*Speaker of the Commons House
 in Parliament.*

The last Thing of this Day was reading a Pa-
 per, drawn up by one Mr. *Reymes*, of what had
 passed between the King and him, which he had
 before delivered by Word of Mouth at the Bar of
 the House of Lords. It is entered in their *Journals*,
 and was ordered by them to be printed and publish-
 ed; but we do not find any Notice taken of it in the
Commons Journals, or Mr. *Rushworth’s Collections*.

A Narrative of
 some Conversati-
 on that pass’d be-
 tween the King
 and Mr. *Reymes*.

June 17, 1647.

IN Obedience to the Command of this Right
 Honourable House, I shall here give an Ac-
 count of my Admission to his Majesty’s Presence,
 ‘ and

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
June.

and Commission of declaring his Message to the Militia of *London*, who have thought fit it should be communicated to both Houses of Parliament.

For the first; partly my Occasions, partly my Desire of seeing his Majesty, drew me to Sir *William Russel's*, where he was then playing at Bowls with some of the Commissioners; amongst the rest Major-General *Brown*, espying me, proffered me the Honour of his Majesty's Hand, which I readily accepted of, so it might be without Inconvenience; and, coming near his Royal Majesty, he was graciously pleased to grant me that Favour; withall asking my Name, and something else of Major-General *Brown*, which I did not hear; but he soon after came to me, and desired my Attendance at Court; where, at my Entrance, I was received by him according to his Promise, and carried into the Presence-Room, where he acquainted me with several Passages betwixt his Majesty, the General, Lieutenant-General, and Colonel *Whaley*, whom the King had that Day struck for being so presumptuous as to listen while his Majesty was in Conference with one whom they suspected to be come from *London*.

From this he fell to a Relation of his Majesty's Averseness and Unwillingness to comply at all with the Army's Proceedings; saying, That all their Actions, for aught he saw, were both inequitable in themselves, and disproportion-able to their Pretences. To this the Major-General added, That it did highly concern both the Parliament and the City to be careful of their Safeties, he being an Ear-witness daily of their Threats, and how much they were animated with the Hopes of Spoil, and enraged with Hatred to the Parliament.

This he desired me to deliver, and so led me into the Privy-Chamber, and his Majesty presently came out of his Bed-Chamber. He came towards me, who was standing with the Commissioners: Then Major-General *Brown* anti-

An. 23. Car. 1.

1647.

June.

‘ cipated his Majesty’s Discourse by an humble In-
 ‘ treaty, that he would be pleased to confirm the
 ‘ Relation he had given me of his Majesty’s Un-
 ‘ willingness to come from *Holdenby*, and how
 ‘ much against his Will he staid here. In An-
 ‘ swer to which his Majesty, clapping his Hand
 ‘ upon his Breast, said, *Upon my Life I came against*
 ‘ *my Will*, which he told me I might well con-
 ‘ jecture myself by the Relation he was pleased to
 ‘ afford me of his being taken from *Holdenby*: *But*,
 ‘ said he, *rather than to be carried by Neck and*
 ‘ *Heels*, that I may use his own Expression, *I went*
 ‘ *along*. *Nor am I so in Love with their Proceed-*
 ‘ *ings that I should be willing to continue here, for I*
 ‘ *find myself an absolute Prisoner*. As concerning
 ‘ *my Refusal of returning to Holdenby, which by*
 ‘ *some of my Subjects may be misunderstood, for all*
 ‘ *the Reason I had was, that I chose Golden Fetters,*
 ‘ *and a lightsome Room before a dark Dungeon; for*
 ‘ *I conceive this to be the better Air, knowing that*
 ‘ *my Restraint there should not be less than here.*
 ‘ Then, appealing to the Commissioners, he said,
 ‘ *Have I not told the General himself, and others,*
 ‘ *that I admired by what Authority he durst thus re-*
 ‘ *sist me and my Parliament?* To which he an-
 ‘ swered, There was Necessity. He told them,
 ‘ *They did more than e’er the King, though in the*
 ‘ *Height of his Power, durst, to inforce Justice,*
 ‘ *either in criminal or civil Affairs: Indeed I have*
 ‘ *many Times hastened it, but never enforced it, as*
 ‘ *they have done, in saying, Give us Justice, or—*
 ‘ Yet, for my Part, proceeded his Majesty, I know
 ‘ not what they do or intend, but what I hear from
 ‘ those Gentlemen, pointing to the Commissioners,
 ‘ for they have not sent legally to me since my Co-
 ‘ ming; therefore let all those know whom you think
 ‘ fit Communicants of this Business, that I desire
 ‘ nothing more passionately than to be with my Par-
 ‘ liament.

‘ After this I assumed the Boldness to tell his
 ‘ Majesty, That I thought him then politically ab-
 ‘ sent, when his Affection, though not his Person,

‘ was

‘ was alienated from them, To which he answered, *It is very right*. Next I told him, I thought it would be no small Comfort to those whom he was pleased to make Partakers of this his Intention, that his Majesty’s Propension and Inclination towards them was so great; which he required me to assure them, whatsoever illusive Persuasion would possess them to the contrary: And, moreover, That if he were at the Head of their Army, he would declare and protest against all their Proceedings; and whatsoever they heard to the contrary, he desired them not to believe, no, though under his Hand, unless they spake with one who had it from his own Mouth.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
Junc.

‘ Last of all, at my Demand of some Letter, Major-General *Brown* answered, That that was not so safe, and this would be as effectual.

‘ This is all my Memory supplies me withall. The Incompactness of this Narration shall, I hope, obtain your Honours Pardon, being penned without the least Premeditation, and without affecting the least methodical Style; only in Obedience to your Honours Commands, that I might testify myself to be

Your Lordships most devoted Servant,

B. REYMES.

June 18. A Letter from the Earl of *Nottingham*, addressed to the Speaker of the House of Peers, was read, dated at *St. Alban’s*, *June 17*, 1647, with Copies of two Petitions inclosed.

May it please your Lordship,

‘ THE General last Night sent us Copies of two Petitions, that Day presented to him; the one from divers Knights, Commoners, Gentlemen, Freeholders, and others in the County of *Hertford*; the other from the County of *Buckingham*, which here inclosed I send you. We shall endeavour, according to the Commands of Parliament, that the Army may remove their

H h 2

‘ Quar-

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.

June.

Quarters farther from the City; which, as soon
as we can bring to any Certainty or Resolution,
shall be made known to you by

Your humble Servant,

C. NOTTINGHAM.

*To the Right Noble his Excellency Sir THOMAS
FAIRFAX, Captain-General of the Forces raised
for the Preservation of the Kingdom,*

*The HUMBLE PETITION of divers Knights,
Gentlemen, Freeholders, and other Inhabitants of
the County of HERTFORD.*

May it please your Excellency,

A Petition from
Hertfordshire,

WE do, with much Thankfulness, acknow-
ledge the great Care and Pains which
have been undergone by those our faithful and
well-to-be-trusted Worthies of Parliament; who,
even in the saddest of Times, when deserted by
many of their own Members, have not spared
the Hazard of their Lives, Estates, and Fortunes,
for the Preservation of the just Liberties, Immu-
nities, and Franchises of the free-born Subjects
of this Kingdom, being desperately and strongly
invaded by a powerful and malignant Party; and
also have made many solemn Protestations and
Declarations of their Aims, Intentions, and Pur-
poses, whereby we have been greatly encouraged
to yield all chearful and due Assistance in so ne-
cessary a Work; yet now, to our great Grief,
observing, by reason, as we conceive, of the Ma-
chinations and Contrivances of some desperately
ill-affected to the Weal and Quiet of the Public in
general, and to the Honour of your ever-honour-
ed Army in particular, many Obstructions daily
to intervene and fall in; whereby both they and
we, notwithstanding the still real Intentions of the
aforenamed Worthies, are as yet clearly debarred
of the Fruition of these our often promised, much
wished for, prayed for, fought for, Rights and
Pri-

‘ Privileges, whereof we had well hoped long since An. 23.
‘ to have been Partakers. 164

‘ Wherefore we your said Petitioners do most
‘ humbly intreat and beseech your Excellency,
‘ whom God hath eminently and highly honoured,
‘ and we well know to have a tender and com-
‘ passionate Care over the Distress of this miserably
‘ afflicted Kingdom, to use your utmost Endeavours,
‘ and with all Expedition before the Disbanding
‘ of the Army now under your Excellency’s Command,
‘ that those Firebrands and Incendiaries, who have
‘ endeavoured to raise new Divisions in the Kingdom,
‘ or, by their slanderous Tongues, to fix undeserved
‘ Reproaches on the Army, may be brought to condign
‘ Punishment; and that we your Petitioners, with the
‘ rest of our faithful Brethren in the Kingdom, may have
‘ a certain Relief in our Grievances hereto annexed;
‘ and, as in Duty bound, we shall not fail to yield
‘ our best Assistance with our Persons, Purse,
‘ and Prayers.

1. ‘ That divers Counties and Corporations in
‘ this Kingdom, viz. *Devon, Cornwall, Wales, &c.*
‘ formerly in open Hostility, and for the present
‘ wholly disaffected to the Proceedings of this Parliament,
‘ have notwithstanding retained, equally with the most
‘ cordial to the State, their Privileges of electing
‘ Members; a Thing very destructive to the Safety of
‘ the Common-wealth, which is the chief End of
‘ Parliaments, and one main Cause of many present
‘ Grievances: Wherefore we desire that such Elections
‘ may be revoked, and the Places declared incapable
‘ of any such Privileges during the Sessions of
‘ this Parliament, or untill such Time as it shall
‘ appear that their former Enmity and Rancour be
‘ laid aside.

2. ‘ That whereas the Honourable Houses have
‘ raised up the Expectations of the Well-affected,
‘ by promising to apply their Time and Care in
‘ procuring Remedies against their pressing Evils,
‘ as appears most fully in their Declarations of the

‘Command of Col. *Alban Cox*; and brought them
 ‘before one *King*, a Justice of Peace, at *St. Alban’s*,
 ‘where their said Colonel did appear with them;
 ‘and made it very clear and apparent to the said
 ‘Justice, that what they did was by Command
 ‘from their Captain, and no more than what was
 ‘expressly contained within their Ordinance; which
 ‘the said Justice did acknowledge, and was fully
 ‘satisfied that their Ordinance authorized them
 ‘thereunto; yet, notwithstanding, the said *King*
 ‘would have committed them to *Hertford Goal*,
 ‘had not their Colonel and Captain become bound
 ‘for their appearing at the next Session; and the
 ‘said *Cordwell* did prefer a Bill of Indictment a-
 ‘gainst them, and, had it not been for two or three
 ‘honest Men that served on the Grand Jury, the
 ‘said Bill had been found; to the great Peril of
 ‘the Lives of the said Soldiers, there being but
 ‘little Favour or Mercy to be had for Parliament
 ‘Soldiers by the Justices of our County.’

An. 23. C.
 1647.
 June.

*To his Excellency Sir THOMAS FAIRFAX, Knt.
 General of the Forces raised for the Defence of
 the Kingdom, &c.*

*The HUMBLE PETITION of the Inhabitants of
 the County of BUCKINGHAM.*

May it please your Excellency,

‘**W**E bleſs God for you, as the Inſtrument
 ‘whom he raiſed up and made eminent
 ‘in putting an End to the ſad and dreadful War
 ‘wherein this Kingdom was involved not many
 ‘Months ſince: Our Eyes are ſtill upon you, and
 ‘our Prayers for you, that God would crown your
 ‘Labours with an happy Period of our Miſeries,
 ‘ending in the Enjoyment of our due and native
 ‘Liberties, which are the Things we have choſen
 ‘our Fellow Subjects ſerving in Parliament to ob-
 ‘tain for us:

And another
 from Buckin
 hamſhire, to
 Thomas Fair.

‘They are the Things for which we have ad-
 ‘ventured our Lives and Eſtates freely, being the
 ‘firſt County that appeared for them:

‘ T

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

June.

‘ They are the Things we have so often petitioned for, and could not so much as have expected a Delay of Answer to these our just Desires :

‘ But, to our great Grief we speak it, we have been rejected, and are become hopeless of Satisfaction, by some Men who have not only prevailed in discountenancing our just Petitions, the proper Way of Subjects Address, but almost have made it a Fault for Subjects to petition; even for Things that are due unto them both by common Birth-Right and the Laws of the Kingdom, and which frequently have been confirmed to us by several Ordinances and Declarations of Parliament. We are not ignorant that even some Men amongst them, whom in due Time we shall not stick to name, are such as, by their subtle Slights, have endeavoured to render your Army odious to the Parliament and Kingdom; which rather than they shall not obtain, they will not stick to inflame the Kingdom in a second unnecessary and unjust War, that being the only Obstacle to their wicked Designs, and the only Help, under God, left us of having a firm Peace settled in this Kingdom.

‘ These Things being come to this Pass, we take upon us the Boldness to beseech your Excellency, you being a Person whom your Justice, Courage, Fidelity, and Zeal for the common Good have made eminent, and given so great an Interest in the Hearts and Affections of all Men who have any Sense of their common Good and just Liberties, that you will be pleased to mediate on our Behalf to the Honourable Houses of Parliament, for the obtaining of our so dear and near Concernments, without Enjoyment of which even our Lives will be uncomfortable to us.

‘ And altho’ this our Address may seem strange or hazardous unto you, we doubt not but the Justice of our Desires will preserve you. And as for our own Parts we are resolved, in the Mediation

Of ENGLAND. 489

'tion thereof, to assist you to the utmost of our *Ans. 23. Cap. 1.*
'Power.' *1647.*

All the Notice the Lords took of these menacing Petitions, and those before received from *Sir Thomas Fairfax*, was to order them to be sent to the several Counties to know whether they would own them.

June 19. Several Papers were brought up to the House of Lords from the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and Common Council of the City of *London*: And, first, a Draught of a Letter, which they intended to send to General *Fairfax*, after having received their Lordships Approbation of it.

London, June 18, 1647.

May it please your Excellency and the Honourable Council of War.

'YOUR Answer of the 14th, and Letter dated the 15th of this Instant *June*, with Copies of Papers given in to the Parliament, we, the Mayor, Aldermen, and Commons, in Common Council assembled, have received and perused; and, by our Committee, we have been further informed of the great Respect you have shewed unto us in your noble and courteous Entertainment of them, and of your many seasonable Expressions of the Reality of your Intentions to promote the Peace and Welfare of the Parliament and Kingdom, and in particular of this City; which how acceptable it is unto us will best appear by our Proceedings thereupon.

A Draught of a Letter, to be sent from the City of London to that General,

'We take it very kind that, though you were informed divers Soldiers were daily listed under Officers, in and about the Cities of *London* and *Westminster*, and Parts adjacent thereunto, besides the Train'd Bands and usual Auxiliaries, yet you conceived, and that most truly, it was without the Privy or Consent of this Court; and did not suspect the Sincerity of our Hearts in
' what

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

June.

what, by our last, was represented unto you ; wherein, for your further Satisfaction, be pleased to take Notice that, since the Return of our Committee from *St. Albans*, your said Answer and Letter, and a Narrative of the several Passages betwixt you and our Committee, and your Desires that the City shall use their Endeavours to prevent all such Listings; and therein to deal so effectually as that nothing be, for the future, done towards such Listings or Raisings of any Forces, and that those already raised might be forthwith disbanded; and the Resolution of this Court, and the Committee of the Militia of this City and Parts adjacent upon the whole, being all, by our Direction, made known to both Houses of Parliament, they were pleased to make several Votes thereupon; whereunto, as to those Things, we desire to be referred.

By all which, we hope the great Desire of this Court and the City to cherish a right Understanding, and keep a good Correspondency between your Excellency, your Council of War, Army, and this City, will evidently appear; and shortly draw from you a more full Answer, Satisfaction and Assurance, that your Army shall no Way prejudice the Parliament (whose Power and Privileges are the principal Means to preserve the Liberties of the Subjects of this Kingdom) nor this City, who have lost so much Blood, and spent so much Treasure in Defence thereof; and in order thereunto, that it shall be forthwith removed to, and continued at, a further Distance from *London*.

By Command of the Mayor, Aldermen and Commons of the City of London, in Common Council assembled.

MITCHELL.

Next a Paper, containing the Resolutions of the Common Council, concerning the great Course

course of Reformado Officers about the City, An. 23. Car. I.
was read. 1647.

Commune Concilium tent. in Camera Guild. Civit.
London, 17^{mo} Die Junii, 1647, *post Merid.*
ejusdem Diei.

June.

THIS Court taking Knowledge of the great And the Resolu-
Distempers and tumultuous Assemblies of tions of their
Soldiers and other disaffected Persons in and Common Coun-
about the Cities of London and Westminster, which cil relating there-
formerly, with great Clamour and Violence, have to,
resorted to the City and Parts adjacent, to the
great Disturbance and Endangering of the Par-
liament and City, upon Pretence to be listed,
that thereby they may be made capable of recei-
ving their Arrears: For Remedy thereof, and
for the better preventing of Tumults hereafter,
it is thought fit, and so ordered by this Court,
That the Committee shall, To-morrow Morn-
ing, humbly move the Houses of Parliament to
take this Business into their speedy and serious
Consideration; that all such Gentlemen Refor-
mado Officers and Soldiers, as have been raised
and sent forth by any Committee from this City
and Counties adjacent, for the Service of the
Parliament and the Kingdom, which are not sa-
tisfied their Dues, may be commanded forthwith
to repair to their several Counties, and there to
receive such Satisfaction as is or shall be appoint-
ed by Parliament.

MITCHELL.

After this another Paper from the Common
Council, touching discharging the Soldiers and
Officers listed.

Commune Concilium tent. in Camera Guild. Civit.
London, Die Veneris, 18^{vo} Die Junii, 1647,
post Merid. ejusdem Diei.

IT is ordered by this Common Council, That
the Committee of the Court, formerly em-
ployed in this Behalf, shall, To-morrow Morn-
ing, acquaint both Houses of Parliament with a
Copy

Cat. I.

547.

June.

Copy of a Letter, now presented by the said Committee, and agreed upon by this Court, to be sent to his Excellency Sir Thomas Fairfax and his Council of War; and, having the said Houses Approbation thereof, shall, with all Expedition, make their Addresses, and deliver the said Letter unto his Excellency and his Council of War; and the said Committee are hereby authorized to give and receive such Satisfaction concerning the Contents of the said Letter, as Occasion shall require.

It is ordered by this Court, That the said Committee shall humbly move the said Houses of Parliament, that if any Soldiers be lifted upon the Votes of the Committee of the Lords and Commons, and Committee of the Militia, the same may be forthwith discharged.

MITCHELL.

After reading all the foregoing Papers, the Lords returned this Answer, 'That they leave it to the City's own free Liberty to send what they think fit to Sir Thomas Fairfax; and that their Lordships approved of those Things in this Letter, which related to the Votes of both Houses of Parliament: And as touching the second Particular, the Requests of the Common Council, the Lords will take them into their speedy Consideration.'

Next a Letter from Lord Montague, one of the Commissioners attending the King, was read.

For the Right Hon. the Earl of MANCHESTER,
Speaker of the House of PEERS.

Newmarket, June 18, 1647.

My Lord,

A Letter from the Lord Montague, concerning the King's Removal to Richmond.

WE received, Yesterday, the Votes of both Houses concerning his Majesty's Removal from hence to Richmond. We immediately acquainted the General therewith by a Letter from ourselves, and there is a Messenger from us

'us now attending his Answer, which is not yet As 12. Oct. 1647.
'come to us.

'We also acquainted Col. *Waller*, who com-
'mands the present Guards here, desiring to know
'of him whether he had received any Order there-
'in from the General, how far he would assist us,
'or whether we were to expect any Interruption
'from him. He told us, That as it concerned the
'King, it was civil of us to acquaint him therewith;
'and afterwards gave us this Answer, That the
'King (the Votes not being directed to him)
'would say nothing until Address was made to
'his Majesty; and the General's Pleasure being
'no Way made known to him, he could not, for
'the present, give us any further Satisfaction.
'This is all the Account I can give you of our
'Proceedings in this Business; but shall not be
'wanting in our Endeavours to discharge the
'Trust reposed in us, remaining

Your Lordship's humble Servant,

E. MONTAGUE.

The Speaker of the House of Lords was order-
ed to write a Letter to the General, to let him
know that that House expected an Account from
him concerning the Votes and Letters sent to him.

June 21. A Letter, directed to the Speaker from
the Lord *Montague*, brought up by Sir *Peter Kul-*
ligrew, was read, with some Papers inclosed.

For the Right Hon. the Earl of MANCHESTER,
Speaker of the House of PEERS.

My Lord,

Newmarket, June 20, 1647.

'THIS Morning we received the inclosed Another on the
'from the General, by Colonel *Hammill*, same Subject,
'and Colonel *Lambert*, who arrived here last Night.
'That which they gave in Answer to the Let

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

June.

we had written to his Excellency, concerning his Majesty's Remove to *Richmond*, according to the Votes of both Houses, is contained in the Paper inclosed, which was taken by our Secretary, and assented to afterwards by themselves in our Presence; but because it seemed not to express any Thing concerning the King's Person, in such Manner as your Votes require, we desired they would give us a more particular Answer thereunto; but they replied only, That we might have any such Mistake rectified by a new Letter to the General; for, as to themselves, they had nothing else in Commission to say unto us, unless perhaps Colonel *Whaley* had some Order therein.

Hereupon we spoke with Colonel *Whaley*, who told us, That he could not answer further untill he knew the King's Pleasure, the General having received no new Orders as yet. And we pressing for further Satisfaction, he immediately went in to speak to the King about it, and his Majesty was pleased to send for us also; where it being recited what had already passed betwixt us and the Colonel, his Majesty asked him, If he had declared his Willingness to go to *Richmond*, whether he should not be by them hindered therein? Colonel *Whaley* replied, That when he knew his Majesty's Pleasure, he should forthwith acquaint the General, and believed that he might march thither, or to any other Place he pleased. Then the King told us, There was not as yet any Address made to him on this Behalf by the Houses; and it concerned his Honour not to be in such Manner posted from Place to Place. We replied that we indeed had no particular Address at this Time to his Majesty from the Parliament, but the Letter which we received with the late Votes from the Houses, did require us to take Care to see them fully observed, as far as in us lies; and, since the Answer which we expected did depend upon his Majesty's Consent, by virtue and in pursuance of that general Power

‘ Power given us by both Houses, we humbly took
 ‘ the Boldness to make our Addresses to him, his
 ‘ Majesty having often declared his Desire of be-
 ‘ ing at some of his Houses near the Parliament.
 ‘ The King replied, That he had indeed often
 ‘ desired it of the Houses, and would always keep
 ‘ his Word; but was very sensible of the present
 ‘ Distractions, and, in Hopes to further the compo-
 ‘ sing of them, and settle an happy Peace in the
 ‘ Kingdom, he would accept of the Address we
 ‘ had made to him by Authority from the Houses,
 ‘ and dispense with the Point of Civility which
 ‘ was due in a more exprefs and particular Way,
 ‘ and which otherwise he would have stood upon;
 ‘ and then declared to Colonel *Whaley*, that he
 ‘ would willingly go along with us to *Richmond*.
 ‘ The Colonel desired his Majesty to name the
 ‘ Day, which the King appointed to be on *Thurs-*
 ‘ *day* next; and Colonel *Whaley* undertook to give
 ‘ the General a speedy Account of his Majesty’s
 ‘ Pleasure.

An. 23. Car. I.
 1647.
 June.

‘ We thought it also our Duty to give you pre-
 ‘ sent Notice hereof, and to desire that the House
 ‘ at *Richmond* may be fitted up for his Majesty’s
 ‘ Accommodation; and further to acquaint you,
 ‘ that we have sent into *Lincolnshire* to command
 ‘ Colonel *Roffiter*’s Regiment to attend upon this
 ‘ Service, having some Information that they are
 ‘ in those Parts; but because we are told that it is
 ‘ known at the Army where that Regiment is, we
 ‘ hold it necessary to advertise you thereof, belie-
 ‘ ving they will not be ready here by the Time
 ‘ prefixed for his Majesty’s Remove. Thus ho-
 ‘ ping that you will allow of what we have done
 ‘ in the Premises for your Service, I remain

Your Lordship’s humble Servant,

E. MONTAGUE.

The

496 *The Parliamentary History*

An. 23. Car. 1. The Letter mentioned to be inclosed in the foregoing.

1647.

June.

For the Right Hon. the COMMISSIONERS attending his Majesty at Newmarket.

St. Albans, June 19, 1647.

My Lords and Gentlemen,

Sir Thomas Fairfax's Letter,

I Received your Letter last Night, and shall not trouble you with any Answer as to the Particulars at present; having appointed some Officers of my Army to attend his Majesty and you at *Newmarket*, from whom you will receive an Account more fully, and remain

Your Lordships humble Servant,

THO. FAIRFAX.

The Message delivered to the Parliament's Commissioners by Col. *Hammond* and Col. *Lambert*.

And Message, in answer thereto.

THAT whereas Col. *Rossiter's* Regiment of Horse was appointed by Parliament to be his Majesty's Guard, his Excellency Sir *Thomas Fairfax* did therefore conceive that it was not their Intentions that his Majesty should have any other Guard; neither could he appoint any other, except he had Directions for it.

Another Letter from the Lord *Montague* was read, address'd to the Earl of *Manchester* as Speaker.

Newmarket, June 19, 1647.

My Lord,

A third Letter from Lord Montague thereupon.

I Have received your Letter of the 18th Inst. by Sir *Peter Killigrew*. Yesterday I acquainted your Lordship that we had received the Votes of both Houses concerning his Majesty's Remove to *Richmond*, and of our Proceedings thereupon; which I hope, before this Time, is come to your Hands.

The

‘ The Messenger we sent to attend the General An. 23. Cal. 1.
 ‘ for an Answer is not yet returned to us, so that I 1647.
 ‘ cannot as yet give your Lordship any further Ac- }
 ‘ count; but shall not be wanting, as far as in me }
 ‘ lies, to obey your Lordship’s Commands; being, }
 ‘ besides the Duty that therein lies upon me, much }
 ‘ encouraged by the Acceptance of my Service, }
 ‘ and the Care you are pleased to exprefs of me }
 ‘ in your Letter, whereby I am obliged to remain }

June.

Your Lordship’s humble Servant,

E. MONTAGUE.

The Lord *Montague* being the only Peer then with the King as a Commissioner, the Lords ordered that the Earl of *Denbigh*, who had been absent from that Trust for some Time, should repair to give his Attendance upon his Majesty forthwith: Also that a Letter be sent from both Houses to the King, with the Votes inclosed for his coming to *Richmond*; and another of Thanks to the Commissioners, for what they had done in this Business; also to let them know that the Lords approved their shewing of those Votes to the King.

The Commons had, upon the former Representation from the Army, voted, ‘ That no Person that had been in actual War against the Parliament, or acted in the Commission of Array, or voluntarily aided the King, or received Pardon from him, should presume to sit in the House: That if they did sit they should incur the Displeasure of the House: That the Committee for examining such Cases be revived; and that a Declaration be brought in for any Person who has a Charge against any Member of the House to come in: That the Committee bring in, by a Day, such Charges as are already before them against any Members: And that Reports of Elections be brought in by a short Day.’

Votes of the Commons in favour of the Army’s Desires,

498. The Parliamentary HISTORY

An. 23. Car. I.

1647.

June.

Mr. *Whitlocke* here again informs us, ' That divers Censures were passed upon the Parliament for their cow Votes and Compliance with a mutinous Army, who had their Power and Pay from them ; whilst others approved of them as prudent, respecting the Time, to avoid Bloodshed. That some wished the first Votes, and the severe prosecuting the Business of Disbanding, had been declined, since it occasioned all this Trouble.' He adds, ' That now *Cromwell* began to mount still higher, and carried his Business with great Subtilty. He had got his Enemies in Parliament impeached, and the Business of the Army guided by his Son-in-Law *Ireton*, with others, under himself.'

June 22. Both Houses agreed on the sending the following Letter to the King :

A Letter from the Parliament to the King, inviting him to Richmond.

May it please your Majesty,
 ' YOUR Majesty's loyal Subjects, the Lords and Commons in Parliament, out of their earnest Desire that the Peace of your three Kingdoms may have a speedy Settlement, have passed these Votes for your Majesty's Coming to your House at *Richmond*, that then a joint Application may be made unto your Majesty, from your Parliaments of *England* and *Scotland*. To that Purpose it is our humble Desire that your Majesty will be pleased to come accordingly ; and our Prayers shall be to the great God, that he will bless all Endeavours that shall tend to the preventing further Distractions in Church and State, and to the procuring of a safe and well-grounded Peace.

Your Majesty's loyal Subjects

and humble Servants,

MANCHESTER,

Speaker of the House of Peers.

WILLIAM LENTHALL,

Speaker of the Commons House in Parliament.

But

But before the carrying this Point in the House of Commons, the Business of this Letter was debated, and the Question being put, Whether to agree to it or not? it passed in the Affirmative, Yeas 115, Noes 71. The Tellers for the Question, Mr. Holles and Sir Philip Stapylton; against it, Sir John Evelyn of Wilts and Mr. Lisle.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.
June.

The same Day two Letters from the Earl of Nottingham at St. Alban's, with other Papers inclosed, were read, address'd as usual to the Earl of Manchester.

St. Alban's, June 21, 1647.

May it please your Lordship,

IN Discharge of my Duty I think it fit to acquaint your Lordship that, several Times since I received your last of the 15th Instant, we have very earnestly solicited the General's Answer to the Command of both Houses, touching removing the Quarters, which the General hath often given Hope we should long e'er this have received, but it is not yet come, which seems strange to us.

Two Letters from the Earl of Nottingham, concerning the Motions of the Army.

The General told us Yesterday, That six Companies of Colonel Fortescue's Regiment, that were designed for Ireland, were come up very near the Army, and desired to be re-admitted; and that they pretended to be discontented, for that they were drawn this Way to engage against the Army.

On Saturday Night late, the Month's Pay for the Army came hither, as did likewise the Committee from the Common Council of London, who presented a Letter to the General from the City. The Money is this Day paying out to the Army. We shall still earnestly press for an Answer, according to your Commands; which, so soon as we shall receive, shall be immediately presented from

Your Lordship's humble Servant,

C. NOTTINGHAM.

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.

June.

*St. Alban's, June 21, 1647,
past 12 at Night.**May it please your Lordship,*

IN Answer to the several Matters contained in your Votes and Letter of the 15th, (which I have often pressed) this Night, about Nine o'Clock, the General sent us a Letter, with a Copy of a Letter to yourself inclosed, in reference to those Affairs, the Copies of both which I here present unto your Lordship; and because, in our Judgments, the Answer is not full or certain, we have, by Letters, signified our Sense thereof to the General, and prayed him to take your Votes into further Consideration, a Copy of which Letter of ours is also herewith presented to your Lordship from,

*My Lord,**Your Lordship's humble Servant,*

C. NOTTINGHAM.

The General's Letter to the Commissioners, referred to in the foregoing:

*St. Alban's, June 21, 1647.**My Lords and Gentlemen,*

A Letter from
Sir Thomas
Fairfax to that
Earl,

I Have returned an Answer to both Houses of Parliament to theirs of the 17th of June, of which I send you inclosed a Copy. As to those two Particulars of admitting new Forces into the Army, or placing or displacing any Forces in any Fort or Garrison, without the Approbation of the Houses, there is nothing of that Nature done by me; and I shall be careful, to the utmost of my Power, that nothing in that Kind be done to the Prejudice or Diservice of the Kingdom. I remain

Your Lordship's humble Servant,

T. FAIRFAX.

The

The General's Letter to the Speaker of the House of Peers. An. 23. Car. I. 1647.

St. Alban's, June 21, 1647.

Junc.

My Lord,

BY your Lordship's of the 17th of June instant, I am commanded to render the Charge of his Majesty to your Commissioners, now attending his Majesty at *Newmarket*: To which I humbly answer, That the Commissioners have attended the Person of the King ever since his coming from *Holdenby*; and have been desired, by me, to continue the Discharge of the Trust which was committed to them by the Parliament; which that it might be the better perform'd, I gave them a Guard of two Regiments of Horse, who do at this Time attend the King and Commissioners at *Newmarket*. I humbly conceive I have nothing else to answer as touching this Matter.

As to our Removal to a further Distance from *London*, we entreat we may receive an Answer to the Desires of the Army in the Papers we last sent you; conceiving that otherwise we shall neither give Satisfaction to the Kingdom, nor to the Army, who are in Expectation of some Effect thereupon.

There is also Information of daily under-hand Preparations of Forces, and the keeping up of those that are raised publickly avowed, together with other Grounds of Jealousies occasioned by the Endeavours of some to bring in foreign Forces; and by sending divers Officers into several Parts of the Kingdom to possess Places of Strength, and to raise Men; which, to our Apprehensions, tend to the raising of a new War, whereof I thought fit to give you this Account. I remain

Your Lordship's most humble Servant,

T. FAIRFAX.

The

502 *The Parliamentary HISTORY*

An. 23. Car. I.
1647.

The Answer of the Parliament's Commissioners
to the Letter from the General.

Jane.

S I R,

St. Alban's, June 21, 1647.

The Answer of
the Parliament's
Commissioners,
on receiving the
same,

WE have perused your Letter sent us this
Night by Scout-Master-General *Wat-
son*, with the Copy of yours inclosed to the Houses
of Parliament; and having thereupon considered
the Vote of both Houses, and their Direction to
us, we held it our Duty, in Discharge of the
Trust committed to us, to let your Excellency
know, that the Order of both Houses for the
Removal of the Army 40 Miles from *London* is
positive; and we are commanded to be very ear-
nest in pressing your Excellency therein, as also
to desire you to give the Parliament a speedy and
positive Account of what you have done upon
their Letter and Votes sent to you for Removal
of the King's Person to *Richmond*; to both which
Points we find your Answers, by the Copies sent
us, to be defective and uncertain; and therefore
do again very earnestly desire your Excellency to
take the same into Consideration, and give a more
full and certain Answer to what is expected from
you by both Houses in these Particulars. We
rest

Your Excellency's humble Servants,

C. NOTTINGHAM.

P. WHARTON.

The Lords, having debated upon the foregoing
Papers, ordered that a Letter be written, by their
Speaker, to Sir *Thomas Fairfax*, and sent to the
Commons for their Concurrence; which was done
accordingly.

S I R,

And a Letter
sent thereupon,
to Sir *Thomas
Fairfax*, by both
Houses.

THE Lords and Commons assembled in Par-
liament have received your Letter of the
21st Inst. by which you gave them an Account
of several Informations that are given to the
Army,

‘ Army, that there are daily under-hand Preparations made of Forces, and that there is a publick Avowment of keeping Forces already raised: They did, by their former Letter unto you, affirm the contrary; and do again assure you that there are no Forces either prepared or avowed, by their Authority, against the Army; and therefore they desire you to make known unto them the Grounds you have of this Report. They likewise disclaim any Thought in them of bringing in any foreign Forces; and do desire you to make strict Enquiry into the Occasion of these Misinformations, that they may be certified from what Hands they come, so that the Authors of such Aspersions may be known and punished.

An. 23. Car. 1.
1647.

June.

‘ They have no Knowledge of any Persons employed from them for the possessing of any Places of Strength; and as for the raising of any Men, they hope there will be no Occasion to alter the Confidence they have of the Army, in relation to their solemn Engagements to preserve the Honour and Privileges of Parliament, and Safety and Peace of the Kingdom; therefore they do fully and freely declare the Falseness of those Informations to you, and do expect your Endeavours for preventing any such causeless Jealousies; and, in regard of the Inconveniences that do and may come to the City of London and Parts near adjacent, by the Army’s being so near, they still insist upon their former Vote for your quartering your Army no nearer than 40 Miles off London.’

Your affectionate Friends and Servants,

MANCHESTER,
Speaker of the House of Peers.
WILLIAM LENTHALL,
*Speaker of the Commons House
in Parliament.*

Notwithstanding the high Expressions of Courage and Resentment in the foregoing Letter to the

Car. 1. the General, the Army were, at this Time, far
 17-
 anc. from paying any Regard to the Votes and Resolu-
 tions of either House, as will more fully appear
 in our next Volume. Observing, that tho' most
 of the subsequent Letters and Answers, between
 the Parliament and the Army, as well as the pre-
 ceeding, are mentioned, in their due Order of
 Time, in the *Commons Journals*; yet the Copies of
 them are entered in those of the *Lords* only: And
 consequently were never yet laid before the Pub-
 lick.

The END of the FIFTEENTH VOLUME.



A 451080

UNIVERSITY OF M



3 9015 06302

